

誅仙

第一集



Chapter 51 Inferno Mirror

At far away, in the darkness of the woods, Tanis Ka and Tonni stealthily hid behind a large tree, watching the people in the scene.

Tonni frowned and whispered: "Grandpa, you do not escape, instead, why you come back to this dangerous place and see the show?"

Tanis Ka's eyes were still looking at the scene, whispered: "I have already heard there are most likely treasure in devil's cave. But I can't do anything about it in the past, now since so many people help open the path for us, why don't come here and have a look, maybe we can get something good."

Tonni's pink face said unpatiently: "What if we can't get something good but run into a monster?"

Tanis Ka turned around chuckled: "Does matter, your grandpa has the founder, Master Jadeon's secret art of Earth Sinking, Water Sinking, Mile Shrink matchless mystic art, definitely not going to have a problem....."

Tonni said quietly: "Boo, they are clearly use for escaping if the scamming fail, you call those matchless mystic art!"

Tanis Ka did not notice what his grand daughter said, he was still speaking proudly: “Didn’t you read grandpa’s fortune before? You said grandpa’s plump forehead, money mark between the eyebrows, thick wealth line, they are symbol of great fortune. Ho ho, tonight it will become true. Tonni, grandpa is very confident with your divination skill!”

Tonni: “.....”

“Eh?” Tanis Ka was surprised as he turned and looked at the scene. At this moment, Shaw Danon was charging at the gentle lady with his fire stick glowing with black light.

“Pure Essence! This boy is a Jadeon.”

“What?” Tonni immediately felt interested and also looked at the scene. Both sides battle restlessly with the loud sound of demons screaming. She asked Tanis Ka: “So he had the same ancestor as us, is he strong?”

Tanis Ka was watching concentratedly, the greedy smile was gone. His face was calm, eyebrows were frowned, he said: “This boy’s age is not old, but his power seem already reach ‘Yu Qing Realm’’s level five, that’s odd?”

Tonni glanced at Tanis Ka. Though other people may not know, she knew Tanis Ka is greedy for money, but with his experience, his knowledge is unmatched. She said: “Didn’t notice he is such talent.”

Tanis Ka silent for a moment then shook his head, said: “I think this boy’s potential isn’t bad, but at most above average, definitely not a genius like

Master Jade Leaf. From basic reason, with his potential, he shouldn't able to advance that fast in cultivation!"

Tonni was stunned, couldn't say anything but to continue watching the scene.

Onara was shouting angrily on the ground with gold light shining, scaring off the monsters. Shaw Danon rose in the air, charged at the lovely lady with his fire stick glowing green and black light.

The lady looked at him with her watery eyes. She shoot out her white sleeve and blocked the fire stick. They were charging at each other, just an instant, they became very close.

Shaw Danon was surprised. That lady's extremely lovely face was only a foot away from him. Faint fragrance came to him. And the soul touching eyes in the night were as beautiful as agate emerald, reflecting his figure. His heart couldn't help but moved.

"What, did you see, in the well?" Even at this crucial moment, that lady's voice was still gentle and lovely, softly entered his ears.

Shaw Danon's mind was almost taken, but suddenly a gold light flashed on his face and calmed him.

Three-tails fox spirit frowned. Shaw Danon shouted and flew several yards backward, landed next to Onara on the ground.

Onara glanced at him, said with a bit of worry: "This devil's hexing curse is quite strong, be careful."

Shaw Danon's heart was still beating rapidly. He nodded. They looked at the sky, seeing the three-tails fox spirit was still standing in mid-air, her dress fluttered among the wind like a matchless beauty from a painting.

At far, Tanis Ka frowned, surprised said: "This boy's mental stability is very strong! He can maintain his consciousness under three-tails fox spirit's five hundreds years practice of hexing curse!"

Tonni curled her lips: "So what, don't you see that big guy also the same?"

Tanis Ka said: "What do you know. That big guy's cultivation is related to Fuwa, and Fuwa is all about nirvana, they naturally have resistance to those enchanting hex curse.

"But Jadeon is Dagos, they are much weaker in this field. With this boy's cultivation, he can have such stability, really rare!"

"Really?" Tonni thought for a moment, then turned back to the scene.

Three-tails fox spirit slowly landed from the air. Though her face was still smiling, her eyes were getting heavier. From the fierce battle she just had with them, she could see that they were not old, but their cultivation was also not low. And that big guy was from seemed came from a Fuwa branch, it was quite a pain.

Another young man's mind was unexpectedly stable. Even her most useful hexing curse was not having much use here.

Bilu was standing at the side, about to make a move. But seeing Shaw Danon had recovered, she stopped and watched them coldly.

The cold moonlight passed through the leaves and fell on that gentle lady's lonely figure.

With a bit of sorrow.

She lowered her head, her long eyelashes were like covering her vulnerable heart, but also like they were listening to the sound of the forest of dark night. She said softly: "I did nothing to you, why you want to kill me?"

Onara stepped forth like a fierce tiger, shouted: "Devil, you harmed the people, causing unrest for Laguna Collective, aren't you suppose to die?"

She raised up her eyes, looked at them. Wind, softly came by, blew the edge of her clothes.

"You kill me, because I am a devil?" She looked at Shaw Danon, deeply: "What about you! What is your reason?"

Shaw Danon said without thinking: "You did many evil deeds. I am in the path of good, I shall get rid of harm from the people without hesitation!"

Three-tails fox spirit silent for a while, then she suddenly smiled lightly: "Young man, how old are you?"

Shaw Danon startled, frowned: “Why do you ask?”

She held up her hand, combing the black hair on her temples with her finger.

“Those words, are told by your righteous master! The devils like us are often harmful to the people, we must be removed, right?”

Shaw Danon frowned, that was exactly what his master’s teaching is about. Three-tails fox spirit continued: “But what if I say, those words are wrong. What will you think?”

Shaw Danon snorted, was about to make a move. But at that instant, the conversation between him and Wan Ren Wang flashed in his mind. He was like shocked by lighting.

Is it the thing I know must be right?

What is the true law, what is the true justice?

“Careful!” Suddenly, Onara shouted. The sound of evil wind rose suddenly.

Three-tails fox spirit suddenly dashed at Shaw Danon when he was lost in thought. Her hand formed into claws. Onara roared, was about to make a move, but at that important moment, countless of demon’s eyes sparkled in the darkness. The monsters attacked him, he couldn’t spare anytime to worry about Shaw Danon.

Three-tails fox spirit realized Shaw Danon was the weakest among them, she decided to use the monsters to hold Onara while herself use her full strength to finish the other one.

The sharp claws was about to arrive at that boy, even from far away, they could hear a cry. But Shaw Danon raised his head, his eyes met with three-tails fox spirit's. Before she could think of anything, a black stick shining with green light appeared between Shaw Danon and herself.

At the next moment, her sharp claws hit on that stick.

No one was able to describe such feeling. There was no earth shocking bang like they had expected. At that seemly frozen moment, that woman floated in mid-air, her claw like fingers grabbed that black fire stick.

Her snow white skin suddenly lost all its color, so pale that it was even transparent.

Before her, it was like a bottemless swirl of demon, circling under the color of the night, about to swallow her with a hideous smile.

She screamed mournfully to the sky, then charged up into the air, turned into a white figure and finally escaped from the demon like green glow. She landed at far.

Then, she quickly turned around with a surprise, fierce look, glared at that young man, and the fire stick that was circling in mid-air.

From a distant, Tonni gasped in. whispered: "Very powerful esper, what is

this! Grandpa?”

She asked twice, realized Tanis Ka did not answer. She turned to him, seeing Tanis Ka’s eyebrows were frowned tightly, also surprised.

Tonni was surprised, pulled Tanis Ka, said: “Grandpa, what is up to you?”

Tanis Ka shivered, woke up from what just happened, his face was still shocked. He murmured: “Who is this boy, how come Jadeon will have such weird disciple?”

Tonni glanced at him, said: “What?”

Tanis Ka looked at the scene, said: “That boy’s esper is very strange. When he summoned it, the evil energy is stronger than three-tails fox spirit’s devil energy. Such evil item, how.....”

Tonni’s mouth dropped, turned to the scene, suddenly she caught something with the corner of her eye. She whispered to Tanis Ka: “Grandpa, look at that woman.”

Tanis Ka startled, follow where Tonni was pointing at, he saw the watery green dress woman Bilu, silently standing at the side. Onara was in a heated battle with the monsters, but Bilu did not bother to look at him, her eyes were fixed on Shaw Danon.

Especially when Shaw Danon summoned the fire stick, her look was awkward, it was like glad, and also like worry, and seem like there is hesitation, too. It was hard to tell is it good or bad.

Tanis Ka said after few glance: “That woman like that fire stick, what are you yatou (Note 1) looking at!”

Tonni was curious: “What fire stick?”

Tanis Ka said: “That boy.”

Tonni was not convinced: “Weird, why she like that boy, and I can’t look at it?”

Tanis Ka glared at her, was about to teach this disobedient, premature granddaughter a lesson. But then he heard something happened, he quickly turned back to the scene and ignored Tonni.

In the scene, Shaw Danon saw the fox spirit flinched, such opportunity can not let go. He advanced with his fire stick. Three-tails fox spirit frowned, her face was getting more pale.

Seeing Shaw Danon charging to her, the color of the night got heavier, the wind got faster, and on that lady’s gentle face, the two light eyebrows locked together. She shouted softly, her white jade like fingers formed like a knife, slice down in air.

“Ah!”

The sudden scream was like needle pierce into everyone’s eardrum.

Countless of ghostly light came out from the dark black forest. Behind the woman, tides of wave of countless monster with hideous look rushed at Shaw Danon, screaming.

In a blink of an eye, Shaw Danon was almost overwhelmed by those monsters.

Everyone were terrified, but at the next moment, Shaw Danon broke through the black crowd of monsters with his fire stick. When the fire stick's green light passed by, none of the monsters were willing to go forth with the exception of the larger size, stronger one still may resistance.

With this, everyone was more surprised. Shaw Danon was casting with his full strength, his heart said bitterly: this "Death Wand" was forged with burning spirit and soul, base on the reaction the monsters has, what Wan Ren Wang said is mostly right.

Three-tails fox spirit saw countless of monsters couldn't stop Shaw Danon, her face became more pale. At this moment, Onara roared in the solemn golden light shined. Like a demon taming vajra, his eyes wide open, he rose into the air, and stabbed the ground again with his Shatterer staff.

"Bang", golden light shot at all direction. This time the ground corrupt range was wider, reach almost three yards, the demon destroying gold light that shot out was brighter, like lighting and thunder.

In the whine of the monsters, many that were surrounding Onara had

vanished, the most of the remaining were scared away.

Onara landed on the ground. Once his large body landed, he was taking heavy breath, clearly using such power art consume a lot of his energy. His body was strong after all, he soon recovered. Though he was still a bit out of breath, he immediately dashed to Shaw Danon's direction after a glance.

Three-tails fox spirit caught Onara was charging at her with her eyes, while Shaw Danon was not far away, she stamped on the ground, wanted to withdraw into the darkness behind her.

Expectedly, white light flashed in the darkness, suddenly a white wave of flying flowers flew out, fiercely pierce through the air. Three-tails fox spirit was surprised and held her step.

It was the young woman in watery green dress who was standing on the side, now she had interrupted the withdraw route. The snow like flying flower gradually contract, circling around her. Under the cool color of the moon, it formed into a pretty little flower, held between her fingers.

Footstep came from behind. Three-tails fox spirit turned around and found Shaw Danon and Onara had arrived. They formed a triangle, surrounded her in the center.

The little monsters were gone, leaving her alone. With loneliness, she silently stood and surrounded by the human beings.

She slightly opened her mouth, with a little regret, but she did not say anything. Even now, the gentle beauty on her lovely face had never faded

She looked at Bilu, then at Onara, and finally, her eyes, as gentle as water, landed on Shaw Danon's face.

Shaw Danon prepared.

She did not make a move, instead, she softly asked again: "Young man, what you just saw in the well, can you tell me?"

Everybody startled. They had no idea why that devil was so interested at what Shaw Danon saw in the well. Shaw Danon hadn't speak, Onara already shouted: "Brother Zhang, don't fall into her trap!"

Shaw Danon nodded and agreed, remain silent. He raised his hand, ready to charge.

Three-tails fox spirit looked at him, sighed softly.

Shaw Danon was suddenly puzzled.

Water like moonlight softly shone.

That lady lowered her head. Her thin eyelashes covered her lovely eyes.

The water like glance waved.

Then, she lifted her head, putted her hand into her clothes, slowly took an

item out.

Everyone stared at it.

It was an item with half a palm size. Round shape. Outside was surrounded by clear, green jade ring, it was not a common item. The the center of the jade ring, it was a small mirror like, red thin slice thing, carved with strange fire totem at the center.

The jade ring took most of the space of that item. At both sides of the jade ring, each had a red sling tied to the ring.

Tanis Ka was stunned, truly stunned. Tonni could feel it. Her grandpa had never been like this before, stood there like a wood.

She was a little feared and pulled Tanis Ka's sleeve, said: "Grandpa, what happened to you?"

"How can this be, how can this be?" Tanis Ka watched the scene blankly, stared at the strange esper that was in three-tails fox spirit's hand, his voice was like moan: "This is clearly 'Incense Valley's most important treasure — 'Inferno Mirror'! The most Yang and righteous item of the world, and the divine weapon that Incense Valley used to battle against the devils for thousands years. How, how can this be in the hand of that fox spirit?"

Tonni startled, couldn't help but took at glance at the Inferno Mirrior, said: "This that esper really that powerful?"

Tanis Ka letted out a long sigh, mumbled: "The world really changed. A

righteous disciple using an eser with extremely strong evil energy; it is a divine tool in the hand of the devil!”

“Boo, I thought you were exclaimed for something interesting!” Tonni said with contempt.

Tanis Ka said angily: “What did you say?”

Tonni said: “Such outdated words, you still able to say it out without blush. What era is it now, still care about good and evil different!”

Tanis Ka’s tongue was tied, couldn’t say anything.

Note 1: Yatou - A disrespectful word to call a girl in some situation. Mostly used by old people to call young girl. It can also stand for female servent or slave.

Just a note, what Tonni said at the end is forshadowing something....

Chapter 52 Dark Drake Cave

They frowned. The bewitching lady took out a strange esper when she was surrounded, she was probably going to have a fight to the death. Everyone remained cautious, except for Onara, who shouted and charged forward with his Shatterer staff.

Before Shaw Danon got a chance to tell him “careful”, three-tails fox spirit’s gentle eyes glanced at Onara, and slowly lifted the jade ring with both red slings, putted it in front of her.

The jade ring slightly turning, reflecting her face.

The cold moonlight shone on Inferno Mirror. The ancient fire totem was like alive once again. It was lifelike as it was actually burning.

Onara rose into the air with his Shatterer staff, shouted: “Devil, die!”

And at that moment, the center of the Inferno Mirror, where the fire totem was located, had turned instead into clear, bright, crimson red from its original dark red. Just in a blink of an eye, the fire totem had lighted up by the divine fire.

The fire totem had become a burning flame.

With the bewitching lady as the center, an invisible heat fiercely spread to all directions. Except for the ground where she was standing on, all plants within three yards turned brown. However, there was no spark or fire.

Shaw Danon and Bilu were terrified. They could have never expected three-tails fox spirit to have such powerful esper. Onara, who was at mid-air, also saw what happened. Although he was surprised by the power of the esper, but he was not afraid. His right hand grabbed the gold light shining Shatterer staff into his hand. He spun, causing a whistle, and hit right toward three-tails fox spirit's head.

While the staff itself was still in the air, the dust already stirred up on the ground. Three-tails fox spirit's vulnerable body seemed like it was about to be blown away by the fierce wind. But she smiled coldly, her fingers from both hands hooked on the red slings, aimed at Onara.

The burning Inferno Mirror reflected in her eyes like a pair of raging flames.

“Boom”!

In the large bang, a fire dragon shot out fiercely from the totem at the center of the Inferno Mirror, shocking the sky with its truculence. The entire body was covered with flames, brightening the forest like day.

Onara was surprised. The fire dragon enlarged rapidly. It was only just a flame when it came out from the Inferno, but now the dragon's head was already two

men large. Especially the heat that came out, strong enough to cause one to doubt is it a forge.

Shaw Danon could see from down there that Onara, under the force of the large fire dragon, his hair from the temples had began turning yellow before they were even in combat. It was imaginable what situation Onara was facing.

But Onara was surprised but not cower. Under the enchantment of his power, the golden light of Shatterer staff became brighter, striked at the dragon's head.

The fire dragon roared in the air, the pair of large eyes shot out two raging flame. It opened its jaw, grabbed the large spike club.

The gold and crimson glow quickly spread out from the center, along with it was thunder like bang. Onara could feel the Shatterer staff in his hand was so hot that he could no longer hold it. Under the surprisement, he used all his strength and pulled out the Shatterer staff from the dragon's mouth.

The fire dragon danced in the sky, roared and opened its jaw, shot out a giant pillar of fire at Onara.

Onara roared, both of his hands held incanation mark, placed the Shatterer staff before him, raised up a wall of golden light and blocked the pillar of fire, but his body was being pushed back by the mighty force.

Shaw Danon saw Onara was in disadvantage and in danger, he quickly and quietly raised up the fire stick, shot at the fire dragon. But the fire dragon did not require to see in order to notice it. It turned its head, opened its jaw,

another pillar of fire came out.

Shaw Danon was unprepared, there was no place to avoid the wave of blaze. He gritted his teeth, kept the magic channeled. The fire stick lighted up with green glow, blocked the pillar of flame.

At this moment, three-tails fox spirit letted out a long laugh. She rose into the air and dashed toward the two with the Inferno Mirror shining brightly in her hand. Shaw Danon and Onara were battling against the fire dragon, they were both surprised. Even Bilu, who was standing behind the three-tails fox spirit, was also quite surprised. Under the urgent situation, she shouted, rose into the air. Her fingers of her right hand twisted. Heartending Flower turned into countless petals, filled in the sky, and striked at three-tails fox spirit from behind.

At the place where no one could see it, Bilu's left hand quietly placed at her waist, held the little golden bell in her hand.

Three-tails fox spirit seemed knew the power of Heartending Flower. She dodged and did not face it directly. And Bilu did not give chase, she dashed to Shaw Danon, stood next to him in mid-air.

Shaw Danon raised his head, glanced at her. And Bilu's eyes were also turned to him.

Shaw Danon, for some reason, turned his head away immediately.

Fire dragon was still showing off in the sky. However, without hesitation, after Bilu had attacked her, three-tails fox spirit waved her hand, called back Inferno

Mirror, then, she turned into white light and disappeared into the dark forest.

Three of them couldn't help but startled.

※ ※ ※

At far, Tanis Ka letted out a long sigh: "Good, good. It is appear that the three-tails fox spirit's cultivation isn't enough, can not unleash the power of Inferno Mirror, but only to scare those young lads. With the true power of Inferno Mirror, those people are in danger."

Tonni said unhappily: "How do you know her cultivation isn't enough? I see that she is not in disadvantage even it is one against three."

Tanis Ka glared at her, said: "What do you know. Inferno Mirror is an item of ancient deity, very powerful. Legend said at its most powerful stage, it can summon Wasteland Dragon, burn down everything of the world. It is going to turn those arrogant young people into nothingness, not even ashes."

Tonni snorted, ignored him, turned her head back to the scene. She suddenly frowned, said: "Grandpa, it's look like they are going to give chase."

Tanis Ka was surprised, he quickly turned around and found Shaw Danon and others went deeper into the forest, where three-tails fox spirit disappeared, after they had a discussion. Onara went first. Shaw Danon took a few steps and discovered Bilu did not move. He turned around facing Bilu, was about to say something, but he stopped. His face was a little red.

Bilu smiled, quietly scolded him, then moved. Shaw Danon startled, then

shook his head and followed.

Tanis Ka was stunned, stamped his foot, said: “Those young lads, really don’t know about death. That three-tails fox spirit has Inferno Mirror in her hand, and yet they still have the courage to chase.”

Tonni bit on her lollipop (she has never threw it away), said calmly: “Didn’t you senior just say something about three-tails fox spirit’s cultivation isn’t enough to unleash the full power of Inferno Mirror. If so, it is just like she does not have Inferno Mirror. What will those young lads fear?”

Tanis Ka was muted, like choked and couldn’t say anything. After a while, he recalled something, quickly said: “Hurry, we need to go, too!”

This time it was Tonni who was surprised: “Go? Where?”

Tanis Ka walked in quick pace, said: “Of’ course it is to slay the devil.”

Tonni followed him with a cold smile on her face, said: “In the past, you ran into so many large devils, small devils, not large and not small devils, why I could only see you run, never saw you actually slay them?”

Tanis Ka blushed, said: “We wanderers’ most important thing is the knowing our own limitation.....eh?”

His words was not finished when he stopped walking. His attention was drawn but something else. Follow his direction, Tonni found Tanis Ka was looking at a peaceful, motionless thing — the ancient well.

At this moment, Shaw Danon and others were already disappeared into the darkness. The countless number of monsters were also gone. There were only Tanis Ka and Tonni left in the forest. The cold moonlight shone on the ancient well, shining the moss and scars, with sadness and loneliness.

Tanis Ka took a deep breath, walked to it. Tonni followed behind him. She was a little nervous, said: "Grandpa, what do you want to do?"

Tanis Ka frowned, said: "I have to see what is special about the well. Why three-tails fox spirit always asking that boy about what did he see?"

Tonni stopped at about three steps away from the well. Her heart was a little scared. The surrounding was dead silent, but she could feel there was wind in the darkness and countless of eyes that were watching her from the dark.

Tanis Ka arrived next to the well. He raised his head, looked around and found nothing strange, he was about to look down into the well. Tonni suddenly nervously said: "Grandpa, careful!"

Tanis Ka glanced at her, smiled: "There won't be anything happen." Then, he looked down, looked into the well.

Tonni stared at his face. A surprised expression shown on Tanis Ka's nervous and solemn face, then turned into happiness, but then transformed into puzzle. He lifted his head, pondering.

Tonni stepped forth, whispered: “Grandpa, what did you see?”

Tanis Ka frowned: “I saw enormous piles of gold.”

Tonni: “.....”

Tanis Ka talked to himself: “The reflection of the well’s water is not a human’s figure, weird.....”

“Ah!” Suddenly, Tonni screamed. Tanis Ka was surprised, quickly turned to her. Tonni was also looking down at the well. She lifted her head.

Tanis Ka was stunned for a moment, then asked: “What did you see?”

Tonni shrugged, said: “Enormous piles of lollipop.”

Tanis Ka fell on the ground.

After a while, as they were walking deeper into the forest, Tanis Ka whispered to Tonni: “I kept thinking. This well is probably the legendary ‘Lunar Well’. At full moon, if someone look down there, they will see their most beloved person or thing. But I still can’t understand why three-tails fox spirit kept asking that boy about what he saw in the well? But now, I really want to know what did he saw.....”

※ ※ ※

The forest did not seem to be large from the outside, but when Shaw Danon and others were in there, under the vast color of the night, there was an illusion of endlessness. The three summoned their own espers, traveled in the darkness, closely chasing the white light before them. It was the trace of three-tails fox spirit's escape.

But expectedly the white light suddenly vanished into thin air. With their esper, Shaw Danon and others arrived at where the white light vanished. The woods were heavy, at the opening of the forest, there was a small hill. At the side of the hill, there was a cave entrance. The rocks around the cave were all black.

It was the Dark Drake Cave no doubt.

The three stood before the entrance. They looked at each others then turned to the cave. The entrance was not large, and it was completely black inside, giving them a feeling of endlessness. Burst of chill wind blew out from the cave, hit on their bodies with piercing bite.

Bilu frowned, said: "This cave contains unpredictable danger, and the esper in that fox spirit's hand is extremely powerful. Maybe we should not take the risk."

Shaw Danon glanced at her, before he said anything, Onara already spoke loudly: "Brother Zhang, we need to finish this. If we give up that easily here today, that fox spirit will return later, causing more disaster."

Shaw Danon immediately nodded: "Brother Shi is right, let us go in."

Bilu was angered, but Shaw Danon turned around, whispered heartily: “It is really dangerous inside there. Brother Shi and I are the side of Good, it is our duty. You-you-” He paused, then turned away, but the voice still came out: “Your safety is important, don’t put yourself at risk.”

Although Bilu could not see Shaw Danon’s face, she could hear the care came out from his true heart. A sweet feeling came to her heart, but she still said coldly: “I can go in if I want to, what can you do about it?”

Shaw Danon startled, couldn’t say anything.

Onara saw the two’s weird expression, he shook his head, said: “Brother Zhang, let us go in.”

Shaw Danon answered, couldn’t help but peered at Bilu again. Bilu snorted, then moved before them and entered the Dark Drake Cave. Shaw Danon was surprised, and quickly followed her. The wind screamed next to his ears. Onara must be following him.

In the darkness, the Heartending Flower in Bilu’s hand slowly brightened up. The soft white light covered the place five feet around her. The wall was filled with weird stones that were dark as ink, hard as steel, very cold.

The Dark Drake Cave was very much like the Cave of Fangs in Kongsang Mountain. The path lead straight down to the underground, and the slope was steeper than Cave of Fangs. Maybe it is because the villager’s digging, or it is naturally like that.

The three of them walked for a while and they were already deep under the

ground, but there was no sound, not a sign of living, unlike in the Cave of Fangs where countless of terrifying vampire live. As Shaw Danon was walking, his heart went back to the memories when he was in the Cave of Fang, and remembered the days when he and Bilu were trapped inside Blooddrip Cave under Forsaken Abyss.

Then at this moment, Bilu suddenly stopped, letted out a soft cry. Shaw Danon thought it was something dangerous ahead. He quickly rushed to Bilu's side. Bilu startled, turned her eyes to him.

There was no more path.

A cliff laid before them. The cliff was pitch black. But looking at it from far, it appeared there were several ghost fire like objects sparkled in the deep darkness. Shaw Danon was shocked, and at that instant he thought he went back to Forsaken Abyss.

But this place was far from Forsaken Abyss. Just the size alone it was much smaller than Forsaken Abyss. Shaw Danon frowned, turned his head to Onara. Onara walked to the edge, took a glance, pondered for a moment then said: "Brother Zhang, seem like we need to go down there."

Shaw Danon nodded: "Brother Shi, you need to be careful."

Onara's face was solemn, said: "You too." Then he pointed his finger. The golden Shatterer staff rose in front of him. He jumped on it, took a deep breath, then slowly descend.

Shaw Danon turned around, looked at Bilu, but this time he didn't say

anything (Probably it will be end up like last time if he speak). He summoned fire stick and followed Onara.

Bilu stood behind him, suddenly smile; the smile was filled with joy.

The gold, green and white light slowly descend from the cliff. Around them was still the black rocks. There was no sound still. The only thing unusual is that the further they descend, the temperature seem rising.

Just like that, they descend for some distant. With the light from the three espers, Shaw Danon could begin to see their surrounding. There was no path at the other side of the cliff but strange dead wall. From the place where they were standing, it seemed like it was an ancient well that got enlarged thousands times. It kept descending.

Suddenly, Onara said in hurry: "Careful."

Shaw Danon and Bilu were surprised, immediately on guard. There was a small hole on the wall. A pair of glowing eyes were watching them from the hole.

Onara gave them a sign, then slowly got closer to it. Shaw Danon and Bilu held their breath.

As they got closer, at the dark place where it had not been brightened for a long time; when Onara's Shatterer staff's golden light shined on the hole, they saw a little mouse with a size of a palm, with this hole as its home, it opened its eyes watching the unwelcome visitors.

Onara shook his head and returned. Shaw Danon and Bilu looked at each other. The three smiled bitterly, then continue descending.

And then, the following situation was something they could have never imagine.

One, two, three.....the bright or dim ghostly lights had slowly rose from their side and around them. In the darkness, there was also countless of panting and roaring.

Even at the lifeless place in Dark Drake Cave, at below the cliff, so dark that it could never see the sun, there were countless of life unbelievably, unexpectedly living here.

In the darkness had took away its ancient veil, with a strange heart beat, starting from that little rat hole, as they continued descend, the caves in all different sizes appeared. For every few feet there was another cave. And in the cave, there were all kinds of animals resting in there. From rats, bats, to gibbon, leopard. Why did they hunt their daily food?

Those are just the animals they knew. But as they descend even farther, they were stunned to see a water living crab with four claws living in the cave, then a cute raccoon with six legs, a pig like beast with tiger fur and two horns. The species were countless.

Countless of eyes formed a ghostly ocean, watching the three people in the light.

Shaw Danon became more surprised, he couldn't help but imagined if his old

friend in Jadeon Issa is here, with his strange animals collecting personality, his mouth will probably got ripped due to laughter.

Chapter 53 Fire Dragon

At this moment, countless of eyes in the darkness were watching the three people in the light. Shaw Danon's heart felt the creep. He turned to Bilu and Onara, found that both of them do not look good either. Seem like none of them have been into such situation before.

But the countless of creatures around them did not make a move to attack the them. Except for some growls came out from the bad temper tigers, they basically had no movement, only quietly watching.

They continued to decend. After about four or five yards, Shaw Danon suddenly discovered the number of eyes were getting less, however, it felt like the eyes got larger.

He frowned, quietly got closer to the wall. Under the light of the fire stick, as he was expected, the number of caves on the wall were much less. However, the size of the caves were at least twice as large. Almost all caves were a man height. In correspond, the creatures that lived inside the caves are larger, much more aggressive. Sharp fangs and claws, hideous appearance, really creeped the people.

A more aggressive bear head boar roared and swung its claw when Shaw

Danon was near, almost hit him.

Shaw Danon was surprised. Quickly drove his esper backward for several feet. Bilu and Onara heard the sound, both turned to him. Shaw Danon whispered: "It seem like the beasts here are more aggressive. We need to be more careful."

Bilu and Onara nodded and taken precautions.

Beside that they will be attacked by the beast if they get near the wall, the three of them did not receive any harass. Although those beasts seem aggressive, but they do not have the ability to fly, therefor they can only stay in their cave. While Shaw Danon was focusing on controlling his flying, he thought, since those beasts can not fly, on the wall, how do they get their food?

Like this, three of them descended for several yards. From the Dark Drake Cave to here, they were at least hundreds yard below the ground. But from here, at this large ghostly black hole, except for the light came out from the eyes of the strange creatures around them, it was still appeared to be bottomless.

And it was different than their past experience. In this deep abyss, they did not feel chill, but the opposite. The temperature here is much higher than the surface of Dark Drake Cave. Shaw Danon could felt he is sweating. And surround them was still darkness, without a sign of fire, very awkward.

Onara drove his esper, slowly descending, he suddenly cursed: "Ge Laozi (Note 1), that damn fox, it really can find such strange place as den."

Shaw Danon did not respond, but Bilu giggled out. The laughter was clear and pleasing. Although she had lowered her voice, but it could still be heard in this

quiet place.

Shaw Danon looked at Bilu. In the soft white light of Heartending Flower, Bilu's smile was like flower, gentleness filled between her brows. She can also feel it and turned to Shaw Danon. Their eyes met. Shaw Danon's heart jumped and quickly turned his head away.

They continued decending, things began to change. The caves were still getting larger, the creatures inside there were also larger, and reached the size greater than normal man. But the three of them were surprised to find that most of the caves were empty. The fresh air had turned into a little bloody.

They looked at each other. Sign of vigilance in their eyes. However, this did not slow them down.

In the boundless darkness under their feet, something, like star, or like spark, had glowed.

※ ※ ※

Above the abyss, Tanis Ka and Tonni finally arrived at the cliff with a torch and a nervous heart. Seeing there was no more path and a unmeasurably deep abyss, Tanis Ka's tongue was tied, couldn't say anything.

Although Tonni have been wander around the world with her grandpa since young, she is young after all, being in such dark and silence Dark Drake Cave, she was a bit scared. She glanced down at the abyss then immediately shrink back, whispered to Tanis Ka: "Grandpa, do you have any idea of how to get

down there?”

Tanis Ka rolled his eyes: “We don’t know cultivation, and did not prepare rope, this is really bad.”

Tonni was relieved, patted herself on the chest: “Good, good.”

Tanis Ka glared at her: “Good for what, maybe there are mountains of gold, silver, agate, emerald waiting for us down there. This is re-re-really a great lost!” His tone was very sad.

Tonni snorted, bit on the lollipop in her right hand, said: “Mountains of gold and silver, I will say there are probably mountains of corpse and bones waiting for you! Good, now since we can’t get down there, we better get out. If we run into a monster or two, you famous Master Jadeon’s thirteenth generation disciple is going to make your ancestors to lose all their faces.”

Tanis Ka said angrily: “Nonsense, how will I Tanis Ka lose my ancestors.....”

Before his words are done, suddenly wind screamed in the quiet cave in the darkness. Two beams of light flashed, in a blink of an eye, they arrived in front of them.

Tanis Ka screamed, his right hand pulled Tonni to him while his left hand held a yellow talisman, was about to escape. But two figures appeared from the light, they were fast as shadow, before Tanis Ka could start casting, an item already placed next to Tanis Ka’s neck. He was terrified but couldn’t complain.

A moment later he realized that his life was not taken, however the item at his neck did not removed. He raised up his courage and looked at the two people. They were one male and one female. The male was handsome and the female was beautiful.

They were one yard away from Tanis Ka, but that man already sent a pure, warm, jade ruler next to Tanis Ka's neck. The beautiful woman also controlling a green sword stopping Tonni. Poor Tonni was terrified. Her face was pale. Her right hand was holding the lollipop, her mouth was crying loudly: "Monster brother, monster sister, don't eat me. I am small and don't have much flesh, not delicious. If you want you can eat my grandpa."

Tanis Ka almost fell on the ground, said fiercely: "Stupid yatou, I really raised you up for nothing. From normal days I can't see it, now at this critical moment, you are betraying your grandpa?"

Tonni said tearfully: "Grandpa, don't blame me. At least after you die, you still have me to bring you some lollipop....."

Tanis Ka said angrily: "Rubbish, I hate those sweet sticky thing for my entire life. Things like beggar's chicken, or steamed mei fish will be better....."

Tonni nodded: "Grandpa, I get it, you can rest assure."

Tanis Ka relieved: "Now that's better, I can be relieved when I leave.....wait, wait!" Then he suddenly realized, eyebrows raised: "Stupid yatou, why I need to relieve, go where? Conscienceless, I....."

Listening to Tanis Ka's annoying, continuous scold on Tonni, and seeing his endless speech, the celestial like male and female both frowned, looked at each other, then retrieved back their esper.

The female said: "Shixiong, I see they don't have devil's energy, they don't look like devil."

The male said: "Right." Then he turned to Tanis Ka, shouted (if not doing so he couldn't stop Tanis Ka's long speech): "Who are you?"

Tanis Ka startled, immediately returned to a calm expression, said: "Ho ho, old man and his granddaughter know there is devil rampaging here, so we come here to capture the devil for the sake of the people."

Tonni was stunned, she stared at her grandpa, Tanis Ka was calm and normal.

But that man took a look at them, smiled coldly: "I see your cultivation is just basic, probably not even an opponent for small devils. You really got the gut to come to here dangerous place, perhaps you should return while it is still early."

Tanis Ka's old face blushed, said: "Yes, yes." Then took Tonni to outside.

After the old and the young were disappeared in the darkness, the man looked at the cliff ahead, said: "Shimei, seem like we need to go down there."

The beautiful woman said: "Yes, this time really is the heaven blessing us, letting us know the remaining fox spirit hiding in Dark Drake Cave. If we can get rid of the fox spirit, track back the Inferno Mirror, our lord will be very pleased."

The man smiled light heartedly: "This affair better not get delay, we should go now."

Then, light brightened, the man and woman went into the bottomless abyss like lighting.

But on the cliff, in the darkness, Tanis Ka and Tonni slowly came out. They did not went far.

Tanis Ka's brows frowned tightly, pondered for a moment, he told Tonni: "Those two youngsters has very good potential, highly cultivated. I noticed their sleeves were sewed with a picture of fire. They are probably Incense disciples."

Tonni was surprised: "Incense?"

Tanis Ka nodded: "Incense Valley is very powerful. They stand along side with Jadeon and Skysong as the three leaders of Good. They have many strong people. I have heard they got two outstanding disciples recently, they are a male and a female. The male is Li Su, the female is Yanon. Base on their espers, probably it is them."

Tonni looked down at the cliff, said worriedly: "The three people who just went there....."

Tanis Ka shrugged, pulled Tonni to the outside of the cave, murmured: "We can't help them. Tonight is overcrowded, we can't get anything good. Alas, such a pity."

Tonni laughed softly, did not speak and followed Tanis Ka.

The cliff was pitch black, the figures of Li Su and Yanon were already gone.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon was in the darkness, except for the high temperature, and the staring of the strange beasts, he felt he have returned to Forsaken Abyss.

The caves around them were getting bigger. The caves were almost to two men in height. The beasts inside were also more aggressive, the size were larger. However, the number of empty caves was also more, and the bloody smell in the air was getting heavier.

Even more was that as he was decending, he could hear a soft chewing sound, like an unknown large beast swallowing its food, very creepy.

When everyone's muscles were tightened, almost could hear their own heartbeat, suddenly, Shaw Danon felt a wave of fiercely wind blew past under his feet in the darkness.

It was like an action out of instinct, fire stick followed his will and swiftly moved three feet to the side when the wind touched him.

“Pa!”

A loud slap, reflecting little bit of light, an incomparably large tentacle came out of the darkness, heavily hit on the wall next to Shaw Danon in the pitch dark

darkness like a whip.

The wall was shocked; dust were raised; rocks were falling down. Moment later, a mournful cry came from the wall. Shaw Danon and others were surprised. They turned and found a demon like large tentacle went into one of the large caves in the wall, after several twitches, it came out.

Shaw Danon gasped in cold breath. After a wave of wind filled with bloody smell past, a large five eyes saber tooth tiger was caught by the enormous tentacle, dragged out of the cave. Even though the five eyes saber tooth tiger tried to resist, compare to the unbelievably enormous tentacle, it was small like a baby.

After the tentacle caught the tiger, it immediately shrink back into the darkness of the bottom, vanished in the blink of an eye, leaving only the mournful hopeless cry of the tiger behind.

All three of them were shocked, they turned pale, especially Bilu.

In the heavy, bottomless darkness, there can be many more horrifying things hiding.

After a moment, Onara coughed, was about to speak, but Bilu's sharp eyes spotted something, quickly shouted: "Down there, careful!"

Shaw Danon and Onara were surprised again, quickly looked down. In the darkness below them, fire flashed, just in a second the temperature of the

surrounding space rose abruptly. The fire was getting larger, following the fierce wind and tide of heat, as it got closer, they could clearly see what that is. They were terrified. It was a fire dragon, screaming to the sky, charging up into the air with rage from the underground abyss.

The appearance of the fire dragon was very much like the fire dragon that was summoned with Inferno Mirror by three-tails fox spirit. But the fire dragon at this moment was much superior than the previous fire dragon on the ground in term of size and power.

Although they have this question, this moment is not the time to ask. The hideous dragon and the heat wave was about to arrive in front of them, unstoppable. They hurriedly separated with their espers, and evaded the strike.

The espers' light glared, protect its owner. But the dragon was too powerful, it immediately suppressed the esper's aura. Shaw Danon and others were being pushed back by the giant wave of heat. A moment later, they hit on the wall.

The powerful caused by the dragon as it raised into the air was surprising. Shaw Danon's back hit on the solid wall, so painful that his eyes got blackened for a moment. But he was quite fortunate, after he regain his consciousness, he saw Onara's large body fell right into a cave. And very unfortunately, roar of the beast soon came out from the cave.

Shaw Danon was surprised, and was about to rush forward to help. But Onara shouted, then several bangs in the cave, gold light flashed, then a large body was tossed out. It was another strange looking beast. From the look of it, it appeared even if it is still alive, it won't last long.

Shaw Danon was relieved. His mind thought that the name Onara is right, he

is really harder than a rock! (Onara, Shi-tuo....forum being too sensitive...., means rock in Chinese)

And at this moment, the rising dragon turned in a circle, then charged down like fierce storm.

This charge from high to low was even more powerful. Shaw Danon gritted his teeth, held the incantation. He quickly moved one yard to the side and evaded the hideous dragon. His right hand pointed, the fire stick shot at the dragon's neck.

The dragon moaned, its fire throwing eyes turned, and its large left forelimb raised, stopped the green light of the fire stick. Shaw Danon's face turned pale. He could feel waves of burning heat coming to him, but he could do now is struggling to hold out.

A soft shout issued. In the abyss under the flaring light of the dragon, a watery green figure flashed. Bilu was floating in her watery green dress. Her Heartending Flower was glaring with white light. The rain of flowers filled the sky, landing on the head of the dragon.

"Roar....."In the raging flame, the dragon issued another moan. Its right claw swung, immediately the rain of white flowers was pushed back three feet. But Shaw Danon and Bilu combined their strength, quickly pushed down the fire dragon by one yard, and met Onara who just rushed out from the cave.

Onara saw Shaw Danon and Bilu were in a fierce fight with the enormous dragon. They were surrounded by flame, although they have the protection of their esper, their faces were flushed red.

Onara's eyes wide opened, jumped into the air and crossed his legs mid-air. Both of his hands held up Shatterer staff. Gold light brightened, the entire spiked club was almost transparent with the gold light. Onara himself was solemn, like a Buddhist monk.

Onara's eyes suddenly opened, like a powerful, righteous vajra, he turned into swift gold light, pierced through the air. In a loud bang, the entire Shatterer staff inserted into the hard wall. Instantly, the originally steel hard rock corrupted in, the area was almost four yards.

Vein raised on Onara's face, almost to the degree of terrifying. Thin stain of blood came out from his mouth, but the Shatterer staff was shining with dazzling gold light. He shouted, the gold light contracted, formed into a large gold light, shot at the dragon's head.

The power of this strike was not small, it was the combine of all power in Onara's body. Even though the dragon was very fierce, but being hit on the head, and plus the combined attack of Shaw Danon and Bilu, the dragon letted out a long, earth shocking scream. At the end, it couldn't hold out and quickly fell into the darkness below.

After this successful hit, Onara's body swayed. His face flushed, almost fell off. Luckily Shaw Danon noticed Onara's unusual look, he immediately rushed to his side and grabbed him, Onara then was able to steady his body.

Before they got a chance to catch their breath, Bilu screamed from the above. She rushed downward. Shaw Danon was horrified as he saw the demon like enormous tentacle has returned. This time it hit two of them from above their head.

The wind pierce against their face. Onara's breath haven't regain yet, Shaw Danon was unprepared, when they were about to die under that enormous tentacle, Bilu's figure appeared before Shaw Danon. The Heartending Flower in her hand turned into six flowers, circling the flower that located in the center. Each flowers were connect with pure white light, with the appearance of a white wheel. Shaw Danon recalled that Bilu used it when she defend herself against Abyssal Viper under Forsaken Abyss.

It was clear that the unknown creature in the darkness was fill with extraordinary might like Abyssal Viper. Although it was not as strong as the Abyssal Viper, the strike did not immediately destroyed the white wheel like Abyssal Viper that day, Bilu's body was shocked heavily, she was pushed down and was about to be swallowed by the endless darkness.

Buzz rang in Shaw Danon's brain, fire rose in his eyes. With the strength coming from unknown place, without thinking, he letted go of Onara, quickly flew downward. The green light of the fire stick brightened, quickly he caught up with the hideous large tentacle and Bilu.

Bilu was struggling, the pressure was as heavy as mountain. When she was about to lost control, she suddenly found Shaw Danon appeared next to her, she screamed with surprise: "Go away....."

Before she could finish, Shaw Danon already charged forward with his fire stick, heavily hit on the large tentacle located abose Bilu. At the area where the fire stick hit the tentacle, it atrophy. The smooth skin turned dry instantly.

The tentacle immediately retreated due to pain. The pressure was gone from Bilu. She saw Shaw Danon came save her recklessly, she was glad, but also worry. However, before she could speak, her face turned pale again.

The large tentacle reappeared in the darkness. This time it silently went under Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon was unaware, he was caught by the giant tentacle, pulled into the darkness.

Bilu and Onara were terrified. Without speaking, they gave chase.

Chapter 54 Strange Beast

Not long after Bilu and others left for the chase, the darkness place that just went through a fierce battle has returned peaceful. Then a scream from the wind sounded from the above, a white light and a green light were coming down, they paused, then a male and a female appeared from the lights. They were Li Su and Yanon from Incense.

Surprisement appeared on Li Su's handsome face. With the help of the esper's light, he looked around, told Yanon: "Shimei, can never expect in the den of the fox spirit there will be such wonder."

Yanon's face also showed amazement, nodded: "Yes, I have never see such place in the past. Many of the strange beasts here are probably never known to the world." Paused, then she said quietly: "Shixiong, this place is wicked. I am afraid the path ahead will be unusually dangerous. We need to be careful."

Li Su lightly smiled, proudly he said: "Just rest assure shimei, this fox spirit is only five hundreds years of cultivation. Have no need to worry about!"

Yanon smiled: "Shixiong, with your superior talent and cultivation, of course you don't fear that devil. But if that 'six-tails fox demon' is with the 'three-tails fox spirit', with its thousand years of cultivation, there might be a little

difficulty.”

Li Su glanced at Yanon, smiled, suddenly said: “Shimei, although you said it nicely, your heart is probably worry about this shixiong going forward recklessly right?”

Yanon’s lip moved, said quietly: “Shixiong, you think too much.”

Li Su looked around, said lightly: “Shimei, do you feel that the temperature in this abyss is a bit strange?”

Yanon nodded, said: “Right, it is really deep now, but the temperature seem hotter.”

Li Su said: “It is not just hotter. It is much more hotter than normal. On my way flying down here, I carefully looked into the black stones in this abyss, determine that this is formed by magma that bursted out from thousands yards underground at ancient time. This abyss is probably a volcano crater!”

“Ah” Yanon exclaimed. She immediately realized: “You are saying.....”

Li Su continued: “Correct, it means that fox spirits intentionally pick this volcano crater as their den. Three hundreds years ago, the fox spirits were audacious, reckless, invaded our Incense forbidden place, stole our inferno item. But the guardian Shangguan Shishu immediately came after he heard about it, and showed off by capturing those fox spirits. The cunning six-tails fox demon however, had escaped.”

He suddenly gave a cold laugh, then continued: “But with Shangguan Shishu’s

deep cultivation, and his esper 'Lunar Ice Stinger' is best of best in the world, very powerful. I have heard about this from our valley lord, although six-tails fox demon fortunately escaped, his pulse was stabbed by Shangguan Shishu's Lunar Ice Stinger, damaged its cultivation. For three hundreds years, he did not die, but must be suffered greatly, lost all its cultivation. With the ice poison damaging him day and night, it is better to be near the most Yang and hottest place to reduce the pain."

Yanon smiled: "So that means the six-tails fox demon is most likely in this abyss. Shixiong you can think so much ahead, shimei is really admire."

Slight sign of pride reappeared on Li Su's face, he said: "We are Incense disciples, indebt to our faction's kindness, we can not let our faction to lose their face. This time we only wish the heaven will bless us, return the item to its owner, return the divine artifact, and the devils receive the justice."

Yanon smiled without saying anything. Li Su glanced at her, said: "Let's go."

Yanon nodded. The two figures turned into swift lights once again, quickly went downward into the deep darkness.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon was holding the fire stick with his right hand while his body was caught by that giant tentacle. He could almost hear the cracking sound of his bone. There was no place on his body that does not have pain. And being brought down to deep underground by the giant tentacle in high speed, his face was pierced by the wind, stars flying before his eyes, his brain was in chaos, horrible scenes kept flashing in his mind.

The length of the tentacle was surprising. After he was pulled down by five yards (one yard in China actually equal to ten feet, pretty long), with the weak light in the chaos, Shaw Danon saw he has reached the bottom of the abyss. There was no life around, only a large cave ahead. Ten yards high, seven or eight yards wide, it was pitch-dark, unable to see what is in there.

That large tentacle was from the monster inside that cave. Now it felt like the monster was even larger, before seeing what creature is that.

Shaw Danon was swung by the giant tentacle in air then watching himself being pulled into the cave. But at this moment, ghostly light flashed at the cave entrance, the long disappeared three-tails fox spirit reappeared with the Inferno Mirror.

She raised her head, seeing Shaw Danon was caught tightly by the giant tentacle, without power to resist. Killing sense flashed pass her gentle face and was about to turn to the cave and speak. But then she thought of something, suddenly paused, turned around looked at Shaw Danon who was struggling but effectless. She sighed, said quietly: "Seeing your reaction when you looked into Lunar Well, you are also a person with love. Just let you live."

Then, she raised the Inferno Mirror in her hand, shined at the cave, and at the same time, she gave a strange howl like a wild fox.

After a moment, seemed like it received order, the large tentacle swiftly shrunk into the cave. Shaw Danon was pulled into the darkness. He could no longer see any light. He suddenly felt the smell of blood surrounded him. The surface of the tentacle that caught him was slippery, but it just captured him so tight that he couldn't move.

At the same time, three-tails fox spirit heard the wind whistled. She lifted her head and saw two beams of light, gold and white, were shooting down. She laughed coldly, then returned into the cave, shined the cave with Inferno Mirror again, and gave a similar howl.

The two beams of light were Onara and Bilu. They were glad that they caught up to the three-tails fox spirit. But seeing there is no sight of Shaw Danon, Bilu worried. Before they could steady themselves, as three-tails fox spirit made a move, fierce wind roared in the giant cave. It was another giant tentacle, striked upon them.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon was trapped in the darkness. He was pulled deeper by the tentacle. On his way, he kept hitting against the stone wall, plus some turning. Although he did not crushed his head, covered with dirt is unavoidable. But in such dark place, no one can see it anyway.

This continued for some while. The smell of blood in the air was getting heavier. But the surrounding was pitch black, without single beam of light, there was no way he could see the surrounding. But fortunately, although the giant tentacle still captured him tightly, three-tails fox spirit seemed gave the order not to harm Shaw Danon. The tentacle did not get tighter, allowed Shaw Danon to catch his breath.

Finally, the large tentacle stopped in a pitch dark place. No longer moving, but still holding Shaw Danon tightly.

Shaw Danon was taking heavy breath. He was still shocked.

The darkness before him seemed endless.

Shaw Danon suddenly felt there was a unbelievably large monster occupied the darkness before him. Thought of that, chill filled his entire body.

In this ancient cave, like there was never light enter here since ancient time, it was dark as Ink. But this unknown world, have brought human their most ancient, deepest fear.

The tentacle that tied around his body reminded him all the time that before him, there will be an unpredictable monster.

The time, seemed frozen.

There was sound of combat coming from far away, faintly but familiar.

Suddenly, in the darkness, something uneasily throbbed. Some movement suddenly came from the darkness. Although Shaw Danon could not see it, ideas pass through his mind, he thought perhaps the monster's body was here, and it just letted out another arm to fight Bilu and Onara outside of the cave.

This thought did not last long, for Shaw Danon suddenly discovered the tentacle around him that no longer inputting additional strength, appeared it received some surprise, or maybe other reason, it began to tighten up again. Although the speed wasn't very fast, the pressure was like raging mountains and seas.

Shaw Danon's eyes blacked out. His entire body was in great pain. He shouted, desperately used all his cultivation of Pure Essence to hold out. But the tentacle's strength was unstoppable like demon, he could not hold out.

The rib bones on his chest were making cracking noise. Shaw Danon could not care much longer, and channeled other half of his cultivation, "Fawin Wisdom" that divine monk Puzhi of Skysong have taught him. hoping it can help him last longer. It was fine before he channeled it, but now the Fuwa's supreme incantation and Jadeon's amazing art immediately exclude each other inside his body due the way to cultivate and channel is greatly different. His pulses were very painful like stabbed by needles.

And at the same moment, under the pressure from the giant tentacle at the outside. His bones were about to break. Shaw Danon was helpless in the darkness. As the pressure grew stronger, his consciousness also became blurry.

At this critical moment, lines of passage strangely appeared in his mind.

".....heaven has no judgement, principle has no name. So if achieve selfless, no perference, no desire, no karma, then it is righteous. Holding righteousness, inside is self nature, world is the center....."

These words sounded from the depth of his heart, echo in his mind. This is one of the passage from the summary of "Liburis". The passage that have once caused him to be confused of how to combine the totally opposite arts of Fuwa and Dagos into one.

But at this moment, in this hopeless situation, his body was about to be tear apart, very painful; some part of his mind became clear. Ignoring the piercing

pain in his body, only echoing the passages in his mind:

“.....

So everything are within the world, watch by the world.

So there is no good or bad.

So world is always here, can not be created.

So matter can not last, then it can not fulfill the desire!

.....”

The dimmed fire stick that was held in his hand all the time, slowly lighted up again.

The ghostly green light rose faintly.

The freezing chill feeling traveled in his body.

Shaw Danon could not see anything in the darkness, but his eyes wide opened, his entire brain only echoing one sentence: “So matter can not last, then it can not fulfill the desire!.....So matter can not last, then it can not fulfill the desire!.....So matter can not last, then it can not fulfill the desire!.....”

“Ah!”

He lifted his head, to the sky, screaming, his voice was already hoarsed.

“So matter can not last, then it can not fulfill the desire!”

The two energies of Pure Essence and Fawin Wisdom that were in conflict suddenly surged out from his right arm like raging tide after a crush, and forced into the black fire stick.

After a moment, the fire shined brightly. Under the mystic green glow, the stick seemed stimulated by something. Every details became very clear. Even those veins were throbbing like receive fresh blood, flowing with dark red, wicked blood.

“Ge, ge, ge, ge, ge.....”

Following the strange event of the fire stick, there were strange sounds coming out from Shaw Danon’s body, but they were not the sound of cracking bones, rather the sound of rapid heart beats, like boiling blood about to come out through the skin while his body has no abnormal sign!

Unwittingly, Shaw Danon regained his consciousness. He did not find out what happened to his body but found out he was still being captured by the giant tentacle. But the difference is, at the instant of enlightenment he has forced the art of Fuwa and Dagos into the fire stick. The fire stick now glowed a little different. Within the mystic green light, there was also faint beams of golden light, and also the hideous, horrifying, clear red light from the veins.

This aura reluctantly opened a small space from the tentacle, but then Shaw

Danon realized the strength of the giant tentacle was too powerful. After it found out Shaw Danon's resistance became stronger, it putted in more strength to suppress him with at least hundred times stronger. Just a moment of work, the aura raised by the fire stick was about to fall and can't last long.

Shaw Danon is not dumb. He knew if this continue the end is death. He was determined, willing to take the risk, then he gritted his teeth, with all his power, the fire stick instantly brightened. Taking the last chance, Shaw Danon shouted, swiftly striked at the tentacle with his fire stick.

After a "puff" sound, the entire fire stick stabbed into the tentacle like godly blade.

In the darkness, since the only light that came from the fire stick has went into that giant tentacle, the surrounding immediately dimmed, without a single beam of light. Feeling the life of darkness, feeling the dead slient of the surrounding, Shaw Danon held his breath at that instant.

"Tu!"

A beam of light suddenly created a large hole on the tentacle and shot out with the strange light of the fire stick.

"Tu!"

Another sound, and on the other size of the tentacle, another beam came out.

Followed by series of "tu, tu, tu!" sound. Shaw Danon's mouth opened

slightly, watching the large tentacle that was trapping him being pierced through like thin paper. More and more light shot out from, shined on the ground and shined on himself.

Soon, Shaw Danon felt the tentacle slipped off from him powerlessly. At this moment, the fire stick came out from the inside of the tentacle, flew back into his hand. With the light came out from the fire stick, Shaw Danon could see the giant tentacle lie on the ground with wounds and dryness all over, very different than the strong, slippery appearance just a moment ago.

He just escaped from the gate of death, he was still in shock. The monster before him was also weird. It received such severe injury, but it showed no sign of pain.

When Shaw Danon's breath just became stable, and he planned to find a way out, giant wind screamed before him in the darkness. With the help of the dim light, Shaw Danon's jaw dropped as he saw giant tentacles came out from the darkness, with the shadows dancing, there were many of them.

One tentacle almost took his life, the consequence of facing this situation is clear. Without thinking, Shaw Danon turned and immediately flew away with his fire stick. But after only one yard, "bang", he and his stick were crushed on a solid stone wall.

The pain penetrated into his marrow. This crush was severe. He felt there was sticky stuff on his face, he is probably bleeding, but there is no time to care about this.

He was trapped in this pitch dark cave, like a blind man. And because he was very confused when he was grabbed by the tentacle into here, he could not remember the way in. He was like a headless fly, completely relied on his instinct and the sound of wind. Bumping around in the cave, often crushed on the wall if not careful, but a moment that he can evade from the tentacles is a moment.

The tentacles in the darkness is not only large, but also very agile. Shaw Danon tried to escape with his life, but the scream of the wind was close to his back. His heart was very terrified. He closed his eyes, shouted, recklessly charged forward with his fire stick, only wishing to get as far from the tentacles as possible.

However, under the pressure of wanting to escape, the speed of the fire stick raised greatly, but the wall on the other hand is not so nice. After three yards, “boom”, he hitted on the wall again.

But this time was a bit different. The wall seemed a little weak. Under the crush, he crushed through the wall. Some light came out, with heating wave rolling on him.

Shaw Danon was surprised. Before he could pull himself back together (Actually he can not pull himself back together, even if his head is harder, the protection of the esper is stronger, this crush is still going to make him dizzy all over), he landed on a narrow tunnel, and rolled downward.

This rolling lasted for period of time. On his way, under the obscure, Shaw Danon felt he was surrounded by bright red light, at the same time he could also feel the burning hot wave. Everywhere on the ground where he can touch is burning. He hitted his wound several times, so painful that stars were dancing before his eyes.

But in truth, Shaw Danon can hold out until now, he is probably more like a stone compare to Onara who is still fighting at the outside of the cave.

Finally, his rolling body stopped. His lip was bleeding, his face was covered with wounds, almost about to fall apart. He moaned and slowly lifted his head.

And then, he was stunned.

Before his eyes, it was a giant underground grotto. But the difference is, everywhere is heated bright red lava, formed a boiling lake, filled entire bottom of the cave. On the surface of the lake, heated bubble often rose, then pop. At the more fierce spot, the hot magma shot into mid-air like tide. The blazing flame of the lava has shone the large cave into a bright red world.

As for Shaw Danon himself, he is on a platform above the lava lake. Behind him is the path where he rolled from. Before him, at the end of the platform where it is so hot that can not be bear, there is an oval shape nest with a white fox quietly lying there.

A white, large fox!

Its eyes were closed, like sleeping peacefully. Its body curled quietly.

Very, beautiful!

Shaw Danon slowly stood up, held his breath and slowly walking toward it.

Slowly, step by step, walking toward it.

The heat wave became hotter, burned Shaw Danon's face bright red. But he did not feel it. In his large, wide opened eyes, there is only the pretty, beautiful, gentle, quiet, fox, and the place behind it.

There, within the beautiful fur, its tails quietly curled.

Small and beautiful fur, at the place where it branched out but also harmony, there are total of six tails.

-End of Part 5

Chapter 55 Death of the Devil

The heated wave filled the burning underground cave, the bright red lava rolling under the platform, often letting out popping sound.

Shaw Danon increasingly felt his breathing became more difficult. The air that was inhaled into his lungs is burning. Any step he took is like walking on fire. However, the six-tails before him, still quietly lying there, seemed like quite enjoying it.

He stood still, watching. Hesitated for a moment, then went forward, and subconsciously holding his fire stick tightly at the same time.

The platform was long and narrow, extend deep above the lava lake. As Shaw Danon was walking closer, the surrounding temperature was hotter, almost to the degree that no one can bear it.

Maybe because of the blazing heat or other reason, Shaw Danon's throat was extremely dry. But he did not get distracted, the pair of eyes fixed on that fox.

He stopped when he was three steps away from the fox.

Since the distant is closer, he can see it clearly now. He realized it is indeed a beautiful fox. Pure white fur all over, especially in this burning hell place, it was white as snow. Not to mention about a single different fur, it does not even have any mark of burnt.

Only, its eyes were closer. They frowned as if there was a bit of pain hanging between its eyebrows.

Shaw Danon looking at it, countless of ideas passed through his brain like lighting. From Laguna Collective to now, all he heard of was the “three-tails fox spirit” being a threat. But the fox before him was clearly different than the three-tails fox spirit that he just battled earlier.

He could hazily remember, when he was young Xavion had told him, the world is so large that nothing there can not be. There are a lot of graceful mountains and rivers, and also many devils and monsters. There is a legend said, foxes are intelligent within the beasts. Many cultivated into devils. And within the race of fox, there is a branch that has the most spiritual power. And there is a special thing about them, the higher the cultivation, the more tails they get.

Seeing the six-tails fox before him, his heart was stunned.

Then at this moment, the six-tails fox before his eyes, it sudden awoke from deep sleep. Its tails and head moved.

After that, it opened its eyes.

In its dark and deep pupils, reflecting the figure of a nervous young man.

Shaw Danon was surprised and took a step back, putted the fire stick in front of his chest, prepared. But the six-tails white fox was only looking at him, his body still lay on that bluestone, have no intention to fight.

A person and a fox, facing each other like this. There was no sound around them, only the boiling sound thousands years old lava if there is any sound, but it seemed really far away.

The air was still blazing, floating between the human and the fox.

“Youngster.” Low, with some tireness sound, came out from the fox’s mouth, breaking the silent: “What are you doing here?”

Shaw Danon could figure that the fox is suffering from illness, that’s why its voice is so weak. But he did not let down his guard, he said: “You devils are harming the world. I, as a disciple of the side of good, am going to the rip of the harm for the sake of the people.”

The six-tails white fox looked at him, its eyes were shining, did not get mad nor did it sneer. It only looked at him lightly, after a moment, it removed its sight, said calmly: “Good ambition!”

Shaw Danon startled, then frowned and shouted: “Don’t give me this, stand up, I.....”

“You are going to kill me?” The six-tails white fox suddenly cut in, calmly asked.

Shaw Danon did not expect it will ask him directly. He was startled, then immediately realized, said: “You fox spirits are harming the world, causing people to suffer. I kill you is only to bring the divine justice!”

The six-tails white fox turned its head to the side, with a bit of disdain, also a bit of desolation, it said: “Youngster, I see that you are less than twenty right?”

Shaw Danon snorted: “So what, I am still going to slay the devils.”

The six-tails white fox lowered its head, suddenly with some exclamation, it said: “Yeah! You human beings are really gifted at cultivation. We fox’s thousand years of hard working cultivation, the good potential human only require several hundreds years to surpass us, like that Shanguan old man.....” Then he suddenly stopped, gave a bitter smile, looking at Shaw Danon, it said slowly: “Youngster, your age is so young, how do you know we fox race is harming the world, causing people to suffer?”

Shaw Danon laughed coldly: “Your companion three-tails fox spirit harrassed the residents of Laguna Collective all days. Not only robbing countless of livestocks, but also takes people’s life. Isn’t that harming the world, causing the people to suffer?”

Six-tails white fox pondered for a moment, said: “Correct, I heard about this from her. Indeed like you said, three days ago she went to Laguna Collective. That father and son dared to resist. My illness was bad that day, she was in a bad mood, so she killed the two reckless foolish human.”

Shaw Danon said angrily: “Then what do you still want to say?”

The six-tails white fox said lightly: “You misunderstood. I am not arguing with you. If I was her that day, I will still kill them.”

Shaw Danon was furious, he pointed and said: “And you dare to say it is not harming the world, causing the people to suffer, die devil!” The green light of the fire stick brightened, was about to shoot through the air.

The six-tails white fox had no intention to move, still lying there. It said lightly: “The world you spoke of, what does that means?”

Shaw Danon was startled. His mind was racing. Suddenly, looking at the six-tails white fox, listening to its quiet words, he strangely recalled Wan Reng Wang.

Faintly, there was a sound calling from the depth of his heart.

The radiance of the fire stick was dimmed gradually. However, the voice of the six-tails white fox still continued: “In your eyes, the so-called world is the place where you human as the boss? Everything of this world is for you human to take. If there is any resistance, then that becomes harming the world, causing people to suffer; then that becomes unforgivable, deserve to die, right?”

Shaw Danon looked at the fox. He pondered and not speaking. He did not know why, why the three-tails fox spirit and that six-tails white fox appeared to like to talk to him. What he did not understand even more is that, why such words that are challenging his belief have such great impact in his mind?

“But, do you know how other races feel? Those beasts that were killed, eaten

by you human, how do they feel? But in the end, it is just because you human are strong, beasts have no ability to resist, only left with being killed.” The white fox’s voice continued calmly: “Since that is the case, we foxes are a bit stronger than you human, killed some of you, what’s wrong with that? This world is the strong lives, and the weak dies anyway.” It smiled, watched Shaw Danon, said: “What do you say?”

Shaw Danon glared at it, bit his lips, not saying anything.

“Also, even within the human, isn’t it the same? You cultivators, still can’t achieve immortality even now, but already fighting each others. The so-called Good and Evil, actually is just what you say makes it that way. It is nothing more than just winners are the right, losers are the wrong.”

Then it smiled again, watched Shaw Danon, repeated: “What do you say?”

Shaw Danon closed his eyes, lifted its head, and took a deep breath. The white fox did not speak, seemed like it got tired after saying that much.

Long while.

“What do you want me to say?” Shaw Danon suddenly said.

The white fox looked at him, found that he has already opened his eyes. The young man’s complicated and yet bright eyes were looking at it.

“Every single one of you are telling me the same thing.” Shaw Danon said coldly: “It is like it is wrong that I am in the Righteous, and you killing people causing chaos are right. You evil heretics, beside poisoning people’s mind, what else can you do?”

White fox suddenly frowned, eyes shining, it said: “What, there are other people telling you the similar thing?”

Shaw Danon did not answer, but the mystic light of the fire stick has brightened up again, shone on his face. His voice issued: “Devil, come!”

The ghostly green light covered the blazing red light, like a mountain falling upon it.

The six-tails white fox was watching the surpressing green light. In such blazing lava place, there was a bit of chill, caused it to shiver.

At this moment, Shaw Danon suddenly heard a quick whistle of wind coming from behind, the tunnel where he fell.

The sound was like roaring of the beast, also like hoof of thousands cavarlies, with great momentum before he could see what it is. Shaw Danon was surprised, but not dare to lower his guard at the six-tails white fox, he retrieved the fire stick, putted it in front of his chest, getting ready.

And at the place a bit farther away, the six-tails white fox also frowned, looking at the tunnel.

Shortly after, Shaw Danon felt the blazing wave of heat coming from the

tunnel. Beathing became even more difficult, giving him the feeling of being cooked in this lava cave.

As he was in the stat of confused and surprised, the noise was getting closer, the momentum was getting stronger. After a moment, the dark tunnel glared with radiance before his eyes. A giant fire dragon came out from the narrow tunnel. After it came out from the cave, the fire dragon roared, rose into the air, showing its fangs and claws. A white figure came down from the dragon's head. It was the bewitching three-tails fox spirit.

She landed before the six-tails white fox, there was worry on her face. There were several places that were teared and dirty on her clean clothes. Seemed like she suffered some disadvantage in the battle.

Shaw Danon was startled, rooted on the ground, did not go forward. His attention was attracted by giant fire dragon in the air. The fire dragon was covered with burning flame, even its eyes were two balls of fire.

The fire dragon's momentum became more fierce in this underground lava cave. After a dragon roar, the fire dragon charged down.

Shaw Danon was surprised, immediately stepped back, but the fire dragon only passed by him. Within the wave of heat, the fire dragon roared and drilled into the lava lake, disappeared. A moment later it came out, comfortably swimming in this hot terrifying lake.

The quiet voice of the three-tails fox spirit came: "Brother, are you all right?"

The six-tails white fox smiled, said lightly: "This young mister of the side of

Good haven't do anything to this dying fox yet!"

Shaw Danon flushed, then frowned. From what the six-tails white fox said, seemed like it was about to die from illness.

There was sadness on three-tails fox spirit's face, she said quietly: "Brother, beside the two people who came with that young man, there are also two from Incense Valley."

Six-tails white fox's body shivered, turned to her, said: "Is it the Shangguan old man?"

The three-tails fox spirit shook her head: "No, it is the disciples from the younger generation, but their cultivation is quite deep. I-I am not their opponent....."

The six-tails white fox startled, sighed: "Alas! You are only three hundreds years of cultivation. Even with Inferno Mirror, how can you afford any resistance against the outstanding disciples of those famous factions. Let it be."

On the bewitching face of the three-tails fox spirit, two lines of tear slipped off: "But, brother, now this 'Dark Drake Cave' has no other way out. The path above has sealed off by four of them. Now leaving with 'Giant Black Leech' to manage to hold them off. But their espers are too powerful, I am afraid they will be here within a stick of incense of time (Note 1). What should we-we do?"

The six-tails white fox looked at her, lifted its forelimb with difficulty, trying to grab her. But when it raised into mid-air, it dropped. He gasped for air, then said: "Can't you see? Even if they did not come, I won't last for long."

The tear of the three-tails fox spirit dropped on the pure snow white fur of the white fox.

The white fox's voice was very calm: "For three hundreds years, I flee from place to place, always living in the life of shadow, fearing the people of Incense Valley will hunt me down, and also need to suffer the 'Lunar Ice Stinger's ice poison. But now, I finally unable to escape."

Three-tails fox spirit said sadly: "Brother, don't say it. I am going to bring you out of here. We still have the Inferno Mirror. With your cultivation, we certainly can....."

The white fox slowly shook its head, said quietly: "My cultivation foundation of thousand years has been damaged little by little by the ice poison of the Lunar Ice Stinger for this three thousands years. Now my body is completely frozen, chill within the marrow, I already can't."

Three-tails fox spirit shivered, could not say anything.

The white fox lifted its head, hesitated for a moment, then said: "I really can't, but you can not die. You have the Inferno Mirror with you. When they come into the tunnel, summon the fire dragon and charge against them. They will be surprised and probably unable to stop you. You-you will....."

It suddenly stopped talking. Three-tails fox spirit slowly stood up before it, putted her hand in her clothes and took out an esper with red threads on both sides. It was the Inferno Mirror.

In this burning lava cave, the Inferno Mirror shone with red. And the ancient fire totem at the center, was about to burn and surge out.

Three-tails fox spirit, the bewitching lady in Shaw Danon's eyes, was staring at the Inferno Mirror in her hands. Soon after, a drop of tear quietly fell on the Inferno Mirror. After a moment, it turned into white smoke, evaporated into the air.

So, foxes also have tear?

So, devils also have love?

Shaw Danon was stunned and rooted.

"Three hundreds years, brother." She said quietly, sorrowly: "Total of three hundreds years. When I had a little achieve in cultivation and met you at 'Fox Hill', from that time on, I followed you. To the edge of the world, to the dry wasteland, living in a dark life, living in a life that need to worry about being hunted by people.

But, I have never regret....."

Shaw Danon slowly took a few steps, stood behind them. Confusion strangely rose in his heart. When he heard of the term Fox Hill, his heart moved, it sounds familiar, but he could not recall what that is.

The bewitching lady, her eyes was filled with tear: "But today, why-why are you telling me to leave?"

The white fox lowered its head. Shaw Danon noticed its body was trembling, maybe due to coldness, or its heart was moved.

“Brother!”

The bewitching lady suddenly shouted. The sound was so sad and shrill. The white fox lifted its head. Shaw Danon was also surprised by her.

The weird looking Inferno Mirror was placed softly by her on her gentle undulating breast, glowing with soft light.

The white fox’s entire body was trembling, with a sudden burst of unknown strength, it lifted half of its body up, screamed: “No…….”

“Bang!”

A bang, just like hitting on Shaw Danon’s heart. He stood behind that bewitching lady, watching light of the Inferno Mirror came out from her soft back.

A bit, a drop, formed into a blazing beam, tranfixed through her gentle body.

The surrounding world, all the sound, at that instant, has suddenly became far away.

...

All those rage, all those presistent, were slowly gone.

In that young man's eyes, there was only the bright red blood that came out from the gentle beautiful body, dropped on the ground, turned into a bright red flower, then slowly penerated into the stones.

The blood red ground, will never lose its color!

She fell powerlessly, fell before the white fox. Hoarse cry came out from the white fox's mouth. Shaw Danon could not understand what it is trying to say. The white fox screamed, with its body trembling, it struggled to climb forward, climb to the weak, dying body not far away from it. But its body was so weak that it could only achieve a little after struggling for long time.

Shaw Danon suddenly rushed forward.

He rushed forward, at this moment, he forgot everything.

He carefully carried the seriously injured body of the bewitching lady, putted her in front of the white fox. Then he quietly stepped back, standing before them.

And at this moment, whistle came out again from the tunnel at far. After a loud noise, a thing fell out from the tunnel. Black and dry. Shaw Danon recongized it was part of the tentacle that trapped him.

Then he turned around, watching the two fox spirits.

The white fox grabbed the bewitching lady, its body was shaking hard. Its once beautiful fur quickly withered in a noticable speed.

“You.....” Its voice was hoarsed, seemed like saying every word is tearing its heart.

The bewitching lady, also the so-called three-tails fox spirit, her face was pale like paper, without single color of blood. However, it was still gentle, seemed like the fear of death, the pain of her chest could not interfere her.

Until now, she was still looking at the white fox gently.

“Brother, now, you can not tell me to go away!”

The white fox was choked that it could not speak.

She lifted her hand, tried to touch him. But when it dropped after extended half way. Her blood had dyed the white fox’s chest.

“Brother, you and I, will be.....together.....”

She closed her eyes, and will never be opened ever again.

The entire world has quiet down.

Note 1: Chinese people often use relative timing term such as a stick of incense, a pot of tea, a cup of wine for telling the time. It means the time that takes one stick of incense to burn out, or a pot of tea, cup of wine to cool down.

Chapter 56 Die Together

The Inferno Mirror on her chest slowly settled down. All the glow began to disappear. Shaw Danon suddenly discovered, the giant fire dragon was also gone.

Really, he did not know how long the time have past.....

He was rooted on the ground. Thousands of thoughts were shaking in his mind. But, he still felt his brain was empty.

The six-tails white fox silenced for a while, then slowly lifted its head, told Shaw Danon: "Youngster, come over here."

Shaw Danon walked slowly to him. Behind him, in the tunnel, the screaming of the wind was getting louder!

The six-tails white fox was still holding the unconscious body, his face however, has turned calm, even his voice was peaceful as water: "Can you do me a favor?"

Shaw Danon was quiet for a moment, then asked: "What?"

The white fox looked at the lady in his arms, he said quietly: "Throw both of us into the lava below!"

Shaw Danon abruptly raised his head, took a step backward.

The white fox looked at him, did not say anything.

Shaw Danon's mouth opened, wanted to say something, but not a word was able to come out from his mouth. He felt his eyes suddenly felt like burning by fire. They were heated.

He nodded hard.

The white fox smiled, holding the lady in his arms tightly.

One step, two steps, Shaw Danon was slowly carrying the two embraced foxes to the end of the platform.

The raging heated air was roaring under his feet.

Finally, he reached the end, standing on the edge between life and death.

The white fox's face suddenly had become better. He lifted his head, looked at Shaw Danon.

No one could see Shaw Danon's expression at this moment.

Then it suddenly smiled, seemed like all resentments are forgotten, like an aged senior looking at a young man.

"Young man, why being like this?"

Shaw Danon did not say anything.

The white fox lightly picked up the Inferno Mirror on the girl's chest, using its last strength, it pulled up Shaw Danon's right sleeve, tied the Inferno Mirror on his arm with the red threads.

"This is a divine artifact that was exchanged with countless of life from the fox race, now give to you as memento!" It smiled, its body was shaking hard again, black blood also came out from its mouth: "However, do not let anyone see it....."

His voice, finally, also fell.

Shaw Danon bit his lip, took a deep breath, then letted go.

At far, following a huge boom, Bilu and Onara, and Li Su and Yanon of Incense Valley shot out from the tunnel in the form of light¹ and landed on the platform. They arrived just in time and saw Shaw Danon dropped the two foxes into the magma.

Shaw Danon stood on the edge of the platform, did not notice anything

behind him, only staring at the falling figures in the air.

The wind came by and fluttered his lapel.

A soft light flashed, the graceful lady lost her human clothes, showed the true form as a beautiful three-tails fox.

The two lifeless but yet beautiful foxes, embraced together, fell in the air. Accompany with a low noise, they sunk into the lava, disappeared.

Bilu was a bit worried. She stepped forth and shouted: “Xiao Fan.....”

But that young man was like did not hear anything, but rooted on the ground.

※ ※ ※

They came out from the drake cave, then the black stones cave, finally returned above the earth. At this time, the sky already turned morning.

Everyone letted out a long sigh, including Li Su and Yanon. Both of them also looked tired. It was understandable that the “Giant Black Leech” (Note 1) defeated by four of them was not easy.

Only Shaw Danon remained silent.

Bilu asked him softly, but Shaw Danon only shook his head.

Li Su came, said to Shaw Danon: “So Zhang Shidi was able to escape from the disaster under the Forsaken Abyss, this really worth celebrating.”

Shaw Danon forced a smile, nodded in return: “Thank you Li Shixiong.”

Yanon also came. Her face was more kind than Li Su’s, she smiled: “Zhang Shixiong, you have deep bond with fortune, able survive such disaster is destined to have good fortune in future.” Then she suddenly smiled: “By the way, because they couldn’t find you under Forsaken Abyss, those from your faction were really worry, especially your Lu Shijie.....”

Shaw Danon’s heart moved, lifted his head and looked at Yanon. But she glanced at Li Su with a weird smile.

Li Su felt the eyes from Yanon, he gave a rare smile, but there was a light flashed in his eyes, he nodded slowly: “Indeed, your faction mates were very worry about you, you better hurry return and report that you are safe!”

Shaw Danon was moved, he bowed: “Thank you two of you.”

Yanon smiled in return, caught a glimpse of the green dress girl behind Shaw Danon. She was pretty, but there was a dark shadow on her face at this moment.

It immediately caught Yanon’s attention. She took a few looks at Bilu, then asked Shaw Danon: “Zhang Shixiong, those two are.....”

Shaw Danon turned around, said: “Oh, this is Onara, disciple of the Herald of Valor from the righteous faction ‘Vajra’.”

Then he said to Onara: “Brother Shi, these two are Li Su Shixiong and Yanon Shijie of Incense Valley.”

Onara immediately turned solemn. In the cultivators’ eyes, Incense’s reputation is nowhere below the well known Jadeon. He immediately saluted: “Greeting to two of you.”

Li Su and Yanon bowed in return. Yanon smiled: “Brother Shi’s cultivation is very high!”

Onara blushed, but Onara was a straightforward person, pride showed on his face. He smiled: “You flattered me.”

Yanon smiled and turned around, took a glance at Bilu, asked Shaw Danon: “And that lady is?”

Shaw Danon couldn’t speak. Bilu’s eyes turned cold.

Onara saw that they did not say anything, he smiled: “This is Miss Bilu, she is brother Zhang’s friend, very deeply cultivated.”

Li Su glanced at Bilu, seeing she has no intention to greet, he turned his head away. But Yanon seemed very concerned about Bilu, she smiled: “Ah! So it is Miss Bilu, which faction do you come from?”

Bilu took a glance at Shaw Danon, but he remained quiet, she suddenly gave a cold laugh: “I have no faction, born to be alone. I helped a person once, but was abandoned by him!”

Shaw Danon frowned. Yanon looked at her, smiling.

Then Li Su in front coughed, turned to Shaw Danon: “Zhang Shidi, I have a thing to ask you.”

Shaw Danon did not delay, said: “Li Shixiong, please ask.”

Li Su looked at him, said slowly: “Zhang Shidi is the first to enter the drake cave, did you saw a jade ring esper, with a fire totem in the center and red stings on both side, inside the cave or with the white fox?”

Shaw Danon’s heart jumped. Onara already shouted out: “Yes! Yes! Last night when we were battling with three-tails fox spirit, she used that esper.”

Hope arose on Li Su and Yanon’s face. But Yanon’s mind was more careful, after a thought, she asked Li Su: “But why last night when we went down there, the three-tails fox spirit did not summon Inferno Mirror?”

Li Su said lightly: “She used the Inferno Mirror to summon the fire dragon to resist us, then the Inferno Mirror must be with her.”

Yanon pondered and nodded. Li Su turned to Shaw Danon, said: “Zhang Shidi, Inferno Mirror is an important treasure of my faction. Did you saw it?”

Everyone's eyes were on Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon took a deep breath, quiet for a moment, then said: "No."

Li Su startled and frowned.

Yanon's eyes wandered around on Shaw Danon, pondered and asked: "What? When Zhang Shixiong battled with the 'three-tails fox spirit and that 'six-tails fox demon', they did not use Inferno Mirror?"

Shaw Danon quiet for another moment, said: "Last night I accidentally entered the drake cave and discovered that white fox, which is the six-tails fox demon you talked about, was already badly ill, about to die. Later when the three-tails fox spirit came in, probably because fighting with you four, her vigor was severely injured. I did not use much power to de-defeat them."

Disappointment immediately appeared on Yanon and Li Su's face. Yanon turned to Li Su. Li Su said lightly: "Before we came out from the drake cave, I already carefully searched through the place, there was no sign of Inferno Mirror, I am afraid it got thrown into the lava along with them."

Yanon sighed, then said: "Anyway, Li Shixiong, we eliminated the remaining fox spirits, at least we have something to report to our faction."

Li Su nodded, then turned around, folded his hands to Shaw Danon and others: "Since this is the case, Shimei and I will need to return to Incense Valley to report, we shall leave first."

Shaw Danon and Onara quickly said: "Please."

Bilu's face was still dark, standing on the side, not moving.

Li Su nodded, said to Yanon: "Shimei, lets go!"

Yanon smiled and nodded, but suddenly recalled something, and told Shaw Danon: "Zhang Shixiong, recently there was movement of the Felkin, Jadeon has gathered other Righteous cultivators at East Sea's Billows Hill. I heard your master's house also went there, why don't you go there and reunion with them?"

Shaw Danon was surprised, then cheer appeared on his face: "Really? They went to Billows Hill! I will immediately head there."

Yanon smiled and nodded: "That's good. Li Shixiong and I may also go there after we report to our faction, may we see each other again!"

Then she turned, and took a few steps with Li Su, but Yanon suddenly turned around again, this time she smiled to Bilu: "Miss Bilu, the golden bell on your waist is very pretty."

Bilu was surprised. The golden bell on her waist was the "Lupin Bell" left by Lady Jingling that she found while she was trapped inside the Blooddrop Cave with Shaw Danon.

It was suddenly mentioned by Yanon, she almost thought her identity was saw through by this gentle female disciple of Incense.

But Yanon only said this like it was nothing. She smiled then left together with Li Su.

Bilu frowned, and was still surprised. Then she suddenly felt Shaw Danon was looking at her.

The three people left the forest surrounding the Dark Drake Cave. On their way, they came across the Lunar Well from last night. Bilu recalled the three-tails fox spirit had kept asking Shaw Danon about what did he saw in the well, she also asked him. Shaw Danon was first startled, but did not answer, only shook his head.

Anger rose in Bilu's heart, she did not ask him again, but she was very curious, so she walked to it. She took a look into the ancient well. The deep, clear water was reflecting her beautiful face. But there was nothing strange about it, she did not put it into her heart.

They came out from the forest, returned to Laguna Collective. The chief and other people were very anxious. Once they appeared, the people immediately surrounded them.

When they heard Onara announced that the devil was gone, from today on everyone could have a peaceful life, everyone cheered and clapped happily.

Shaw Danon stood at the side, watching the cheering crowd. His mind was confused, the figures of the two foxes reappeared before his eyes.

When Li Su asked him about the Inferno Mirror, he knew the thing he was looking for is tied on his arm, but his brain recalled what the white fox said.

In truth, he only met the six-tails fox demon for one night, there was totally

no friendship. But seeing the three-tails fox spirit committed suicide with a determined mind, and the six-tails fox demon carried her and fell into the magma together, the soul touching scene was still remained before his eyes.

In deep of his heart, he felt very friendly to that fox spirit, so he oddly said he did not know, concealed it from Li Su,

Onara managed to escape from the crowd and gave him a look. Shaw Danon and Bilu looked what was behind Onara. They were the smiling residents that were about to surround them.

Onara turned and said to the crowd: “Everyone, listen to me. This thing is over, we also need to continue our cultivation practice. Today we will say farewell here. As for the gift like silvers, I and my two companions appreciate it. But money is just some item, it has no use. Everyone please return!”

Then he quicken his pace, pulled Shaw Danon, whispered: “Hurry.”

The people saw the three of them turned into three lights, then disappeared. Uproar rose. They discussed for a while, then dispersed.

But after the crowd dispersed, an old and a young came out from the corner of the street, watching the place where the three people had disappeared. They were the fortune-teller Tanis Ka and his granddaughter Tonni.

Tanis Ka took a few glances at that direction, seeing there was no one nearby, he whispered to Tonni: “Can’t imagine that even with the Inferno Mirror at

hand, the three-tails fox spirit is still eliminated by them.”

Tonni was eating her newly bought lollipop, she said: “If that esper really is as powerful as you said, why it still happen to three-tails fox spirit? I think that Inferno Mirror is just a figure without actual power.”

Tanis Ka frowned: “Inferno Mirror is ancient deity artifact, there is no doubt in its power. I think that it is most likely because the cultivation of the three-tails fox spirit is not enough to release the full strength of the Inferno Mirror. And with the two powerful people from Incense Valley last night, she is hard to escape her fate!”

Tonni glanced at him: “Who do you think that got the Inferno Mirror?”

Tanis Ka shrugged: “Most likely being retrieved by the two Incense disciples. Anyway, alas! I was hoping to go in there and see if there are anything good, didn’t expect.....”

Tonni spit out a lollipop’s nut, said: “Where are we going, grandpa?”

Tanis Ka pondered for a moment, said: “I heard the Good and Evil are gathering at East Sea, don’t know why. From the direction of where the three people are going to, it is east. Perhaps we should go there, too!”

Tonni laughed: “Let us go then! Things are all the same no matter where we go.”

※ ※ ※

After Shaw Danon and others left, Laguna Collective returned to peace. In the Dark Drake Cave, there was no longer any devil come out and harm people. But the strange thing is, soon later, there are many weird beasts that they have never seen before in the forest outside of the Dark Drake Cave.

For the following days, if they accidentally enter the forest, nine out of ten will never come out. But those weird beasts have a special behavior. They will never leave the forest. After the residents of the Laguna Collective discovered this, no one ever entered the forest again.

As the time past, this place became desolated. There was no one will ever remember what had happened inside the forest.

After Shaw Danon and others left, the residents of Laguna Collective built a temple at the east of the town, worshiping three deities. The center one was large and strong like a vajra. At the side there were a boy and a girl. The girl was pretty, but the boy was weird. He hand was holding a fire stick.

※ ※ ※

As the age past, the people of the later generation already forgot what happened today, but the temple of Laguna Collective was crowded by worshippers. Many people came investigate but could not tell which deities are they, so came up with the answer that they are the earth gods of the Laguna Collective despite they do not look like one.

Perhaps they absorbed many spiritual power from the incense, according to the people, the deities in this temple will always answer requests. After its reputation grow, people from nearby villages and towns also came worship.

Some wish for money, some wish for job, even pregnant women came here worship Onara and others for a male child.

If the three of them know about this, how will they feel?

※ ※ ※

《Shenmo Ziyi - Yasho》—Giant Black Leech: Ancient beast, living in dark cave. Large body, ten yards high, has tentacles with several yards long, eat meat, eat everything nearby it, without bones left behind.

Chapter 57 Chang He

After Shaw Danon, Bilu and Onara left Laguna Collective, they flew to the east, and landed on the ground after flying for a distant.

Onara asked Shaw Danon: “Brother Zhang, where are you prepare to go?”

Shaw Danon pondered for a moment, said: “Since Yanon Shijie of Incense Valley said my master went to East Sea Billow Hill, I need to head there to see them. What about you?”

Onara thought for a moment, said: “Then I should also head there! Master told me to travel around the world, practice and leave good deed. This time the remaining Felkin is about to rise another wave of chaos, I should go there and help.”

“Hmph!” Suddenly, there was a cold laughter. Bilu snorted, said coldly: “Good ambition, good righteousness, but by that time don’t fail to defeat the Felkin and get yourself defeated by them instead.”

Onara was stunned, couldn’t say anything and turned to Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon was embarrassed, turned to Bilu, he also couldn’t say anything.

Bilu laughed coldly: “What are you looking me for?”

Shaw Danon and Onara exchanged a look. Shaw Danon was a bit better, he had been a while with Bilu and understood her temper. And he also knew Bilu’s identity, so he didn’t care about it.

But Onara is a straight forward man. He was being talked back by Bilu, but it was embarrassing to be mad at a pretty, young girl, so all he could do was holding the anger in his heart. His master had warned him before he left, it is a must to stay away from women since they are the most irrational thing in the world, especially the beautiful young girl. Today he came across this situation, he realized his master really is wise.

Shaw Danon glanced at Onara. Seeing he was dumbfounded, Shaw Danon felt a little sorry. How can he know that guy was actually admiring and praising his master’s wisdom in his heart for the brilliant discussion of the women in this world, instead he thought Onara was angry at Bilu.

He turned around, looked at Bilu, seeing her face was still cold, he sighed: “Where are you planning to go?”

Bilu glanced at him, snorted: “Not your business!”

Shaw Danon was being talked back by her, he couldn’t speak, but his heart wasn’t mad about it. He knew he is heading to East Sea Billows Hill, that means he will become her enemy. It is normal that she is mad. Onara arrived behind Shaw Danon, his eyes were filled with passion, he patted softly on Shaw Danon’s shoulders, with a “I understand how you feel” look.

Shaw Danon looked at him, opened his mouth but not a word was able to come out. The situation was embarrassing, he has reason but can not tell, this is depressing.

At the end of the day, Shaw Danon and Onara still couldn't get the answer of where she is going to go from Bilu. Actually they did not dare to ask. They just walked to the east, with Bilu walking in front of them.

On their way, her mood was still not well, kept on speaking cold words against their ears. Later, Shaw Danon and Onara were a bit scare of her. When two of them were talking cheerfully, Bilu turned and glared at them, immediately caused them to lower their voice or quiet for a while.

They walked like this for two days. The three of them walked to the east, arrived at a large city called "Chang He".

They went into the city, Onara and Shaw Danon spread up and asked the people. They found out Chang He was a city located most near the East Sea. From here, continue walking east for another four hundreds miles will be the Shore of East Sea.

The three walked into Chang He, seeing the clothing of the residents of the East Sea was not much different than the Central Plain. This place is a important of the East Sea region, many traveling merchants rest here. But these days, there are a lot of cultivators in the city. As they were talking on the street, they could see many people were wearing the clothing of different factions. Are they all heading to Billows Hill?

Shaw Danon and Onara discussed and decided they should find a small inn

and rest for the night. Tomorrow morning, they will set out to Billow Hill. Both of them agreed, then they glanced at Bilu. When they were talking, they purposely raised their voice. They were thinking Bilu should be able to hear them completely since she is standing next to them.

But Bilu did not seem to know anything. She stood there emotionlessly, her eyes were looking at the traveling people on the street. She did not respond to them. Frustrated, Shaw Danon walked to her and asked: “Miss Bilu, what do you think about it?”

Bilu shook, more like surprised. Her gaze moved away from the street.

Shaw Danon noticed she frowned and pondered, it did not seem she was purposely ignoring him, more like she saw something confusing. He was curious: “What is it?”

Bilu’s gaze turned to far away again. Shaw Danon followed her eyes, but only saw the traveling people, many were wearing weird clothing, they were probably cultivators. But he can not find out what was Bilu looking at.

Bilu quiet for a moment, turned back and said: “What were you asking?”

Shaw Danon carefully told her about spending a night in a small inn, Seeing Bilu did not answer, while Onara was standing at far, Shaw Danon lowered his voice: “What are y-you planning to do? There is no way I can bring you to see my master! There are a lot of righteous cultivators in Chang He, it will be dangerous if your identity got exposed!”

Bilu looked at him, asked: “You are worrying about my personally safety, or

worrying that I will be your burden?”

Shaw Danon startled. He lifted his eyes and looked at Bilu, seeing her watery bright eyes were looking at him, his heart jumped.

Bilu smiled and walked away. Onara came, glanced at Bilu, then asked Shaw Danon: “Brother Zhange, what did Miss Bilu say?”

Before Shaw Danon answered, Bilu already turned around, showed a rare smile, said: “Didn’t you say we are going stay in an inn? Why not moving?”

Shaw Danon and Onara startled, looked at each other. Admiration appeared on Onara face, he gave Shaw Danon a thumb, said: “Brother Zhang, you really have the ability in you, with just a few words you are able to make our lady that happy!”

Shaw Danon was being praised by Onara for no reason. He was about to defend himself, but did not know where should he start, so he was only walking with Onara behind Bilu. But there was already a thought in his mind, is he getting too involve with this Felkin girl?

Base on Shaw Danon and Onara’s idea, all they need is to find a small inn to rest for a night. But as they were walking, the two saw Bilu entered directly into a tavern name “Hai Yun Lou”. This tavern is at least ten times larger than the “small inn” they had expected.

Shaw Danon and Onara exchanged a look. But since Bilu entered it, all they could do is to follow.

Shaw Danon whispered at Onara: “Brother Shi, do you have enough money? I only have four silvers.....”

Then Shaw Danon suddenly stopped he remembered the remaining four silvers were scammed by Tanis Ka the fortune-teller.

Onara didn’t notice Shaw Danon’s expression, he said bitterly: “I am a little better than you, only few silvers more than you.” He paused, then whispered: “Base on the furnishings here, this place need at least thirty or forty silvers.....”

At this moment, Bilu already arrived in front of counter of the manager. The manager lifted his head, smile piled up on his face, said: “Mistress, you need a stay?”

“Ding”, a small gold ingot was tossed on the counter before the manager. It worth at least a hundred silvers. The managers eyes were rounded from the smile, he said: “Mistress please rest assured. This is an experienced tavern, it will make sure you feel like home here, satisfy when you leave.....”

Bilu cut his word, said: “Give me a upper class room, need to be clean.”

The manager laughed politely: “Of’course, of’course.”

Bilu took a gaze at her back, said: “Then find another room for these two!”

The manager glanced at Shaw Danon and Onara, then turned to Bilu, smiled: “Are those two also.....”

Bilu snorted: “A storage room is good enough for them.”

The manager was muted.

Shaw Danon and Onara were also muted.

Finished, the manager called the workers and treated Bilu like a princess. As for Shaw Danon and Onara, the manager did not actually putted them in the storage house, he putted them in a normal room.

Shaw Danon and Onara did not mind about it. They are not spoiled and they understand Bilu’s spoilt temper.

After three of them left, the tavern returned to quiet. People traveled on the busy street. The clouds changed in the sky. As dusk drew closer, an old and a young entered. The old was holding a cloth banner with the writing “Immortal Guidance”. The young is a little girl, eating a lollipop.

They are Tanis Ka and his granddaughter Tonni.

Tanis Ka looked around, Tonni was also taking a look at the surrounding. Seeing the magnificent decoration, she gasped, whispered: “Grandpa, did you head to a wrong way?”

Pride rose on Tanis Ka’s face, he said: “You think your grandpa really is that

useless over so many years?”

Tonni was curious: “So it is not?”

Tanis Ka glared at her, said: “Just wait.”

Then, he turned and found the manager was doing calculation at his counter, he quickly took Tonni to the counter.

The manager noticed there is someone coming toward him, he raised his head, and was about to greet, but he was startled and surprised.

Tanis Ka smiled, his celestial manner was very similar to the high cultivators, he said: “Manager Wang, you still remember me?”

The Manager Wang exclaimed, and ran to him from behind the counter. His face was filled with respect and delightful surprise. Tonni was stunned by his reaction. He said: “Ah! It is you the immortal senior! How come you are here? Alas! Th-th-this is thirty-years we haven’t see each other! I always missed you!”

Tanis Ka smiled, with supreme temperament he cleaned the dust off from his clothes, smiled lightly he said: “I am not a mortal. These years I traveled around the world, to many famous mountains and wonderlands, visit celestial beings, absorb the spirit of heaven and earth, when can I have time to come?”

Tonni fell on the ground.

But Manager Wang believed it without doubt, kept nodding: “Right, right, you

immortal senior surely is different than mortal like me.”

Then, he instructed Tanis Ka and Tonni to sit at a clean table, hurried summoned his worker to serve the best tea.

Tanis Ka looked around, said: “Seeing the appearance here, your business must be going very well for the past years!”

Manager Wang respectfully said: “Yes, it is blessed by you.”

Tanis Ka coughed: “This time I come here is to visit a cultivator friend at East Sea. I recalled that I have a destined cause with you that year, so I come and have a look. Tonight I will stay in your place!”

Manager Wang nodded: “Of’course, it is an honor to have you here. I also planned to bring my family to see you!”

Tanis Ka laughed, putted his hand into his clothes, said: “So how much is one night.....”

Manager Wang immediately shook his head: “I already wishing desperately for you to come here, how can I take your money?”

Tanis Ka’s hand was still in his clothes, he shook his head: “Alas! Manager Wang, I know I enlightened you that year. But you are doing business, it is not good for me to break the rule.....”

Manager Wang was a bit agitated, said: “Immortal senior, look at what you

did for me. If not because you gave me the guidance, and allowed me to —” Then he suddenly looked around, lowered his voice, said: “If not because you allowed me to plant a tree of wealth at ‘Dragon Cave of East Sea’, how can I make a fortune for the past thirty-years. You come stay in this tavern, if I still take your money, I will be punished by thunder!”

Tanis Ka smiled and took his hand out, said: “If that is so, I shall not refuse it.”

Manager Wang nodded and chatted for a moment. The worker came and informed them the upper class room is ready. Manager Wang rose up and lead Tanis Ka and Tonni to their room. At the rear hall, the building was weird. Three stories high, with hexagonal shape. At the center there was a large courtyard paved with bluestones.

But the trace of time left the green grass in the gaps among the stones. At the most center place, a silver birch stood lonely, withered and emaciated.

Manager Wang lead them to a quiet room at third floor. Chatted with them for a moment then left. When he left, he said tonight he must invite the immortal senior to a feast.

Of’course the “immortal senior” tried all he can to refuse, saying he cultivated for many years, already not involve in mortal affair. But Manager Wang was very sincere, at the end, the immortal senior reluctantly accepted on the behalf of his granddaughter Tonni.

After Manager Wang left, Tonni closed the door, leaving only Tanis Ka and her in the room. Tanis Ka giggled: “How it is?”

Tonni asked him back: “Were you really going to give him the money? What if he really ask you for money?”

Tanis Ka said righteously: “Then what? I Tanis Ka is a cultivated celestial being. How will I care about such useless thing?”

Tonni snorted: “Don’t give me this. You think I don’t know? You don’t have money in your clothes!”

Tanis Ka was surprised: “What did you say?”

Tonni said: “Your money separated into three groups. One hide in your belt, one hide in your boot, another one hide inside of your ‘Immortal Guidance’ banner. You think I don’t know? You don’t have any silver in your clothes.”

Tanis Ka startled, flushed, said: “Brat, how do you know about this?”

Tonni glared at him, said: “What did you lie to him thirty-years ago?”

Tanis Ka said angrily: “Nonsense, when did I lie to him?”

Tonni snorted: “Don’t give me this again. Dragon Cave of East Sea is the origin of ocean, a spiritual realm. It must be under deep ocean. How can it exist in mortal world? Your words can only lie to honest people like Manager Wang.”

Tanis Ka smiled embarrassly, but then sighed, with a sorrow feeling.

Tonni frowned: “What is it?”

Tanis Ka quieted for a moment, said: “Actually, this got to do with your dad.”

Tonni was surprised: “My dad? Didn’t he die twenty years ago?”

Tanis Ka nodded: “Thirty years ago, when your dad was still young, he and I went to Chang He together. Although his age is young, he displayed incredible talent in divination like you. At that time Manager Wang was still a worker in a normal inn, but your dad said his face is quite good. Wide and flat, no pointed edge, large eyes with no hooked brows, destined to be peaceful, can make a fortune. So I.....” He smiled: “So I found a time and secretly guided him, told him he need to plant a silver birch at the Dragon Cave of East Sea, put up a “Fa” character, then he must make a fortune. So.....”

Tonni continued for him: “So he did what you told him and really made a fortune, started this large tavern, successful business, it is all rely on your guidance, right?”

Tanis Ka laughed.

Tonni glanced at him, said: “But I am really curious where is the Dragon Cave of East Sea you told him?”

Tanis Ka lifted his eyebrows, smiled: “Come.” Then he pulled her to the window, pointed down, said: “That is it.”

Tonni was surprised. What he is pointing at is the half-dead silver birch. She asked: “Right there? Why that tree look half-dead?”

Tanis Ka said: “Rubbish. If your tree got planted on a bluestone floor, can it live well?”

Tonni couldn't say anything.

Tanis Ka looked at the sky, said: “The sky looks so dark today, it is probably going to rain tonight!”

The night began to get dark. The rain started at dusk, but until mid-night, it still has no sign of resting.

Bilu was at the upper class room at third floor. Shaw Danon and Onara were at the bottom floor. After it rain, the air became a little moist.

Shaw Danon rolled around, couldn't sleep, but the reason was obvious.

Onara was asleep, but his loud and thick snoring sound fitted his body body perfectly. If this is not heaven shocking, this is at least bed shaking.

Shaw Danon sighed, sat up and putted on his clothes. He sat in the darkness for a while, then opened the door and went outside.

In the dark night, the courtyard seemed to be bottomless.

But a weak light came from unknown place has allowed him to see the figure of the silver birch in the deep of the courtyard.

He lifted his head, to the sky.

Took a deep breath.

A cool and moist chill air entered his chest. Although he was standing at the corridor, the wind from outside caused the thin rain drop to hit on his face.

He turned around and closed the door. Following the ring shape corridor, he walked slowly.

The night was dark, the wind was howling, the rain was falling.

The rain dropped from the sky, hit on the bluestone floor in the courtyard, created a spray.

On the roof above the corridor, the rain water gathered together, falling down like a thin water fall. Walking here, it was like walking in a water cave in a quiet mountain.

And it was like, when it is, in this young man's memory, there has also been such a —

Night!

In an unknown place of the darkness, there was a low sigh!

The wind blew by, whistled, the rain of the sky slanted.

Part of Shaw Danon's lapel was wet, but he did not notice it, he only stared forward.

In the rain, a person was holding an umbrella, quietly standing under the tree in the rain.

The watery eyes seemed caught something, seemed heard something, seemed felt something. That lady turned around.

The sky was quiet, the rain was quiet.

He and that lady quietly stared at each other.

The wind, was still blowing, the rain, was still falling.....

Chapter 58 Set out to the Sea

The color of the night was dark with the wind hitting. The fallen leaves softly floating in the wind.

Under the light green umbrella, her dress was fluttering among the wind, several hairs were stuck on her snow white cheek.

Shaw Danon stood there, at that instant, there was a confusing idea passed by in his mind. In this weird night, a strange place, but there was a familiar rain.....

He walked slowly into the rain.

Behind him, there were a pair of ghostly eyes watching him in the darkness.

As he got closer, the entire world seemed quiet down.

Her eyes were just before him.

Very gentle.

“Why didn’t you go to sleep?” Shaw Danon asked slowly.

Bilu did not answer, only watching him, with a pair of watery eyes reflecting his figure.

The rain wetted his clothes, between his hair, they formed into a crystal small rain drop, fell off from his hair, and slid down on his cheek.

“What about you?” She asked back: “Why didn’t you go to sleep?”

Shaw Danon silenced for a moment, then said: “Onara’s snoring is too noisy. I can’t sleep.”

Bilu startled, then laughed out softly. The watery light surrounding her eyes seemed brightened.

In Shaw Danon’s eyes, she was like a blooming lily in a raining night.

She smiled, held out her hand and pulled Shaw Danon to her. Shaw Danon couldn’t help but stepped forward. In the rain, a small, green umbrella putted above his head.

Under the umbrella, it was her soft breathing.

Shaw Danon’s heart jumped more rapid. He looked away, not to look at her. But soft fragrance from her body was surrounding him.

“Tomorrow, are you going to Billows Hill?” Bilu asked quietly.

Shaw Danon’s heart moved, said: “Yeah!” Then he lifted his head and glanced at her: “What about you?”

Bilu smiled: “Me too!”

Shaw Danon’s face changed, he frowned and said: “Don’t be silly like a child, there are a lot of people from the side of Good there. My master has bad temper, you will be in danger if you go there.”

Bilu did not say anything, only staring at him silently. Shaw Danon had an uneasy feeling, but could not tell what it is. But he knew it is never good to stand with her like this in the rainy night, he said: “I will return first.”

Bilu did not reply. So Shaw Danon left her and went back.

But when he was half way there, behind him, in the rain, her sound suddenly issued.

“Xiao Fan!”

Shaw Danon was startled. It was the first time Bilu has ever called him in such friendly tone.

He slowly turned around. The rain lay between them. The distant seemed greater, as for Bilu’s face was getting more blurry. But her voice, was still so

clear.

“When I was standing lonely here, I was thinking, if we unable to escape and die in Blooddrop Cave, it is actually not bad.”

Shaw Danon was shocked, then forced a smile: “Don’t make joke mindlessly about it.” Then he hurried walked away.

Bilu was watching his back, lowered her head, using the voice that only she could hear: “At least, I will not regret.”

Shaw Danon walked on the corridor, avoided the rain. His heart was relieved. For some reason, he always have a nervous feeling when he is facing Bilu the beautiful Felkin girl. Probably the pressure from her identity!

He sighed and looked back, seeing the girl was still standing in the rain. He shook his head and headed back to his room.

Not long after he left, behind her, the darkness suddenly moved. A woman covered with black clothes and black veil came out and walked next to her.

Bilu turned around, said lightly: “Aunt Negar.”

The woman in black looked at Shaw Danon’s direction, with a calm and feelingless voice: “Let’s go! Your father is waiting for you at Billows Hill!”

Bilu slowly nodded.

Dawn, Shaw Danon who finally could go to sleep was waken up by Onara's loud voice: "Brother Zhang, wake up."

Shaw Danon opened his eyes with great difficulty. Seeing Onara was filled with spirit and energy, clearly he was sleeping well last night!

He smiled bitterly, did not say anything. He climbed up and went to the basin to wash his face with his blurry eyes. Onara sat on his bed, smiled: "Brother Zhang, just saying, you are so young and also a cultivator, after one night you should be refreshed. Look at you, it is like you did not sleep last night!"

Shaw Danon mumbled in his mind: "With you here who can go to sleep?" But he just smiled bitterly and nodded.

After they finished washing, Onara took Shaw Danon to wake up Bilu. Shaw Danon was not willing to, but he did not feel right to tell Onara. Unexpectedly no one answer when they knocked on the door for long time. When they asked the manager, they found out Bilu left last night, also paid the money for their stay.

Onara was startled, feeling odd. Shaw Danon stood on the side, calculating. Base on what Manager Wang said, she left shortly after he left her.

Originally Shaw Danon was troubled about what to do if Bilu is going to come with him to Billows Hill. But how she suddenly left without notice, he was puzzled.

As Onara planned to discuss with Shaw Danon, Manager Wang suddenly asked: "Excuse me, is the name Onara?"

Onara startled, said: "Correct, how do you know?"

Manager Wang was glad, he took a letter out under the counter, said: "This morning a customer entrusted it to me, say to give this to a burly young man name Onara. It must be you."

Onara took the letter, found it really has his name on name, he opened it and have a look. Shaw Danon also pulled himself together and looked at Onara. As Onara read, his brows frowned closer and closer together, he cried: "Master!"

Shaw Danon was surprised: "What is it about your master?"

Onara shook his head: "Don't know, but this letter is wrote by my master, telling me to head to earth god temple at west immediately. Brother Zhang, seem like we need to separate for now."

Shaw Danon nodded: "Doesn't matter. It is fine that you go. I am also hurried to go to Billows Hill and see my master!"

Onara smiled: "When I see my master, after a talk he senior must also come to Billows Hill. We shall meet again by then."

Shaw Danon did not know him for long, but he felt very friendly toward him. He smiled: "Okay!"

Onara smiled, turned around and left.

Shaw Danon went with him until the tavern's entrance, watching his large body disappeared in the crowd. He stood there startled for a moment, then turned and headed to the east along.

When they were long gone, in the main hall of Hai Yun Luo, Tanis Ka and his granddaughter Tonni slowly came out.

Tonni said quietly: "That was close, almost run into an old enemy." Then she gave Tanis Ka a look, said: "Isn't it all because of you grandpa, no matter where, one step wrong and we will one into the people who got scammed by you. The most wronged person in this world is probably me."

Tanis Ka rolled his eyes at Tonni, then ignored her. Manager Wang saw the immortal senior came out, he came and greeted him, served tea and dishes, treated him with enthusiastic attitude. Tanis Ka was also not being polite, and sat down with Tonni pompously, chatted with Manager Wang.

Manager Wang said: "Immortal senior, do you know? Last night something serious happened outside of the wall of Chang He?"

Tanis Ka startled: "What happened?"

Manager Wang said: "I am not sure about it. I heard the righteous cultivators that gathered here had come across with the Felkin last night at the west of the city. Two sides battled fiercely. People at the west of the city said it was so intense that the city wall was shaking!"

Tanis Ka asked: “Felkin and Righteous already began to fight?”

Manager Wang shrugged, said: “The news was spread this morning, probably not going to be fake!” Then with a concern tone he said: “Immortal senior, the Righteous are cultivators, and Felkin normally won’t put their anger on us the normal people. But your cultivation is deep, if someone ask you to help punish the Felkin, you must be careful!”

“Puff”, Tonni couldn’t help but spew out the tea.

Tanis Ka glared at Tonni. Tonni forced herself to hold the laughter. Seeing the worry look came from Manager Wang, she tried to keep her normal tone and said: “Ah! Manager Wang, I-I am fine. Just, ho ho, got choked when drinking, ho ho, got choked.....”

East Sea Billows Hill (Note 1) is seven thousands miles into the sea, the farthest eastern place in the world. Beyond that it is the endless sea.

Such remote place has no human habitat. Unexpectedly several days after Shaw Danon and others went to Kongsang Mountain, Felkin cultivators suddenly rose in every places. Just in a few days dozens of factions were eliminated by the Felkin. It shocked the world instantly. The Felkin rose again after eight hundreds years with great momentum.

Within the Righteous, the Jadeon, Skysong, Incense and other factions immediately called a meeting.

Just at that time, news sent to Incense that large number of Felkin were gathering at remote East Sea Billows Hill. What are they planning?

With righteousness above everything else, the people from the side of Good were angry. Soon, with the three major factions as the lead, they sent their elite disciples, with the lead of the highly cultivated elders, they set out to East Sea Billows Hill. On their way, many righteous cultivators joined in them, intend to clean up the heretics, create peace for the living.

Shaw Danon found out what happened from the people on his way. The blood boiled in his chest, his decision of going to East Sea became more stable.

At this farthest eastern location, the journey is also extremely long. The Felkin choose this place probably they knew the Central Plain is a rich resources place, but also the root of the three major factions, that's why they are will to come to this remote island. However, they did not expect the flourishing side of Good, with righteous above everything else, to come right away even though it is extremely far!

On his journey, Shaw Danon was in hurry, beside resting, he spent all of his time riding on his fire stick. After about two days, he was finally out at the sea. At the beginning he could still see some islands, after another ten days of traveling, he could only see the bright sea and blue clear sky.

He flew for day and night non-stop. The clear blue of the sea, if not because of the wave, it is almost like a crystal clear, beautiful gemstone. However, there was still no sign of island.

Shaw Danon was dumbfounded in mid-air, the cool wind of the sea hit his face, but his heart was anxious.

Now, he had already out in the sea for ten days. This time he has not find an

island to rest for one day and two nights. He couldn't believe he got lost in this endless sea.

But for past days, beside for sleeping outdoor and eating wild things, there is nothing else. His flying ability was greatly improved. No longer as nervous as before.

At this moment, he raised his head looked at the sky, the lowered to look at the blue sea. He smiled bitterly.

When he was out of idea, Shaw Danon suddenly heard a bird cry ahead of him. He lifted his head and saw a white seagull, flying above the sea.

Shaw Danon's mind thought, when he left the coast, he saw a lot of seagull, but when he flew far, the seagull could not reach here. Now at the deep of the sea, he could see a seagull, that means an island is nearby.

Thinking of that, Shaw Danon was excited. Without hesitation, he flew to the seagull's direction. The endless sea lies on the horizon, the color of the sky and sea are exactly the same, like poem and drawing.

Flying between heaven and earth, there is a feeling of immortal, like the body was combined with the nature into one.

He flew for another small half an hour, a small island appeared before him. Looking at it from the sky, the entirety of the island was covered with green plants. The sea water near the island was clear, like crystal blue jade.

Shaw Danon had flown for long time, his body was tired. He landed with his fire stick and rested on the island for a while. When finally set his feet on the ground, Shaw Danon looked around and found the scenery is much different and clear than when he looked from the air.

The clear water washed on the pure white sand beach wave after wave. Near the shore, there are type tree that Central Plain does not have. Tall trunk, no side branch, straight into the sky. At the tree top there are large leaves, under the leaves, there are fruits that are about size of a child's head.

Deeper into the island, beside the tall trees, the short bushes are also flourish. The woods are thick and there is no path. Seems like no one has ever walk here for thousands years.

Above the head, the seagulls crying in circle. The fresh, cool wind came from the sea. Shaw Danon took a deep breath. At this quiet place, tiredness caught up to him. He looked around, seeing nothing strange, he found a clean place, lied down and fell asleep.

This sleep was quite sweet. The island was quiet, except for the tide and wind, there was no movement. And of course no one will bother him. Shaw Danon slept until dusk, then woke up.

Shaw Danon stood up and stretched, quickly walked to the sand beach. Gazing afar seeing the scenery of dusk, it was very different than morning. The sunset was red as blood, at the west of horizon, shined the clouds and sea red. The clouds were burning in different shape and appearance. The wind blew from the sea, Shaw Danon opened his arms, took a deep breath.

A relax feeling filled his body. At a place that is like a paradise, his entire body was relaxed.

At this moment, he couldn't help but think, if he could stay with Ling'Er Shijie in such peaceful place everyday, watching the beautiful sunset, his life will have no regret.

Thinking of Hidi, Shaw Danon's heart was excited. Since the time he left the mountain, it had already been a month. Since the time he entered Jadeon, he had never separated from shijie for such a long time. Now on this quiet island, thinking that his shijie can be on a island near here, excitement rose in Shaw Danon's heart and couldn't get settled.

Standing there for a long time, his fluctuating feeling finally calmed. He heard a growling from his stomach. Shaw Danon smiled bitterly. Since the period he was trapped in the Kongsang Mountain Blooddrip Cave, he seemed getting hungry very easily. But it is fine, he still got enough food, only the water does not have much left.

Shaw Danon looked around, then his eyes landed on the fruits on the tall trees. He rose up and picked off several of them.

He did not expect the fruit shell is extremely hard, Shaw Danon finally crushed the shell after many hits on the rock, white juice came out. Shaw Danon quickly drank all. Though it was a bit bitter, but it taste sweet. It was a fine good.

With this natural delicacy, Shaw Danon had a satisfying meal. Seeing the sky darkened, he planned to continue the journey tomorrow.

The sky was getting darker. The wind from the sea blew on him was also getting colder. Shaw Danon frowned, walked toward to the woods, but hesitated for a moment, he did not went in. He found a place near him to avoid the wind and lied down and rested.

Had been slept for the entire afternoon, Shaw Danon couldn't go to sleep. He rolled around, his mind couldn't help but recalled words of Wan Ren Wang that day at the tea stall.

He picked up the fire stick from his waist. Reflecting the light from the stars, on the black fire stick, ghostly green light glowed. Especially the blood like red veins, they seemed came to life, they seemed having fresh blood flowing inside it.

Are those, like Wan Ren Wang said, my blood?

Shaw Danon murmured it in his heart, different feeling mixed together. He could remember clearly that day in ancient valley, when the Sinister Orb sucked out large amount of blood from his palm.....

Shaw Danon shivered, shook his head hard, not willing to remember the past.

Only, that esper still clearly in front of him, even that unique chill was still familiarly flowing in his body, like it is a part of his body.

That day, although he dignifiedly said those words to Wan Ren Wang, but when it comes to him, it still does not feel good.

Afterall, need a disciple who grew up in a famous faction like him to accept

his esper is a Felkin evil artifact, it is not easy to do.

Thinking of that, he looked at the fire stick again, seeing the clear veins, he heart couldn't help but think: this esper, how many souls did it took?

In these blood, probably many wraith is hiding in it!

He shuddered.

But, he suddenly recalled, if what Wan Ren Wang said is true, then the "Ancient Sword Regeneration" in Mount Jadeon Peak of Widows's Moontop Hollow, what is it then?

The world's righteousness, evilness, is it just like what his master and shixions taught him, always is there, never change?

Suddenly, a thought appeared in his mind, a thought he never had before rose: Who said that we Righteous must be righteous?

Thinking of that, Shaw Danon abruptly jumped up, closed his eyes and "snap"!

He snapped his face heavily, shouted: "Bastard, damn, how can you have such betrayal idea!"

Note 1: <<Classic of Mountains and Seas, Sea Volume Nine, The Wild West>> East Sea has Billows Hill, seven thousands miles into the sea. There is a beast, ox shape, dark body with no horn, one leg, when it appear there must be a storm,

bright as morning, loud as thunder, name Mindrot Menace. Yellow emperor used its skin for drum, hit with the bone of thunder beast, spread to five hundreds miles away, shocking the world.

P.S Wow....Shaw Danon went to Hawaii?

Chapter 59 Broken Heart

After snapped his face, Shaw Danon stood there, a bit out of breath. After a long while, his emotion calmed, then shook his head smiled bitterly, told himself: "Shaw Danon Shaw Danon, what rank are you, only a disciple of Jadeon, you dare to doubt the righteousness of the ancestor, really don't know your limitation. Jadeon have been like this for two thousands years, the world admire them, of'course they are right, where you can doubt about."

Having thought of that, his mind relaxed. Though it was self comforting, it was very effective. No longer thinking this question, he peacefully lied down.

Before he could make himself comfortable, suddenly a sharp whistle in air broke the originally quiet sound of wave and wind on the island.

Shaw Danon immediately jumped up, raised his head, he saw in the night sky, a beam of white light was like a meteor, shot across the sky. Behind it, several beams of light followed, red, yellow and white.

Shaw Danon realized they were cultivators battling in the sky. The person in the front was clearly escaping while the people from behind were chasing.

In this remote place, there should be no one here. Now there were people fighting, it must be a battle between the Righteous and the Felkin. Shaw Danon had been searching in the East Sea for several days. He was in hurry, now seeing one side must be from Righteous, he did not hesitate. He pointed, the fire stick rose into the air, charged into the sky.

Shaw Danon rode on the fire stick, making “zoom.....” sound under the color of the night, swiftly charged into the sky. But the people in the sky appeared to be unaware there could be anyone on the island. The escaping person thought it was ambush, and the chasing people also thought it was a trap. Both sides shouted, the white light in front turned around, and the red, yellow and white light from behind also turned and striked at Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon was surprised, and fell into a situation where he faces enemies from front and back. But the speed of those espers was fast, there was no time for him to explain. He stopped himself and dropped down like a rock.

※ ※ ※

The four people in the sky were skilled and have fast reaction, quickly realized what happened. Their espers paused, then followed downward, like a stinger on the back, not allow its prey to escape. But it seemed both sides were a bit confused as they discovered the opposite side also appeared trying to kill this unwelcome visitor.

Only the poor Shaw Danon became the wronged person. He was chased by four espers, one mistake can cause his body to turn into thousands pierces. Hearing the sound of wind from behind was getting closer, Shaw Danon gritted his teeth, he knew he could not escape. He flipped around, seeing the four beams of light arrived like lighting, he shouted, the fire stick brightened with green light, blocked this hit for him.

“Bang”, a loud bang sounded above the quiet sea. The four lights were shocked back. Shaw Danon and the fire stick heavily fell into the water from the sky. “Splash”, the water splattered really high.

Large ripple popped on the surface of the water. The four people in the sky, the escape did not escape, the chase did not chase, they only stayed there, feeling there is something strange.

After a while, a person slowly floated to the surface of the water, with arms and legs spread out, appeared to be unconscious. The four people in the sky descended, at the same time aware of each other. They got closer to the surface, under the star light, they could manage to see the face of the person in water.

“Xiao Fan!”

Two screams, came from both sides.

※ ※ ※

Soaking in the freeze sea water, this feeling caused Shaw Danon to think he was still in the Heartless Sea under Kongsang Mountain Forsaken Abyss, still under the ground. Only, why the sky has bright stars?

He shook his head and regained consciousness. He found himself lying on the shore. At far on the sand beach, four people were standing there. One side was a girl in green dress. Other side were one girl and two men, base on their clothing, they were from Jadeon.

Shaw Danon looked toward the girl and two men. The two men were familiar, they were Da Shixiong Xavion and Sixth Shixiong Amandla. And the girl in red dress, her face was so familiar.

Instantly his blood was boiling, his mind was ringing, without any other thought, only stared at her, shouted: “Shijie!”

The girl in red heard the voice and turned around smiled. The lonely island, the sorrow color of night seemed brightened: “Stinky brat, I knew you will not die so easily!”

What word can describe such excitement? Shaw Danon has thousands words in his mind, endless thought, many bitterness. The thought of past days during the difficult time rushed into his brain. Seeing the sweetly smiling beautiful lady, his heart was sour, tears dropped.

Shijie, shijie, shijie! His heart had mentioned this word for countless, countless of time. Now she suddenly appeared before him, he could see nothing else.

Until, an angry shout issued: “Shaw Danon, you bastard, not even look at me?”

Shaw Danon was surprised. Not only him, Hidi and others were surprised also. Shaw Danon turned and this surprise was not easy.

The moon light, the star light, coldly shined on the sand beach of this lonely island. A girl in watery green dress, with anger on her face, her bright watery eyes stared at Shaw Danon savagely. Isn't that Bilu?

Shaw Danon was nervous when facing her. His tongue was tied, mumbled: "Why are y-you here?"

Bilu glared at him, did not answer. Her eyes peered at Hidi's face, seeing that she was beautiful and charming, a fire rose in her heart.

That mid-night Bilu left with the woman in black at Chang He's Hai Yun Luo, she met her father outside of the city, then followed her father to East Sea Billows Hill and joined other people, prepare to do something important on Billows Hill. The Righteous cultivators also arrived at the same time. Both sides had been confront each other for several days.

Calculated the days, Bilu predicted Shaw Danon should arrive already. After the near death experience together under Forsaken Abyss Blooddrop Cave, also met each others on the journey afterward, Bilu already had a strange feel toward this normal Jadeon disciple. Today, she couldn't help it anymore, she only wanted to see Shaw Danon again. So she sneaked out, found where the Jadeon live, but she did not find Shaw Danon and discovered by Hidi and others.

Actually Shaw Danon should already arrive at Billows Hill. But no one could expect Shaw Danon got lost in East Sea, delayed for several days while Bilu was several days earlier.

Tonight she found Shaw Danon expectedly on this island, Bilu was very pleased, and she felt a bit sorry after she accidentally hurted him.

But when Shaw Danon woke up, before she could check if he is injured, she saw that stinking brat was enchanted by his shijie, with a look of not even knowing who himself is. Bilu's anger rose, there is no longer sorry, she just wanted to grab that brat and beat him up!

Shaw Danon looked at Bilu's furious face, then turned to his shijie, finding Hidi and the two shixiongs' eyes were wide opened, they were all puzzled.

He was in the middle, he wanted to explain to his shixiongjie, but he did not know what to say. He turned to Bilu, seeing the sharp eyes of that Felkin girl, his heart was agitated, then something rose to his chest. He vomitted mouthful of blood.

"Ah!" Hidi and Bilu screamed.

Shaw Danon has nothing serious. He was hit by the combined strike of four people, although he had the protection of the incantation and the fire to block most of the power, Xavion and others' cultivation were all higher than Shaw Danon's. Even though they found something strange and held back, the great force still hit him down. Fortunately below was the sea, if it was hard ground, it really got a lot for Shaw Danon to suffer.

Shaw Danon's chest was already stuffed, now being stimulated by the embarrassing situation, his blood rose, and he vomitted a mouthful of blood. Those were only extravasted blood, although exaggerating, it was nothing serious.

But how could Hidi and others know about it. She was a close friend with this Xiao Shidi since young. Out of concern, she immediately ran to him. But once she made a move, the Felkin girl also ran to him with anxiety on her face.

Hidi is a girl so she knew what it is and paused, but Xavion and Amandla thought that Felkin heretic is trying to harm Xiao Shidi when he is injured. Xavion shouted, his “Ten Tigers” sword enlarged and striked at Bilu.

Bilu was worrying about Shaw Danon, but was obstructed by that big fellow, she was angry, however the might of that sword could not underestimate. She twisted and turned into a green figure, just in an instant she passed through the light of Ten Tigers. Before she make even distant of one yard, white light flashed before her. A strange cube shape esper flew at her.

Bilu could not see it clearly so she did not take the hit, but paused her body. Her right hand waved in the wind, a pure white flower appeared between her fingers. It was her esper “Heartending Flower”.

The Heartending Flower follow Bilu’s finger, rose into the air and blocked the strange object. Bilu could see clearly what that is, her feeling was mixed with anger and laughter. It was a cube with six faces, each has dots as number, it was a dice. She could not imagine there can be such deviant esper, that is rare.

The white light of Heartending Flower forced Amandla’s dice a yard back. It was appeared Amandla’s cultivation was not enough compare to Bilu’s. Though Amandla’s cultivation is not as good as Xavion, he is a lot smarter. Seeing his cultivation was not enough, he summoned another two dices to annoy her.

The three dices flew from above, from bottom, circle, left and right, although it could not invade into Heartending Flower’s area, Bilu also couldn’t go through, and was delayed for few moment. Xavion already rushed at her from behind.

Bilu had fought against Xavion, she knew that person's cultivation is quite deep. If need to fight him by herself, she may not be able to defeat him. Plus the furtive guy before him, and the "Ling'Er Shijie" that Shaw Danon mentioned about, she knew tonight she couldn't gain any advantage. She gazed at Shaw Danon, cursed in her heart: "Stinking brat!"

Xavion was rushing toward her, the heretic who was fighting against Amandla suddenly flew backward. The flower in her hand turned into thousand flowers, covering the sky. He was surprised and immediately turned his focus on defense. But it was only Bilu's trick, within the thousand flowers, Bilu's green figure rose into the sky and flew away.

Xavion was about to chase, Amandla and Hidi called: "Da Shixiong, no need to chase."

Xavion realized, retrieved his sword, and together with others, they ran to Shaw Danon.

※ ※ ※

East Sea Billows Hill, the mountains on the island was magnificent and dangerous, taking large area. In compare of size, it is the number one among the islands of East Sea. But this place is very far away, no sign of human habitat, so in reputation, it is no match for other two famous mountains of East Sea — "Mount Penglai" and "Island of Yama".

But this time at Billows Hill, it was the most crowded. For several days, the Felkin seemed searching for something among the mountains. Although the mountains range is large, but cultivators' flying speed is extremely fast, often ran into each others. Both sides has "strong hatred" at each other, always use

their espers to crush each others once they recognize who is it, creating sky shocking bangs. Then their allies will come assist, and turn it into “ganging”. Countless of dazzling or vicious espers flew in the sky of Billows Hill.

For several days, both sides have many casualties. Countless of the small mountains and hills were destroyed.

That night after he reunited with Hidi and others, under their lead, Shaw Danon finally found the Billows Hill, and also saw his master Tian Bolis and shi niang Surin.

This time the Felkin rose in power in fierce momentum. Not only the hidden old evils had reappeared, but also many new faces, and their cultivation were not low. It can clearly be seen that the Felkin had planned this thoroughly over the past years.

The enemies were quite strong, and the Righteous did not delay. After the Head of Jadeon Master Doyal Shen discussed with Skysong and Incense, they sent out Dragon Head Peak, Sun Rise Peak, Bamboo Peak, and Bamboo Height’s elite disciples, with Dragon Head Peak’s Master Vasp Cealo and Bamboo Peak’s Tian Bolis, and the assistance of several elders, they lead dozens of Jadeon disciples to join the force of Skysong and Incense, plus other Righteous cultivators, together they arrived at Billows Hill.

When Tian Bolis saw Shaw Danon, he first was startled, although he was happy, he held it. But his shi niang Surin did not care much about it, smiled filled her face, she pulled Shaw Danon to her side and asked him many questions.

Shaw Danon forced himself to hold the tear when he saw his shi niang, and summarized what happened. But he was still concerned about Bilu’s identity, so

he did not mention about Bilu and the Blooddrip Cave, only say he was trapped inside the mountain for several days, then fortunately he found a secret passage to escape.

Everyone exclaimed as they heard the story of how he escaped from the death. Among the Bamboo Peak disciples, Xavion, He Dazhi, Amandla and Hidi came to Billows. According to them, Shaw Danon found out the eight people in the Cave of Fangs, Fazzan and Fashan of Skysong, and Li Su and Yanon of Incense were fine. Kevern and Issa were also out of danger.

The one in the most risk was Anan who fell into Forsaken Abyss with Shaw Danon. She was poisoned by the red eyes yasho, and was wounded by the nether spirits and tree spirit, then got washed away by the great wave caused by the ancient demon Abyssal Viper. She fell unconscious under the Forsaken Abyss. But with the protective aura of Aeolian Firmus, Kevern and others were able to find Anan who was surrounded by countless of nether spirits under Forsaken Abyss, and saved her from the hall of Yama.

At that time Anan woke up and told them Shaw Danon was still alive under the Forsaken Abyss. But they had searched for several days and still found no clue. Anan still had poison in her body, wound had not recover, but she still insisted to find Shaw Danon. After a few days, her body could not go on anymore. They gave up searching despite her strong objection, and brought Anan back to Mount Jadeon.

This time the Jadeon came to the east, all of the people Shaw Danon knew, beside Issa, had come.

Hidi giggled: "If Anan Lu Shijie knows you are alive, she must be really happy. Do you know, when she couldn't find you that day under Forsaken Abyss, how anxious her face is!"

Shaw Danon startled, Anan's face appeared in his mind. He remembered she had tried to save him many times under Forsaken Abyss, he was grateful: "Lu Shijie does it for same faction relationship, of'course I....." Then he paused, thought of something, he asked Hidi: "Shijie, you were not there, how do you know Lu Shijie was anxious?"

Hidi stucked out her tongue, made a face, smiled: "I heard that from Kevern Shixiong."

Shaw Danon startled, seeing Ling'Er Shijie's beautiful smile, his burning heart that started when he saw her, had cool down.

※ ※ ※

The next day, conflict rose again between the Good and the Evil.

At the conflict, the monks of Skysong sighed as they saw the trees and wild lifes being ruined, they recited the After Life Sutra. After it finished, they mumbled "Amitabha", then waved their fingers, the espers lauched a sky shocking strike, the Felkin escaped from it, then a huge bang, after that, another small hill wiped out, more lifes were ruined, they recited the After Life Sutra again.

"Bald head thief, stupid bald head, I dare you to shut up and come fight. Mumbling all those stupid incantation all day, I will be bothered to death if I do not get cursed to death!"

“Amitabha, donor Cynical, you’re burden with heavy sin, if you don’t turn back now, you will be fall into Avici!”

“Posh posh posh! Bald head thief, you are still a monk? Cursed at me directly!”

“.....”

Shaw Danon felt this voice was familiar. He took a look and saw it was the strange looking Cynical Dialectian he met that day in Kongsang Mountain Cave of Fangs. At this moment he was standing at the front of the Felkin, cursing at a Skysong monk angrily. Nian Boss, Lin Feng, Liu Gao, and that young woman was also standing among the Felkin.

Shaw Danon was amazed that they were here, then suddenly some mumbled the word of Buddha behind him: “Amitabha, greeting Zhang Shidi!”

Shaw Danon turned around, it was Fazzan and Fashan of Skysong Temple. Among the eight people in Cave of Fangs, the two monks from Skysong were always friendly to him. Especially Fazzan, seemed treated him differently. From Hidi, Shaw Danon found out, although Fazzan made the decision of leaving Forsaken Abyss despite Anan’s objection, the sadness on Fazzan’s face could never be fake.

Shaw Danon was grateful when he heard that. Now he saw Fazzan and Fashan, he immediately saluted: “Greeting two shixiongs.”

Fazzan took a careful look at him, let out a long breath, smiled: “Ancient

people said: 'Good people will be blessed by heaven'. Now I believe it. Zhang Shidi can survive such disaster, worth congratulate, destined to be fortunate."

The huge Fashan stood behind his shixiong Fazzan, who is shorter than him, he said in his muffled voice: "Zhang Shidi is blessed!"

Shaw Danon was grateful: "Thank for the thought from two shixions."

Fazzan smiled and nodded, looked at the scene, Cynical Dialectian already began the battle with a Skysong monk, he patted his shoulder, said: "Let us chat later when we have time."

Shaw Danon quickly replied: "Yes."

Fazzan took two steps, then turned around smiled to Shaw Danon: "Zhang Shidi, you should go see Anan donor Lu of your faction, she is very worry about you!" With a mysterious look, he smiled at Fashan, then walked away.

Shaw Danon startled, then turned at looked at the Jadeon Bamboo Height. This time Head of Bamboo Height Master Shui Yue did not come. The female disciples, with their Da Shijie Baako as their lead, listen to Master Vasp Caelo and Tian Bolis' order. Anan was standing among them.

Haven't see for a month, Anan seemed got thinner, perhaps brought by the injuries. But still, Shaw Danon could feel the natural gorgeousness, the peerless beauty of that lady. Even when she got thin, she was like a cold dew on a blooming lily, lonely and aloof, with elegant.

The female disciples of Bamboo Height were mostly beautiful ladies, attracted

many eyes. Except for the old monks of Skysong Temple, the male disciples of Jadeon and Incense often peered at them and Anan attracted most of the eyes. But that time Anan had returned to her original coldness, when her eyes swept across and landed on Shaw Danon, she paused for a moment, then looked away emotionlessly.

Shaw Danon felt a little disappointment in his heart, but then he felt a bit happy. He was already has some fear toward this icy beauty, now she ignored him, he felt relax. Not a while later, all his attention was attracted by Hidi's giggling, and no longer able to take it away.

Chapter 60 Vicious Energy

The one who confront with Cynical Dialectian was a monk of Skysong Temple, highly cultivated. Using a shining gold wooden fish esper, like it came to life, and chased Cynical Dialectian. Cynical Dialectian was extremely embarrassed. The grey beast fang in his hand no longer shining, probably being broken by his opponent.

The beating of the wooden fish sounded, the gold wooden fish swinging its tail in the air, chasing Cynical Dialectian. Cynical Dialectian was breathing heavily, fleeing embarrassingly, very funny. The people from the Righteous were laughing, Hidi was also giggling. Shaw Danon stood next to her, peered at his shijie. Hidi's smile was as pretty as flower, and the dimples appeared on her snow-white cheeks were as adorable as they could be. His mind was charmed, only wish this moment can be eternity.

Suddenly a whistle, Shaw Danon saw Nian Boss came out from the crowd and gave assistance. His cultivation was far higher than Cynical Dialectian, and his Red Devil Eye's power is not weak. The Skysong monk took back his smile and careful handled him.

After a few glances, Shaw Danon found a strange thing. Within the Felkin, when Cynical Dialectian was in trouble, except for Nian Boss, Liu Gao and others were having a bad look, other people were watching the scene, laughing at his

misfortune. Later when Cynical Dialectian could hold out no longer, only Nian Boss helped him, others were just watching. Shaw Danon was puzzled, thinking the Felkin really couldn't be understood with common sense, are they having inter-conflict among the factions?

Shaw Danon's assumption is pretty correct. Nian Boss, Cynical and others are from the Bloodforger. This faction of course was glorious, well known under the hand of Elder Blackheart eight hundreds years ago. But now it is weaken for long time, already being pushed out by the main factions of Felkin. Now seeing Cynical was ashamed, the high number Felkin people not only did not help him, but laughed at him like it was a joke.

Nian Boss is the leader of the faction, cultivation is not simple, he quickly stopped the advance of the Skysong monk.

Cynical Dialectian finally able to have a break, regained his breath, he cursed: "Bald head thief, you almost harmed your elder!" Then he turned and fought him two against one with Nian Boss.

People from Righteous cursed: "Felkin heretic, shameless to the extreme."

Within the shouting, Shaw Danon suddenly heard the sound of wind blew beside him and was surprised. Hidi was not willing to be bored and came out from the crowd. Phoenix Soul's amber light embraced her graceful figure, rose into the air.

"Shameless heretic, more against less, Fazhong master, I am here to help you!" Hidi shouted.

Shaw Danon now know the monk's name is Fazhong, base on the name it seemed he is in the same generation as Fazzan and Fashan, but he face looked a lot older.

When Fazhong saw Hidi jumped out, he issued a buddist word: "Thank you donor."

Fazhong's right hand pointed, the gold wooden fish in the air immediately charged at Nian Boss, brought him to the side. Hidi took Cynical Dialectian. It was easy to see that Fazhong left him the badly cultivated Cynical Dialectian to her for her young age.

Shaw Danon saw Hidi fought Cynical Dialectian, he was anxious and about to come out and help, his shoulder was pulled by someone. He turned and saw it was his Da Shixiong Xavion. Xavion whispered to him with a solemn look: "Xiao Shidi, Felkin heretics are shameless and rely on more people to gain victory, but we will never do that."

Shaw Danon immediately realized, nodded and held back. He inadvertently saw Tian Bolis couple, they were calm. Then he remembered, with master and shi niang here, what can happen to Ling'Er Shijie? He really is worry for nothing.

Shaw Danon blushed. peered around, no one seemed noticed his misbehavior. Xavion also looked at battle in mid-air like there was nothing happened. He was relieved. At this moment, he suddenly felt a gaze landed on him. But when he turned around, he only saw the shijies from Bamboo Height, Anan was also among them, but no one looked at him.

In the sky, Hidi could use the Phoenix Soul in any way she wish. Within thousands beams of amber light, Cynical Dialectian was dizzy, the silk

surrounded himself in the center from all direction. He couldn't get out or break it. He would probably get wrapped into a dumpling by the silk after a while.

Tian Bolis saw his daughter showed her face out there, pride appeared on his face. The people of Righteous praised about her. Hidi was graceful, compare to Cynical Dialectian's dog like face, the distant was eighteen thousands miles. Not only the Righteous cultivators applauded, even the Felkin laughed.

Cynical was embarrassed to rage. Although his cultivation is not deep, his experience is too far for compare with that inexperienced little girl. His eyes rolled, peered at Hidi, he could see that girl is a novice, he immediately shouted: "Stinking yatou, I see that you are quite pretty, can't believe you have such improper relationship with that old monk!"

The people were quiet, then a moment later the people of Righteous cursed at him. The Felkin laughed into mess, some obscene people even shouted: "Correct, correct, really can't see that!"

Hidi was angry and irritated, said angrily: "What did y-you say?"

Cynical pointed, with the word "righteous" written on his face, a looking of justice bringer: "Posh, if you are not in a good term with that old monk, why will you come out and help him?"

Even Fazhong was angered, he immediately mumbled "Amitabha". Hidi was angered to pale, she knew it was provoke plan of Cynical, but she is a eighteen years old girl, and suddenly receive such insult in front of the crowd, how could she not angry. She immediately shown a flaw in her esper.

Cynical saw it as a chance, he quickly escaped from the surround of the Phoenix Soul. Just when he fled, a bang, the sky full of red silk closed, if he was still in there, probably crushed into thousands pieces?

Cynical stuck out his long tongue, said: "Very ruthless yatou!"

Hidi was extremely angry, the originally snow-white skin had turned red. Without extra word, like lighting, she charged at Cynical Dialectian again.

Under the surprise, Cynical fled away. The Felkin saw him returned, they boo, then suddenly, don't know who started it, the Felkin flew away one by one, no one help him.

Just in an instant, the only Felkin left was the Bloodforgers. Nian Boss's face was clouded, and his heart was angry, but he knew this place not for him to stay. The Red Devil Eye letted out several red beams in a row, forced Fazhong back a few yards, then rose up, waved his hand to his men and fled away.

Hidi was about to chase, his father Tian Bolis called: "Ling'Er, don't chase."

Hidi forced herself to stop, her face was still flush red, turned to Tian Bolis and said: "Dad, you heard that heretic nonsense....."

Tian Bolis smiled, Surin went forth and pulled her down, smiled: "Those Felkin heretics, they can do any evil thing. It is just rude word, we can just pretend we never hear it."

The people of Righteous agreed, said: "Correct, correct."

“Lady Tian don’t put it in your heart.”

Hidi came down. The people of Righteous saw the Felkin heretics were gone, they also dispersed. These days they often battle with the Felkin. Fight then leave, leave then fight.

Shaw Danon was about to go forth and talk to Ling’Er Shijie, suddenly someone hit his shoulder. He turned around and stunned, then became very pleased. Baye stood behind him, with a happy look. Haven’t see for long time, he was in white clothes, with Dragon Slayer sword on his back, sharp brows and bright eyes, handsome and elegant, very outstanding.

Since mentioned it, it is the first time Shaw Danon see his childhood playmate after the Seven Peaks Tournament. These days he was wandering across the world, faced many near death moment, but Baye’s figure never appeared in his mind.

Baye looked at him for a while, first it was delightful, then it was agitated, suddenly he embraced Shaw Danon in his arms, tightly and not let go, and relaxed after a long while. Shaw Danon’s emotion was also agitated, he could see the shining tears in Baye’s eyes.

“Xiao Fan!” Baye opened his mouth, his voice became choked, grabbed his shoulders, almost hurted Shaw Danon.

But Shaw Danon did not mind it. After seeing Baye, it seemed like all the

terror and despair he faced at the edge of death can be only understood by this brother. He can truly relax himself only in front of this brother.

Baye grabbed him tightly, said quietly: "Xiao Fan, I-I-I thought I can never see you again....." Then at here, his emotion was over agitated, unable to go on.

"M-me too." Shaw Danon also looked at him. Soon, they smiled and letted out a long breath.

"It is good to be back, we still need to eliminate the Felkin and avenge together!" Baye held Shaw Danon's shoulders, smiled.

"Right." Shaw Danon nodded heavily.

Baye's emotion slowly settled, his face was calmed, seeing Shaw Danon's face has sign of traveled, Baye's eyes darkened a little, said: "When I heard you left the mountain, I was happy for you, and also hate myself. I can't believe I disappointed the great expectation my master has toward me, my achievement is not as great as yours."

Shaw Danon was surprised, shook his head: "JingYu, you can't say that. Who doesn't know your potential is far superior than mine. If I face you in the contest, I must be defeated. I am only lucky."

Baye letted out a breath, grinned: "That's right, I will practice much harder, I don't believe I can't beat you. But you can not relax either."

Shaw Danon laughed, and nodded hard.

They were talking the past here while Hidi was pouting and act spoiled to her mother. Surin smiled and comforted her.

Shaw Danon and Baye chatted for a while. He glanced at his master, then pulled Baye's hand, said: "Come, I will bring you to see my master and shixionsg."

Baye snorted, said quietly: "That short winter melon master, forget it."

Shaw Danon glared at him, said: "Don't say rubbish." Then began to pull him.

Baye's face was frustrated, all he could do is to follow him. As they walked near, Shaw Danon was about to speak, suddenly saw there is an extra person next to where Hidi and Surin were talking, Cool and handsome, it is Kevern.

Kevern gently whispered few words to Hidi. Hidi immediately smiled, there was no longer any anger on her face. She smiled like a flower, then held Kevern's hand before everyone, took him to Tian Bolis.

Shaw Danon heard a loud "hum" in his head, everything turned empty, instantly there is nothing, leaving only his shijie holding Kevern's hand. He could still faintly hear Baye's joyful words, he said quietly: "Originally your short winter melon master insisted not allow Kevern Shixiong to be together with Tian Shijie. But Qi Shixiong went to beg master, master always value Qi Shixiong, so he told this to Head of the Faction. Your master only left with the choice to allow it. Heh heh, you see they already make it public....."

Baye suddenly stopped, mouth slightly opened, watching Shaw Danon.

It was like Shaw Danon had suddenly become a different person at this moment. He could only feel the raging fire in his heart, almost burning his body.

He felt he was burning alive by the nether fire. Before him, that man, and his most beloved lady, were holding hands walking toward him.

The fire stick that has hidden in his waist raised a familiar chill, spread through his body. But it did not have effect on lowering the temperature of the raging fire, but like putting fuel into fire. A vicious energy, a blood thirsty heat, had twisted Shaw Danon's face.

Everyone at there were stunned. The originally harmony atmosphere had frozen instantly. Then everyone saw the Xiao Shidi who used to be gentle and kind suddenly let out the vicious, evil energy that even the Felkin do not have. The people surrounded him all took a step back, watching this vicious person, aggressively took a step toward Kevern, also toward Hidi.

The blue sky of Billows Hill seemed darkened.

Xavion was the first came out, stopped before Shaw Danon. He could immediately feel there was no more familiar figure in this Xiao Shidi who he watched him grew up.

Feeling someone standing before him, Shaw Danon raised his head slowly, glared at Xavion. Xavion saw his bloodshot eyes, heart was a bit terrified, he forced a smile: "Xiao Fan, what is it?"

Shaw Danon did not answer, with a lowered, hoarse voice said: "Move."

His tone extended very low and long, seemed used great amount of energy to say it, but in everyone's ears. it was terrifying.

Tian Bolis' face darkened, everyone were in astonishment.

Follow by, under the watch of everyone, Shaw Danon saw Xavion was still in front of him, the fire stick in his right hand glowed with cold green light, with a sense of killing that it never has before.

This time Xavion was really surprised. It was not because of the heavy sense of killing, and it was also not because his cultivation had advanced rapidly after Shaw Danon left the mountain for a month, it was because the Xiao Shidi who respected him, loved him, now has the intention to kill him.

He could see it, of'course Tian Bolis' eyes could also see it. He took a step with his darkened face. Although he still believe Shaw Danon is not Xavion's opponent, but this young disciple's epser is extremely awkward. That day it had showed off on the stage in Seven Peaks Tournament, Xavion probably can't deal with it easily.

And at this moment, Hidi ran to him with surprised look, stood between Shaw Danon Xavion, asked in surprise to her most favorite Xiao Shidi: "Xiao Fan, what really is it?"

The face that had carved in his heart, that pair of bright eyes, that lady who he had missed so much, has stood before him, concernly, worriedly asking.....

Shaw Danon was stunned, completely stunned, like have awakened from

dream. The vicious energy inside him had receded like tide. But, but, he could feel the tearing pain, startling looking at his shijie, there is a desire of wanting to cry!

Do you know, at the edge of death, the one that I missed the most, is you?

Do you know, dream to return to Jadeon, thousands of twisted thoughts, are only for you?

Do you know.....

“Slap”, a loud, clear and crisp sound. Shaw Danon’s face was slapped by Tian Bolis who suddenly appeared next to him. His entire body flew backward, formed an arc in the air, then landed at far away.

Everyone was stunned.

Shaw Danon fell on the ground. Stars flying before eyes. But the he who had awoke, was feeling very ashamed. How could he wanted to fight, even kill, his Da Shixiong who had always been taking care of him. It was really an unforgivable, heinous crime!

He managed to climb up, but before he straighten his body, his legs fell again. Half of his face was swollen, fresh red blood dropped from his mouth.

However, he could not feel any pain in his body, only his heart roared at

himself with the fear that he never had, what is it, what is it, what is it into you, are you crazy?

He blankly raised his head, watching the people of his house. It was like everyone had become a stranger. As for them, their eyes, it was also looking at a stranger.

All of this, what really is it?

Shaw Danon managed to stood up. No one speak. Everyone looked at him, looking at his expression, but it appeared to be puzzled more than feared, like he did not even know what happened himself.

Xavion always being protective over Shaw Danon, he turned to Tian Bolis, said: "Master, Xiao Shidi, h-he does not have any disrespectful intention, he is on-only....."

"Shut up!" Tian Bolis shouted. Xavion could not continue. The short, fat Tian Bolis was like an angry deity of heaven at this moment, walking toward to Shaw Danon step by step.

Shaw Danon's face showed a sign of terrified, he fear his master the most since young after all, he could not imagine what is he going face next?

Suddenly, a white figure, stood before Shaw Danon.

Everyone was surprised.

Baye's face was pale, brows frowned, but facing this name shocking Jadeon's Head of Bamboo Peak, he had no sign of fear just like when he was young.

With his snow-white clothes, he stood there, like nailed to the ground, did not move an inch. Even there are perils in front of him, it could not move him.

"Clang", a dragon roar, the Dragon Slayer unsheathed. The bright green aura covered him and Shaw Danon — the two people with the same background. Completely ignoring the eyes of his Da Shixiong Kevern was giving him, he said righteously, determinedly: "If you are going to touch Xiao Fan again, you will have to kill me first!"

Kevern gasped in a cold breath. He peered at Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis's face at this moment was as bad as it can be, almost to liver red. The degree of anger in his heart can be clearly seen.

But Kevern as the senior disciple of Dragon Head Peak, there is no reason for him to avoid. And Baye always favored by Master Vasp Caelo, there is no way for him to ignore no matter what.

Kevern looked at Tian Bolis, he knew it is no use to comfort him. He swiftly ran and pulled Baye, whispered: "You are crazy, shidi, it is their Bamboo Peak inter matter, what are you meddling. Even if Master is here, thing won't go anywhere better, hurry and leave with me!"

But Baye today was very different than before, he snorted: "If I leave, Xiao Fan is going to get tortured by this person to unimaginable degree. He is an orphan like me, if I don't stand by his side, no one in this world will." Then his eyes shot straight at the Bamboo Peak, although he knew the difference in power is huge, his eyes told, for the brother behind him, he can discard his life.

Kevern couldn't say anything. Seeing Lin Shidi is being irritated, he was very anxious. Suddenly a hand putted on Baye's shoulder.

Baye was surprised and turned around. Shaw Danon stood behind him, half of the face was completely swollen. His eyes were already filled tears, his voice was choked: "Jing Yu, I understand y-your intention. I did the wrong thing, I will apologize to my master, you return with Qi Shixiong first!"

Baye frowned, was about to speak, Kevern said hurriedly: "Lin Shidi, if you stay here, it will only get Tian Shishu even more mad, this will harm Zhang Shidi instead. Leave, hurry!"

Then he forcibly pulled Baye away. Baye struggled, but seeing Shaw Danon's eyes with a bit of plea, he hesitated for long while, then finally took away by Kevern. When he left, he looked back at Shaw Danon for every steps he took.

Tian Bolis's look was extremely bad. The people of Bamboo Peak looked at each others. No one dare to say anything.

Shaw Danon silently walked to him, kneeled down, putted his head on the ground, not moving.

Tian Bolis laughed coldly: "Ah! I am not worthy for it. Who is this! So high cultivation, so much sense of killing, do your eyes still have me as your master?"

Shaw Danon's body shook, kowtowed heavily three times. His head was still on the ground.

Xavion and others always love that Xiao Shidi, seeing his situation, they forgot what Shaw Danon looked like before, they all said to Tian Bolis: “Master, Xiao Shidi he.....”

Tian Bolis waved his hand, everyone’s words were choked in their throats. Tian Bolis took a look at Shaw Danon, then snorted angrily, said coldly: “Can’t imagine that for all these years, I have raised up a traitor!”

Then without looking back, he walked away and ignored Shaw Danon.

Surin sighed and followed. Everyone could not help but followed, leaving Shaw Danon kneeled on the ground lonely.

His head, still did not raise.

※ ※ ※

The sky grew dark, the Righteous cultivators returned to the mountain waist of Billows Hill at south. There were dozens natural caves, very convenient. That day when they arrived at the mountain, it was immediately chosen by the Righteous cultivators.

Jadeon with four houses, has occupied four caves. Bamboo Peak has the least people, they located at the most western cave, next to the thick forest. Follow by are Dragon Head Peak, Sun Rise Peak, and Bamboo Height. Then they are resided by Skysong, Incense and other Righteous cultivators.

This time Shaw Danon returned, Fazzan and Fashan of Skysong had came met him. Kevern also came greeted him. Anan stood among the Bamboo Height and

did not come. He only did not see Li Su and Yanon of Incense.

But he did not have the mind to think about that at this moment. He followed everyone return, but did not enter the cave, instead he kneeled on the rock outside of the cave. From afternoon to dark, he had kneeled for more than four hours. Tian Bolis still showed no sign of heart softened.

Many of the Jadeon disciples from the other houses, Skysong, and Incense disciples saw it. They gathered, pointing from afar, their sneer could be heard.

Shaw Danon was ashamed. But he still did not get up. But kneeling for such a long time, his knees was sour.

Suddenly in a neighboring cave, where the Dragon Head Peak's disciples live, loud noise came out. Shaw Danon did not lift his head, but still could hear Baye was angrily speaking. Seemed like he couldn't restrain himself anymore and about to come out, but grabbed by Kevern and other disciples.

When there were shoutings, suddenly a dense, powerful voice issued from the neighboring cave: "Jing Yu, come here, I have thing to talk to you."

Shaw Danon knew this is the voice of the Head of Dragon Head Peak, Vasp Caelo Shishu. The Dragon Head Peak disciples immediately quiet down. Soon, Baye did not dare to disobey his master's order and walked in, then never came out again.

The darkness had returned quiet. the crowd that was watching the show had left. Leaving only Shaw Danon kneeling at the entrance of the cave.

And at this moment, voice of Xavion, He Dazhi, Amandla begging Tian Bolis came out from the Bamboo Peak's cave. After after Tian Bolis angrily scolded them, everyone stopped.

But the silence did not continue for a moment, Hidi's agitated voice issued: "Dad, what are you doing? Xiao Fan has been kneeled outside for almost five hours, what did he do wrong? Did he hurt Da Shixiong or kill him? He already apologized, you still not let him come in....."

"Bang", stones blasted into the air. Tian Bolis's anger could not settled, his hit on a hard rock, crushed it to dust. Hidi still had things to say, but shi niang Surin whispered to her and took her away. Then there was no more sound.

Chapter 61 Storm

The in the dark color of the night, moon and stars can not be seen. There was no light in the night sky.

Shaw Danon had been kneeled at the entrance of the cave for almost six hours. The disciples from other factions were most asleep already. Even the last light, the last fire inside the cave of the Bamboo Peak putted out among thousands of reluctance.

Inside the cave, Tian Bolis said something, then Hidi immediately cried out: “Dad!”

No sound, nothing follow it. Shaw Danon did not know what happened. But soon, Xavion came out.

Shaw Danon lifted his head, looked at his Da Shixiong. Though Xavion could not bear to say it, but he still said: “Xiao Shidi, master said you are bothering him if you kneel here, and told you to kneel farther.”

Shaw Danon’s heart sunk. His face suddenly felt something cold and freezing. In this pitch-dark night, rain fell.

He did not speak, quietly rose up and walked to farther away, to the border of the thick woods, kneeled down under an ancient tree.

Xavion looked at him for a moment, the figure of this Xiao Shidi's had became blurry in the night rain. He sighed softly, shook his head and returned.

“Boom”, a thunder came from the sky. The white lighting bareing its teeth and showing its claws across the sky. Moment later, large drops of rain came down like small stones, hit on the rocks making popping sound. Then, heavy rain pouring down.

Just in a blank of an eye the world had turned blurry. Shaw Danon's entire body had got all wet. The clothes sticked to his body, with an undescrible coldness. He raised his head. In the originally pitch-dark night, plus the heavy rain, he could not see details of the cave.

Between heaven and earth, it seemed like leaving only he to be here suffering.

He lowered his head, not moving.

This heavy rain was like the punishment the heaven gives him. It was non-stop. The rain did not get weaker. The lighting and thunder howling wildly!

The water dripped off from his wet hair, slipped on his cheek. Shaw Danon's eyes almost could not open. But at this moment, in this raining time when there is no one here, he suddenly saw a figure appeared before him, a pair of feet stepped in front of him.

He managed to lift his head. Lighting flashed across the sky, thunder banged, with the weak light, Shaw Danon saw a poignantly beautiful lady stood before him.

Shaw Danon was stunned.

Anan was also wet all over. As the light of the lighting passed away, her figure also turned into a blurry dark shape in the darkness. But Shaw Danon could feel it clearly that she is standing in front of him.

The night of raging storm, this gentle figure softly crouched down in front of him.

The rain became more rapid, the wind became more fierce!

In the deep of the forest, it was like there are devils howling.

An icy cold hand, with slightly shaking, went across Shaw Danon's hair. With a dreamy voice, in this stormy night, she said: "Don't be scared, it will be over soon!"

"....."

"I will stay here with you!"

"....."

“Boom” A thunder was like shattered the sky, shattered the soul. Within the fierce lighting, within the howl of the wind, the time when freezing rain dance like devils, that gentle face, that pair of gentle eyes, like the sweetest figure in a dream, is staying next to him.

She whispered to herself in the rain, to Shaw Danon, but also to her heart, softly, softly said: “You saved me and protected me without caring your own life. I will do the same for you.

“The pain in your heart, the heaven knows it and I know it. I can not help you to reduce your pain, but I can bear it together with you. Wish there will be finally a day, you can be with the person you love, happily together.....”

The voice became softer and softer, and gone. The storm became more fierce. That figure is so weak, like an injured small grass in the wind, wavering. Shaw Danon was absentminded, it was like dream and illusion.

The dark night was heavy, the sky was speechless!

The storm had raged for long time, then it slightly weakened. Shaw Danon was freezing all over. The chill invaded his body. His arms and legs were already frozen. If this continue, he will be severely ill. But no matter what, he did not want to rise up and avoid the rain.

In this freezing coldness, a faint warmth came from his right arm, spread slowly in his body and balanced out much of the coldness in his body. It seemed coming from the Inferno Mirror that tied on his right arm.

Shaw Danon suddenly remembered the ghostly lady. He thought that was Anan, but right now, he could not find her figure, did she left, or she never appeared before.

Thinking of that, he smiled bitterly, shook his head and the water splashed everywhere. But then, he clearly heard a voice: “Silly boy!”

Shaw Danon turned around and almost called “Lu Shijie”. But then, a girl slowly came out from the deep woods, with an umbrella in her hand sheltering against the storm, she looked at him with smile. It was a person he could never expect he will meet here — Felkin girl Bilu.

In the night screen, although the rain got a little weaker, it was still heavy. He could not see it clearly from afar. First Shaw Danon thought his eyes were playing trick, but it was really Bilu. She walked to him with a smile on her face.

She was still in her green dress, her hand was still holding a green umbrella. But the storm was too strong, several places got wet on the edge of her ethereal dress. She arrived before him, her figure became clear. The places where it got wet softly stuck to her skin.

Shaw Danon lowered his head, not looking at her.

Bilu startled, crouched down before him, looked at him and smiled: “You are really weird. In this heavy rain, you choose this place to kneel, is this a practice in your Jadeon cultivation?”

Shaw Danon was annoyed and glared her, but Bilu's face was unexpectedly gentle in the night, he was startled.

"Boom!" The thunder struck from the dark clouds. Then at this moment, a large light flashed across the sky, cut it in half, then faded away. Following by this lighting and thunder, the rain was getting heavier again.

Bilu frowned, she leaned forward. Shaw Danon discovered the rain that hit on him became less. He was suddenly released from the heavy pressure, able to relax.

He raised his head and found it was Bilu shifted half of the umbrella, sheltered the rain for him. But the rain was heavy, half of the Bilu's body has allowed a slip for the rain became wet while she took consider of Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon's heart felt warm, he pushed the umbrella back, said quietly: "You were severely sick in Blooddrip Cave, be aware of catching cold."

Bilu seemed startled, she looked at Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon was bewildered by her strange look, said: "What?"

Bilu curled her lips smiled, seemed very delightful, said: "So you kid still know how to worry about my health?"

Shaw Danon blushed, but luckily in his night storm it was hard to see. He said shyly: "I am afraid you will blame on me if you get sick."

Bilu leaned on him. Now they were side by side closely. The difference is that Shaw Danon was kneeling on the ground, and Bilu was crouching next to him. At the same time, Bilu shifted the umbrella again, sheltered against the storm above their heads.

Shaw Danon felt there was a faint, gentle fragrance next to him in the storm. He turned and Bilu was also looking at him. Their eyes met and startled. After a while, Shaw Danon moved his eyes away. His heart was beginning to beat rapidly.

The talkative Bilu was also quiet at this moment, crouching next to Shaw Danon, staying with him. Only when he was not noticing, she shifted the umbrella more to Shaw Danon, sheltered more rain for him.

“Ah!” Shaw Danon was silence and fixed with feeling, suddenly remembered something, and cried out. He immediately turned to Bilu, with anxiety on his face, he said hurriedly: “How can y-you come here?”

Bilu was not surprised by his reaction, she smiled, her voice was faint, in the sound of storm, she said with dreary sadness: “I come here to see you!”

Shaw Danon lowered his voice, but in his anxious voice there was gratefulness: “They are all our Righteous cultivators around here, not to mention the seniors of Skysong Temple and Incense Valley. Just any elders from Jadeon can cause you die without a place to bury. Why don’t you hurried and leave?”

Bilu was indifferent, only watching Shaw Danon’s anxious look with smile on her face, then she suddenly sighed: “You stinking brat, you has some conscience!”

Shaw Danon couldn't say anything.

Bilu whispered: "Aren't you Righteous? Aren't you unable to coexist with the Evil? Why don't you call people to catch me?"

Shaw Danon was already anxious, now he was like being poured by cold water. His heart was shocked, he was sweating all over. In outsider's eyes he is not like Baye and his shijie Hidi who have outstanding potential and highly intelligent, but he is not an idiot. But these years in Bamboo Peak, no one ever valued him, so he was a bit low self-esteem.

But listen to Bilu's teasing, Shaw Danon immediately realized his situation is very improper. Not to mention he is now punished by his master, but his allies discovered him being with a Felkin girl so closely, he probably can't explain himself even if he has entire body covered with mouths.

Thinking of the consequence, a "hum" rang in Shaw Danon's mind, he did not want to continue this. His mind was in mess and was about to call for his allies, but the corner of his eyes caught that Bilu's shoulder was leaning against him. The storm was strong, but she sheltered most of the umbrella above his head while half of her body became all wet.

That dress stucked closely to her skin was reflected in his eyes. Even on her snow-white cheeks, there were rain drops formed into pearls and slipped down.

Shaw Danon could never let out this call.

"Why do y-you bother suffer like this?" Shaw Danon lowered his head, said

quietly: “I can see that your father must be an important person, you must be a pampered mistress. Why bother to suffer, take such a risk for this little Jadeon disciple?”

The storm whistled, the heaven was cold, in the night rain, it was like only this place remained in the world, leaving only two of them.

Bilu felt a bit cold and leaned closer to Shaw Danon. This action was so intimate and familiar, like when they were at the edge of death that day in Blooddrop Cave.

Her voice, with a bit drifting: “No, I do not suffer. You don’t know, the true suffering of the world is in one’s heart.....”

Her voice began to fade, the words could not be heard. Shaw Danon unexpectedly discovered she had quietly lay her head on his shoulder.

The sound of wind and rain whistled by, but Shaw Danon could only feel his brain was empty.

But the fragrance next to him was so real in this cold storm, surrounded him.

Morning, the clouds dispersed and the sun came out, rain stopped and the wind died down.

Tian Bolis came out from the cave alone, from afar he could see his young

disciple was still kneeling on the edge of the thick woods, not moving.

He frowned and walked to him. Shaw Danon heard the sound and lifted his head, saw it was his master Tian Bolis, he called out quietly: "Master."

Tian Bolis saw his clothes were all wet, water dropped down from his hair, face was pale, he seemed to have suffered from the heavy rain last night.

Thinking of that he frowned. Sound of the people began to rise from the caves behind him, the disciples of each faction had awoken. Tian Bolis snorted, then walked into the forest. When he went past Shaw Danon, he said lightly: "Follow me!"

Shaw Danon quickly answered, then rose up, but his feet fell down when he rose to half way. His feet were numb and sore, probably caused by kneeling for the entire night.

Tian Bolis walked in the front, he paused, seemed to hesitate, but still did not look back, and continued.

Shaw Danon gritted his teeth and massaged his legs. Luckily he is not a pampered person, the result of the Bamboo Peak bamboo cutting training has responded, just a moment, his blood circulation returned a bit fluent, able to walk.

Shaw Danon stood up and found Tian Bolis' figure has almost disappeared in the woods, he immediately ran to catch up. Not long later, when the Righteous disciples came out from the cave, their two figures were already gone.

In the forest of the Billows Hill, there are all very tall ancient trees. The trees that were only require encircled by one person, here needed two or three people, and those large trees were very common here. Perhaps it is because this place is remote, used to be no one here.

Shaw Danon followed Tian Bolis, slowly walking. The morning light shined pass the trees, showered on the bushes.

In the woods after the rain, everything was washed, everywhere were green. Some nameless flowers bloomed in this lonely place, exuded with faint fragrance.

Tian Bolis walked in the front, silent without word. He was squat, Shaw Danon was already half a head taller than him. But in Shaw Danon's eyes, this person's figure was as large as the god of the mountain. Moreover, the thing about Bilu was pressuring him like a small hill, causing his into chaos, what should he do?

Just when Shaw Danon's mind was frustrated, thinking should he tells his master about Bilu, Tian Bolis suddenly stopped and turned around. Shaw Danon's heart jumped, also stopped walking.

This place is deep in the forest, there was no one around. The woods were silent, beside the singing of the birds, there was no other sound.

Tian Bolis took a look at him, expressionlessly said: "You were showered in the rain last night, is your body okey?"

Shaw Danon shook his head, said quietly: "Disciple deserve it, it doesn't matter."

Tian Bolis snorted: “You say it easy, but does your heart hates me?”

Shaw Danon was surprised, his pale face became even more white, he said hurriedly: “Master, I-I never will have such thought. I deserve all of these, will never blame it on master.”

Tian Bolis looked at the disciple who he had neglect the most in the past years, seeing his undiscible anxiety but he could feel it, his mouth moved, sighed, and his expression became more moderate.

“Okey! There is no one here, do you have anything to speak to me?”

Shaw Danon’s heart was tightened, he thought can it be master already know about Bilu. The relationship between Shaw Danon and Bilu now is subtle. Last night Bilu came, he was afraid if this is discovered by the elders, can it be.....

When he was thinking off the line, Tian Bolis was a bit impatient, seeing he did not reply, he said: “I am asking you, why did you suddenly do this to your Da Shixiong yesterday?”

Shaw Danon was startled for a moment, then relieved to find his master did not mean about Bilu.

But then he couldn’t speak again. He con not say he lost his mind because he saw Hidi was with Kevern? Moreover, even he does not know about the sudden evil energy that took control of his emotion?

Tian Bolis waited for the day and Shaw Danon still could not say anything, he suddenly made a cold laugh: “You were resentful because you saw the intimate action of Ling’Er and Kevern?”

Shaw Danon was shocked, a loud bang in his brain, he was stunned on the ground.

His secret one-sided love on Hidi is one of his greatest secret, he had never told this to anyone. Now it was being said out coldly by his most respected master, this was even more soul shocking then the earth shocking thunder last night.

At this instant, he couldn’t make any movement, even without the ability to deny. He only looked at Tian Bolis with his mouth dropped, couldn’t say a word.

Chapter 62 Person of the Past

The sunlight passed through the thick leaves, spilled on Tian Bolis and Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon stood in front of Tian Bolis, very ashamed, after a while he quietly called: “Master.....”

Tian Bolis there was a bit red on this little disciple’s face, he snorted and turned away.

Shaw Danon did not know what to do or what to say, but his deepest secret was seen through by the person he fears the most, this panic feeling still did not subside.

Tian Bolis stood there with his hands behind the back, quiet for a long while. Shaw Danon stood behind him, did not dare to take a breath.

After a long time, Tian Bolis said slowly: “That being said, the one who secretly passed you the Pure Essence incantation is also Ling’Er?”

Shaw Danon’s heart jumped again. But since it was related to Hidi, his mind became clear, hurriedly said: “Master, it got nothing to do with shijie, it was me, I begged shijie to teach me.....”

Tian Bolis turned around and stared at Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon's voice immediately lowered, he knew no matter what he say, he can't conceal it from master.

In the woods, between the master and his disciple, it fell into silence.

Shaw Danon lowered his head, he was disconcerted. Then at this moment, he heard his master said: "Seventh."

Shaw Danon's heart jumped, raised his head answered: "Master."

Tian Bolis looked at him said: "You were adopted under my house, it is almost five years?"

Shaw Danon said quietly: "Yes."

Tian Bolis said lightly: "When I adopted you, I actually did not think highly of your potential. Today you can have such achievement is really exceeded my expectation."

Shaw Danon moved a little, but in his heart, there was a bit of delightfulness.

Tian Bolis continued: "As for you secretly love Ling'Er....."

Shaw Danon quickly said: "Master, it is my fault, I should not....."

Tian Bolis glared at him, said: “Did I said it is your fault?”

Shaw Danon’s mouth dropped, he was really surprised by his master this time.

Tian Bolis snorted: “You are at young age, also not those Skysong Temple’s monks, additionally you grew up with Ling’Er, what so weird if you like her? You think your master live in vain? Can’t even understand such little thing?”

Shaw Danon head lowered, his eyes were heated. It was like, in his heart, all the kind words in this world can not compare with the cold words Tian Bolis just said.

Tian Bolis paused, then continued: “But now thing is different, I can also see that, Ling’Er probably truly love that Kevern. As for you? She probably on see you as her younger brother, you understand?”

Shaw Danon nodded, but his eyes were staring at his feet, said quietly: “Yes, master.”

Tian Bolis said slowly: “I opposed Ling’Er to be with Kevern in the past, it is not because of Kevern himself, it is because.....” Then he paused, frowned, and changed the topic: “To be real, although your advancement in cultivation is faster than I expected, but compare with Kevern, still great difference.”

Tian Bolis took a deep look at Shaw Danon, said slowly: “Do you understand what I mean?”

Shaw Danon bit his lip, then said after a long while: “Yes, I understand,

master.”

Tian Bolis nodded, letted out a long breath then walked to him, patted his shoulder, said: “The thing from the past, just let it go.”

Shaw Danon felt his master’s wide and warm hand on his shoulder, his heart warmed, and nodded heavily.

Tian Bolis looked at him for a while, said: “Then let’s return.”

Finished, he took the path of where they came.

Shaw Danon raised his head, to the above, he took a deep breath, letted go of his tightly held hands.

Only, there was still a faintly discernible uncertainty hanging on his heart.

He gave a bitter smile, strengthened his spirit, then followed.

As they walked back to the caves, people from each factions were mostly awoken. Hidi and others were standing before the cave entrance, with anxiety on their faces. They kept looking around, appeared to be very worry.

Shaw Danon’s heart was hurt when he saw that from afar, and lowered his head.

Seeing Tian Bolis and Shaw Danon returned, Hidi ran to them. Without saying

anything, she first examined Shaw Danon to make sure he did not get “tortured” by Tian Bolis, then she whispered: “Xiao Fan, where did you go with dad at such early morning?”

Shaw Danon looked at her concerned face, seeing the pair of bright eyes were only looking at him, his heart was stabbed again; however, he forced a smile on his face, said: “Nothing, master took me for a walk, taught me a few things, now he already forgave me.”

Tian Bolis was walking at the front, seemed to be hear what his young disciple said, he snorted, then slowly returned into the cave. Seeing his wife Surin was smiling at him at the entrance, he startled, then rolled his eyes on her, went inside without speaking.

Here, the little conflict, can be say it is over.

For the following days, Shaw Danon stayed with his shixionsgs, that he had separated from him for long time, for days and nights. He grew up under the watch of each shixionsgs, now he had returned, they were very kind to him. And Xavion open minded, and taking the rude action of Shaw Danon that day into his heart. Additionally, Surin also privately reminded him a few things, he understood it clearly and putted much more affection to for this xiao shidi.

Among the Righteous cultivators at Billows Hill, it was natural for the three major factions “Jadeon Clan”, “Skysong Temple”, and “Incense Valley” to be the leaders, but there were also many smaller Righteous factions.

Most were the factions Shaw Danon had never heard of, they were here most likely for righteous and justice, irreconcilable with the remaining Felkin.

And among the three major factions, except for Master Vasp Caelo and Tian Bolis of Jadeon, there was no one else came from the senior generation, so virtually everything is decided by the Jadeon.

For the next three days, Shaw Danon met several familiar people at Billows Hill.

Li Su and Yanon of Incense also arrived at Billows Hill at the next day; later, he saw Onara at near the place of Skysong monks. There was skinny and tiny old man standing next to him.

Shaw Danon greeted them joyfully. When Onara saw him, he was very excited and about to introduce his master “Herald of Valor”, then he turned to the old man who is talking to Fazzan: “Master, this is brother Zhang of Jadeon that I have mentioned to you before.”

The old man turned around. Shaw Danon startled when he saw his face. In his visualization, base on the faction where Onara at is called “Vajra”, and his master is called “Herald of Valor”, he thought it must be a powerful giant. However, he did not expect it was a tiny old man, he couldn’t recover right away.

But Onara clearly didn’t thought that much, he laughed said: “Brother Zhang, hurry and greet my master.”

Shaw Danon realized and quickly saluted: “Old senior, disciple Shaw Danon, have long admired your name.”

The old man snorted, said lightly: “Whatever.” Then turned back and talked to

Fazzan: “So that mean, your master Sage Puhan is in seclusion and hasn’t come out yet?”

Fazzan smiled: “Exactly. The director of the temple is still master, but it is always me assist Pukton Shishu on management affair. This time the restoration of the Felkin, Pukton Shishu was going to come, however it was too busy in the temple, so only young monk came, hoping to be able to assist.”

Herald of Valor nodded: “With you here, that is enough. But before I came, I thought even if the two Divine Monks, your master Pufan and Pukton, did not come, but your fourth shishu Pufan must comes for his deep hatred on the Felkin, why.....”

Seeing the puzzled eyes of Herald of Valor, Fazzan sighed a little: “Senior not know about this, since third Shishu Puzhi passed away five years ago.....”

Shaw Danon’s heart jumped.

And also at this moment, Fazzan glanced at him, then turned away, and continued: “Pufan Shishu’s friendship with Puzhi Shishu is the deepest, since that time on, he began to seclusively reading Buddhist sutra, no longer came out.”

Herald of Valor exclaimed “Ah”.

Fazzan smiled: “But this is not a bad thing.”

Herald of Valor laughed: “Correct, correct, the Divine Monks must be focus on culminate their merit, unlike an old guy like me, have no relationship with Buddha, always running around all day.”

Fazzan smiled: “Senior is kidding. You and our Skysong Temple have same origin, this was specially remined by master and Pukton Shishu. Come, please sit inside senior.”

Herald of Valor modestly declined several times, then went inside with him.

Shaw Danon watched them entered the cave, then he suddenly felt something. He turned and found it was Onara pulled him, and whispered: “Did you saw that? It seemed like the young Fazzan is the leader of those Skysong monks!”

Shaw Danon nodded, these days he met these Righteous cultivators daily and saw many Skysong masters. He discovered although Fazzan was young, but among the “Fa” generation of the Skysong monks at Billows Hill, Fazzan was superior than the rest, has the leadership. He is the one who mostly speak, as for the older monk, they did not say anything. It seemed like Fazzan is a talented disciple that Skysong had worked hard to train.

But at this moment, he was only thinking the sudden glance when Fazzan mentioned Puzhi, so he did not hear what Onara was mumbling, only heard what he said at the end: “.....I don’t think he is that great, his speech was wrong.”

Shaw Danon startled, asked: “What did you say?”

Onara peeped around, then whispered: “I remember someone have told me before, if a Buddhist culminated his merit, peacefully ended, it is called “parinirvana”. He said some rubbish passed away, sound really unpleasanting, making Divine Monk Puzhi a.....eh, brother Zhang, why your face looks so bad all the sudden?”

Shaw Danon was disconcerted, nodded to Onara with a forced smile, then returned to the Jadeon’s place. Onara stood there and could not figure out what happened.

Just in a blink of an eye Shaw Danon already at Billows Hill for half a month. During that period, the Righteous cultivation and the Felkin heretics were still in confrontation. They often ran into each other at daytime, usually there will be battle. But what made the Righteous cultivator puzzled is that the Felkin heretics seemed not willing to fight, after several rounds in battle they escaped.

When they heard the Felkin were gathering in this desolate place, they thought it is most likely a discussion for a plan of how to harm the world, so the Righteous cultivators came to eliminate the evil. But now here, they don’t seem like planning it.

If they are going to fight the Righteous, they should come out and engage in battle; if they have heard there are two heads from Jadeon among the Righteous, and fear their strength is not enough, they should have retreat.

But the Felkin heretics did not fight or retreat. With the large geographic of Billow Hills, the aerial targets are visible, but if needed to go into the ground and search for the Felkin heretics’ nest, it is really not easy. With this delay, the days spent on the island extended. The Righteous cultivators were wondering,

what are the remaining Felkins planning to do on this remote island?

For these days, Shaw Danon followed his master and shixions to search for the Felkin heretics.

Personally, his was worry that what should he do if he run into Bilu?

But that was also weird, clearly Bilu has already arrived at Billows Hill, but since the storm that night, she did not appear again. However, other Felkins, including Nian Boss, Cynical Dialectian and others who Shaw Danon and Anan knew, appeared very frequently. It looked like they were searching for something.

Even with Master Vasp Caelo and Tian Bolis' hundreds years of cultivation, they found this was a bit troublesome. That day evening, they summoned the representatives of Skysong and Incense to discuss the matter.

The one represent Skysong of course was Fazzan. As for the one from Incense, was also a familiar person, Li Su. They both seemed to be the most outstanding out of the young generation. But in front of Master Vasp Caelo and Tian Bolis, they were still being very respectful.

After greeting, Master Vasp Caelo said lightly: "Two shizhi, this time we Righteous factions came to eliminate the Felkins, there will be many area that will rely on your help, the poor Taoist thanked in advance."

Fazzan and Li Su both bowed and said: "No, if there is anything required, Vasp Caelo Shishu please instruct."

Tian Bolis waved his hand, let them sat down first, then said: “We don’t need to talk any more rubbish. Until today, we already here at this desert island in East Sea for half a month. Although the remaining Felkins are already here, but their action is awkward, unable to figure out their intention. Don’t know if two shizhi have any ideas?”

Fazzan and Li Su looked at each other, then shook their heads.

Vasp Caelo said to Li Su: “Li Shizhi, this information was first released from your Incense Valley, may I ask does your honorable faction know Felkin’s intention?”

In front of this well known senior Master Vasp Caelo, proud was no longer on Li Su’s face, he said immediately: “Reply to Vasp Caelo Shishu, this information was discovered unintentionally by my faction. After the Felkin was rebuilt, many of the remainers headed East Sea Billows Hill. But as for the intention, we don’t know.”

Vasp Caelo and Tian Bolis exchanged a glance.

Fazzan suddenly spoke: “To two shishu, base on what the young monk absorbed, the Felkin heretics went across the mountains and carefully searched each hills, very possible that they are looking something important.”

Vasp Caelo pondered, said: “Correct, Tian Shidi and I both have the same idea. But what are they looking for that is so important?”

Tian Bolis frowned then said: “If that is the case, there is no way for us to figure it out. But the Felkin heretics are always dangerously vicious, once you

return, you need to be vigilant. Morning we will speed up the searching, until we find Felkin heretics' hide out, then eliminate them all at once, remove the harm for the world."

Fazzan and Li Su replied: "Yes."

After that, they discussed for a while, then Fazzan and Li Su left. Seeing them left, Vasp Caelo suddenly said: "Tian Shidi, the potential of these two young men is really not bad!"

Tian Bolis slowly nodded.

Master Vasp Caelo said: "Especially Fazzan of Skysong Temple, I noticed his eye pupils are pure black while there is soft gold light on the side, the eyes are warm and static, probably already having high achievement in Skysong incantation 'Fawin Wisdom'."

Tian Bolis laughed coldly: "Don't underestimate that Li Su. Although he remained humble in front of us, I heard my useless disciple said, his cultivation in Kongsang Mountain and Dark Drake Cave is not necessarily worse than Fazzan."

Vasp Caelo snorted: "For hundreds of years, Skysong Temple and Incense Valley desired to replace Jadeon as the leader of Righteous. Now they cultivated such talented disciples and sent them out, they are probably demonstrate to us."

Tian Bolis glanced at him, suddenly said: “Doesn’t matter, with Vasp Caelo Shixiong’s talented disciples, of course there is no need to fear them.”

Vasp Caelo’s face changed, said coldly: “Tian Shidi, what do you mean by that?”

Tian Bolis stood up, said lightly: “What mean can I have by that? My house got a stupid disciple and he won several matches during Seven Peaks Tournament with luck, then he was able to follow your talented disciple to travel. But unfortunately in Felkin place, after the battle with the Felkin heretics, he was abandoned in that ancient cave. If not because weak people have strong life, I am afraid I can never see him again.”

Anger flashed across Vasp Caelo’s face, said: “Tian Shidi, you need to say thing correctly. What abandoned in the ancient cave? When Kevern returned, I carefully interrogated him, the situation really was because Anan of Bamboo Height was seriously injured; and there was no sign of your disciple after days of searching; also there are many nether spirits and yasho under Forsaken Abyss, so it was forced to give up. How does this become intentionally abandon?” Near the end of his words, his voice became louder.

Tian Bolis has no sign of stepping back, glanced at him then shouted: “Hmph, if your disciple was left there without knowing living or dead, won’t you rage into heaven?”

Their voice became loud, and issued to the outside of the cave, caused the Jadeon disciples to pop their heads and look into the cave. Tian Bolis and Vasp Caelo were cultivated after all, they would not do anything rude in front of the younger generation. Tian Bolis snorted, then left without looking back.

After a moment, Kevern and Baye came in. They were Master Vasp Caelo most valued disciples, only they dared to go near Master Vasp Caelo when he is in a bad mood.

Kevern said carefully: "Master, how come argued with Tian Shishu again?"

Baye mumbled indignantly: "This person is very stringy, does not behave like a senior....."

Vasp Caelo shouted: "Shut up!"

Baye was surprised, lowered his head, said: "Yes, master."

Vasp Caelo looked at him, then turned to Kevern, said: "He is still remembering that day you gave up searching Shaw Danon."

Kevern was stunned.

Vasp Caelo snorted: "Don't just think that he seems like not really value that disciple, that is only when it is inside his house. At outside, he always protects the weak. Moreover, that Shaw Danon had earned honor for him at this Seven Peaks Tournament, he was very pleased by it." Then he paused, said to Kevern: "Do you know, this time Shaw Danon is able to survive through the disaster and return safely, it gives you benefit?"

Kevern did not understand immediately, he said: "What?"

Vasp Caelo coldly laughed: "Aren't you in relationship with his daughter

Hidi?”

Kevern blushed.

Vasp Caelo said: “Although I asked Head Shixiong to talk for you, and he also reluctantly allows you two to be together. But base on his action today, he clearly still remember it. If not because Shaw Danon returned alive, you are going to have hardship in the future.

Kevern realized, nodded: “Thank you master for helping disciple.”

Vasp Caelo waved, then slowly walked to the entrance, looked at the cave where Tian Bolis lived. There was no emotion on his and he was silent. But when Baye and Kevern looked at him, they could see his eyes were shining, pondering something.

Chapter 63 Felkin

“Ah!”

A soft cry, Shaw Danon woke up from dream. He gasped quietly in the darkness, his entire body was wet with sweat.

Over these days, starting from the time when he heard Fazzan talked about Puzhi, Shaw Danon began to have the nightmare dream that he had when he was young; the scene of the village massacre that had carved into his heart has rose on him, swallowed him.

The fire stick was still laying by his side. On the body of the stick, there was a familiar coolness, everything was same as the past.

However, after that, Shaw Danon could feel, the strange esper that tied on his right arm was distributing warm energy into his body, that is opposite of the fire stick.

He suddenly choked. In the darkness, the place where no one could see, he quietly curled up.

Who know, a person bearing too many secrets, can be so tiring?

In the darkness, other people were peacefully sleeping. There were disciples outside of the cave as night watch, so everyone were reassured. Listening to their calm and familiar sound of breathing, Shaw Danon was startled.

At far, there was a small, and even in the dream, it still contains her unique gentle sound. The darkness blocked the eyesight, but Shaw Danon felt he can see clearly, that beautiful girl was smiling, in this tranquil night, sweetly dreaming.

But, who is it in her dream?

He reached out his hand, softly holding the fire stick, placed it in front of his chest, tightly cuddled it. It was like only the fire stick can be with him, never abandon him.

Faintly, he remembered the pair of peacefully died fox spirits.

If it was me, do I have the courage to die together with the loved one?

He thought quietly in the darkness.

The sun rose from the east, the wind blew from the sea. This day, the clouds were thin, a good sunny weather.

The people under the house of Bamboo Peak left their cave, then flight to the depth of the Billows Hill with their espers, hoping they can find the Felkin

heretics.

Hidi was leading in the front with her “Phoenix Soul” sparking red light. Xavion and He Dazhi followed closely behind. Amandla and Shaw Danon flight at the rear.

In their house, save for Xavion who was still using sword “Ten Tigers”, others were using silk, or blush, or even the strange and funny dices and fire stick, very noticeable among the Jadeon disciples that were using swords.

But this place is not Mount Jadeon after all, at Billows Hill, not to mention the Felkin, even among the Righteous, several people from other factions were using all kinds of esper.

But when some nosey people judged other people’s espers when they are bored, an “expert” pointed out, among the the espers at Billows, the strangest esper is the gambling dice belong to one of the disciples in Jadeon house of Bamboo Peak, while the most rustic esper is the fire stick that also belong to one of the disciples in Jadeon house of Bamboo Peak. Clearly the leadership of Jadeon has brought many unique followers, not to be underestimated.

If Tian Bolis hear such comment, what will he think about it?

The Righteous disciples flew around in groups. Along with the wind of the Billows Hill, the colorful light shinging, very pretty.

Shaw Danon took a glance around him, seeing the people of Righteous spread out in fan shape. Near him to the right, donzes yards away, there were a group of girls in plain clothes, they were the female disciples of Bamboo Height. Anan

was also among them. With her clothes and hair fluttering in the wind, matching her cold and beautiful face, she was like a celestial.

Shaw Danon's heart was moved, he quickly turned his head away. On the other side, another dozens yards away, there were disciples of Dragon Head Peak, about six or seven people. Kevern and Baye were among them. Baye was also looking at him. He smiled and waved his hand.

Shaw Danon smiled in reply.

There was a group of people following the Dragon Head Peak disciples, seemed like they were the disciples of Sun Rise Peak.

Then at this moment, Hidi in the front suddenly issued a clear whistle. Shaw Danon looked forward and saw Hidi held her incantation mark while the Phoenix Soul flashed with red light. "Zoom", carrying her pretty figure, it rised into the sky, much faster than before.

Xavion was surprised. He knew this xiao shimei was energetic. The opportunity to come outside is rare, unlike the Mount Jadeon which has many restriction. Everytime when she came out, she often flew around freely. Surin was worrying about this and have talked to her daughter about this couple times already. Before they departed this morning, Surin also reminded Xavion to watch her.

But Hidi grew up under everyone's love. Xavion's word can't get into her ears, how can he watch her. Out of choice, Xavion could only increase his speed to catch up.

Shaw Danon, He Dazhi and others also drove their espers and followed closely behind. In a blink of an eye, they were distant away from the people of Dragon Head Peak and Bamboo Height.

Shaw Danon increased his speed and caught up to Hidi. He peered at her from one yard away. Hidi's face was filled with smile and excitement. She was in red clothes, matching her Phoenix Soul, it was very pretty.

Among the howl of the wind, there was a joyful laughter from Hidi. Shaw Danon's heart was heated as he heard it.

"Xiao Shidi!" Suddenly the voice of Xavion issued.

Shaw Danon quickly turned his head around, asked: "What's the matter, Da Shixiong?"

Xavion was driving his giant sword, smiling: "Xiao Shidi, can't imagine your cultivation improved so fast, reaching this degree in such a short time."

Shaw Danon was grateful: "Da Shixiong, it is because of your teaching."

Xavion shook his head, smiled: "I am not worthy to take this credit. Look at what just happened, you flew much faster than me, fourth, and sixth."

Shaw Danon now discovered, he had increased his speed to catch up to Hidi and did not notice he had flown past the three shixions. But Xavion and He Dazhi were calm, if they are really going to fly, they are not going to be worse than him.

Shaw Danon blushed, said: “Da Shixiong, I.....”

He was only half finish, Hidi had turned her head. Filled with smile, looking at Shaw Danon, happily shouted: “Xiao Fan, flying like this is comfortable right? Look, how high the sky is, how blue it is?”

Shaw Danon turned his head to toward her, took a deep breath, and smiled.

The sky was clear blue, allowing one to relax. But, how can this able to compare to a smile of a beloved girl?

Hidi flew against the wind, her hair flew. Above them there was clear blue sky, below them there was green mountain, at far there was a boundless deep blue ocean. Seeing it from far, the sky and ocean became one.

This painting like landscape was very beautiful. Hidi was in a good mood. She smiled then moved closer to him. Seeing Hidi suddenly flew near him, Shaw Danon looked at her, said: “Shijie, what it is?”

Hidi smiled: “Xiao Fan, do you still remember the time when we caught Ashh?”

Shaw Danon was a little confused: “Yes, what it is?”

Hidi reached out her hand, grabbed his arm, smiled: “Let’s go!”

Shaw Danon was puzzled, then Hidi's esper suddenly sunk, charged downward. Shaw Danon hurriedly decended his esper and followed her. Behind them, Xavion and others were quite far away and did not hear their conversation. They were unawared and with the speed of the espers, they went pass them.

The three of them immediately halted. Turned around, they saw the xiao shimei and xiao shidi flew into the mountain forest below them. They shook their heads and smiled bitterly, then quickly followed them. The order from the masters is to search for the Felkin remainers, searching in the forest is just the same. However, the distant between them and Shaw Danon and Hidi has increased.

Shaw Danon followed Hidi closely. Soon they reached the forest, Hidi laughed, turned her head said: "Xiao Fan, hurry!"

After that, Phoenix Soul spun around like a snake under her pretty figure. Flashed with red light and flew into the forest. Shaw Danon's blood boiled as he was watching the red figure before him. Throwing away other thought, he flew straight downward.

The forest on this hill is very much the same as others on Billows, ancient woods are everywhere, towering straight to the sky. On the ground, there are also a lot of bushes and brambles, difficult to a place to land.

Once the two of them entered the forest, the surrounding turned quiet immediately. There is no more screaming of the wind next to their ears. Fresh smile of the woods hit against their faces. With smile on her face, Hidi stood on Phoenix Soul, traveled swiftly among countless of woods in this ancient forest.

Shaw Danon watched the back of the beautiful red figure that flew swiftly between the thick leaves, accompanied by the sharp whistle of the wind, she was like the most beautiful fairy in the world, danced the most beautiful posture in this wonderland, ancient forest, the world filled with the joyful cheer of the leaves.

That figure, like lightning, like light, very close to the trunk of the giant tree. It seemed extremely dangerous, but with the gentle grace, it softly slide pass, without being touched.

That figure, like imagination, like dream, also like the youth time, the cheerful laughter spread across the green mountain and water.

He opened his arms with a grin. The fire stick was shining with green light, carrying him, chasing her, flying across this ancient and silent forest.

Just like, this moment, will stay like this, and never end.....

※ ※ ※

The sky had became gloomy. The clouds got thicker.

Shaw Danon took back his eyes, thinking that the ocean is very different than the Central Plain, it was clear sunny day a moment ago, now it had turned cloudy.

He and Hidi had flew in the thick forest for long time, but still couldn't find the

people of Felkin. Finally they arrived at a small mountain ridge. Hidi spotted a small stream below them, additionally they had flew for the entire morning, so she and Shaw Danon landed and now they were washing their faces with the stream water.

The stream meander through the ancient forest. The water was shallow and clear. There are many round cobblestones in the water, very pretty under the glow of the clear wave of water. On the sides of the stream there was sand and rocks, farther away was thick forest. Looking at it from here, the forest seemed endless.

“Xiao Fan.” Hidi suddenly called. Shaw Danon turned to her, discovered that Hidi had found a very pretty stone in the water while she was washing her face. She showed it to Shaw Danon joyfully said: “Is this stone pretty?”

Shaw Danon took a glance at the stone. The stone was only about the size of a thumb, with three colors strips revolved neatly around it like ribbons, really is pretty. He smiled, lifted his head and looked at Hidi, was about to answer, but he couldn't say anything.

That familiar, beautiful, smiling face was looking at him. The water still had not wiped away from her face after the wash. A crystal drop of water slipped down from her white face with gentleness, and yearned not to leave from her soft lips. And finally with a touching gracefulness, softly fell off.

And at that pair of bright eyes, several water drops also formed on her long eye lashes, just like tears, and also similar to the white pear flower after rain, stunning and touching.

Hidi scolded: “Weren't I asking you?”

Shaw Danon awoke: "What?"

Hidi showed the stone in front of his eyes, said: "Pretty?"

Shaw Danon took a deep breath, quietly, but it was like the voice came from his deepest soul, said: "Very pretty!"

Hidi nodded with a smile, and took out a silk cloth, cleaned the water off from the face then carefully rubbed the stone, putted it into her clothes. After that, she turned to Shaw Danon with the most beautiful smile in his eyes, said: "When we return, I will give this stone to Brother Qi, he is going to be very glad!"

The sky of Billows Hill seemed darkened even more at this moment.

Shaw Danon stood there, frozen and static, his head was lowered.

Hidi walked for a few steps. then discovered there was no sound behind her. She turned around and saw Shaw Danon was still standing there, not moving, she said with a little astonishment: "Xiao Fan, hurry!"

Shaw Danon slowly lifted his head. His face slowly, slowly showed a smile, but strangely, his lips were trembling, said softly: "Shijie, we are going too fast, why don't we wait for Da Shixiong and others!"

Hidi snorted, said unconcernedly: "Don't bother with them, let's follow this stream! Going to the upstream directly, see if there are any Felkin theives,

and-" She covered her mouth and laughed: "And see if there are more beautiful stones."

What is it, that is like the feeling of a body burning?

What is it, that has the impulsion like heaven howl?

So the nether flame of demon burning in the heart, burning down every single soul and spirit inside the body.

He lowered his head, with his voice became choked, he said quietly: "Okay."

※ ※ ※

Phoenix Soul tied around her waist, became every more beautiful combined with her red figure. The two of them had walked for half an hour along this small stream.

On the way, Hidi was relaxed, looking at everywhere, while Shaw Danon quietly followed behind her.

This stream did not seem to be large, the length was not short. Walked for a long time, they still haven't find the head of the stream. In front of them it was another small mountain, the stream was coming from that mountain.

Walking for the entire day, Hidi was a little tired. She said to Shaw Danon: "Xiao Fan, it is not early. We will check the mountain stream, if still no discovery, we will return."

Shaw Danon nodded quietly.

Hidi took a look at this xiao shidi, she was a little puzzled, but she did not mind it and continued walking.

The two of them soon reached the turn of the stream. They were surprised. Behind the stone wall, it was an extremely large cave, reached the height of ten yards. The stream was came from this cave. Because the stone wall had blocked their view, not to mention flying in the air, they could not see the cave if they were just a little farther away. The cave was very secret.

Hidi frowned, said to Shaw Danon: "Do we need to go in there and check?"

Shaw Danon took a glance at the cave. Except for some light at the cave entrance, it was pitch dark inside, his heart was uneasy.

These days, especially after he left the mountain, he went into two caves. One was Cave of Fangs at Kangsong Mountain, another one was Dark Drake Cave outside the Laguna Collective, both did not give him good impression. Now seeing this cave, it was natural for him to hate it. Addition he was in a very bad mood, he said: "Shijie, I think it does not seem to be anyone living in here, why don't we return?"

Hidi nodded, said: "Okay! That's what I thought also, let's-"

When she was half finished, wind piercing sound suddenly came from above their heads. Just a moment, there were a lot of people flying to their direction.

Shaw Danon and Hidi immediately raised their heads, then their faces quickly turned pale. Based on the dressing of the people in the sky, they were the Felkin. As for the numbers, they were no less than couple dozens.

The two were terrified. Hidi knew there were many powerful people in the Felkin. If they escape through flying, it will be hard for them to get away. In this dangerous situation, they can only take a risky path. She pulled Shaw Danon's hand and went into the dark cave.

Darkness swallowed their figures.

Soon after, the Felkin heretics landed near the mountain stream. After that, one of them lightened up the torch. Everyone entered the cave.

Shaw Danon and Hidi who were hiding near the entrance could only went deeper into the cave. Both of their hearts were hanging in mid-air. The difference of strength between the two sides was too wide, if they are discovered, they have no power to offer resistance.

Fortunately the Felkin were in high number, and did not expect there could be anyone from the Righteous to be inside the cave, their footsteps and chatting have covered the two's sound of movement.

The empty ground in the center of the cave has brightened up.

Shaw Danon and Hidi stopped, hid in deeper place where the light could not reach, and held their breath.

Shaw Danon took a peer and saw the Felkin formed a semi-circle, each of them found themselves a large rock to sit on. Some rough people just sat on the ground.

The Felkin followers were very different than the Righteous. There were many with strange appearance. Cynical Dialectian who Shaw Danon has a very strong impression was also sitting among them. Next to him were Nian Boss, Liu Gao, Lin Feng and the unknown name woman.

Other than that, there was a unfamiliar young man standing behind them, Shaw Danon never saw him before.

Hidi suddenly whispered next to his ear: "Xiao Fan, look at the Felkin, seem like they have a lot of factions?"

Shaw Danon's ear itched, but did not think much about it. He nodded and took a look. Just like Hidi said, the Felkin roughly formed a semi-circle and faced the same direction, but they were sitting in groups. The difference of factions was very clear.

At this moment, a deep voice said: "Everyone, please quiet for a moment."

The Felkin quiet down, seemed like the owner of this voice has high authority.

Shaw Danon was a bit far away, could not distinguish who's voice is it. He reached out his neck, and looked at the scene. Then he felt movement next to him, Hidi was also popping her head out.

The torch quiet burning on the stone wall. Suddenly a dark skin tall man rose up, facing to that direction, said loudly: “Herald, this time ‘Vim’ gathered us at this desolated island, saying there is a rare beast ‘Mindrot Menance’ that appear every three-thousands years. But searching for it for so many days, there is no single cow hair, yet draw those annoying Righteous to here, bothering us. May I ask what should we do?”

Shaw Danon startled, asked Hidi quietly: “What is Mindro Menance?”

Hidi thought for a moment, then shook her head: “I don’t know either.”

The two looked at the open ground again. With a person started it, many people began to agree. Cynical Dialectian’s cultivation was not high, but his temper was the worst, and had the loudest voice.

“Correct, ‘Master Vim’, he senior highness, of’ course no need to worry about such small matter. But asking us to suffer here without reason, why is that. At least need to give me an explanation?”

Nian Boss noticed he was being rude and about to pull him to quiet him.

At this moment, when everyone was discussing, suddenly there was a sweet but yet cold woman voice: “Do you really want to know the reason?”

When this voice issued, Shaw Danon was shocked, and his body reached out a little. Under the shining of the torch, the place where the Felkins were facing, a girl in green dress slowly rose up.

It was Bilu.

Chapter 64 Master Vim

Put the surprise Shaw Danon had when he saw Bilu aside, the lousy Felkins immediately quiet down when Bilu spoke. Even the fearless Cynical Dialectian did not make any sound at this moment.

All the sudden, no one dare to speak to her. But after a moment, someone coughed, then said slowly: "Miss Bilu, I have a few words, don't know should I say it?"

Shaw Danon looked at that direction and saw the person who just spoke was the unfamiliar young man that stood behind Nian Boss. Nian Boss and others were surprised, seemed they did not expect that young man would spoke.

Nian Boss frowned tightly, said quietly to that young man: "Xiao Zhou, is there a place for you to speak in here?"

Bilu took a glance at that young man, did not recognize him, and asked Nian Boss: "Who is he?"

Nian Boss immediately made a smiling face: "He is a new recruit of our Bloodforger. Surname is Zhou, name is Cai."

Bilu snorted: “Doesn’t matter, allow him to speak.”

That Xiao Zhou young man showed no sign of frightened. He came out from the crowd, said calmly: “Miss Bilu, everyone here knows, you are ‘Master Vim’'s beloved daughter, so everyone respect you. Master Vim summoned us to here to find Mindrot Menance, we are bounden to come here. But-” He paused, a kind smile appeared on his face, but his tone became cold: “But the Mindrot Menance is not yet to be found, while the Righteous’ number is increasing, even two out of the seven heads of Jadeon have came, we are not their opponent. At this situation, Vim still let us work blindly without explanation, I am fear some of our friends may ask, are the Vim planning to use the Righteous to eliminate us?”

Everyone rose into discussion. Several people who were behind Bilu stood up, it is appeared they were the Vim disciples. Except for the Vim, the Felkin had no intention to criticize this young man after the surprise, but turned to Bilu with alert. The sound of discussion was rosing up.

Shaw Danon couldn’t help but felt worry for Bilu, at the same time he thought about what the young man said. They were all Felkin, but there were many factions, perhaps the Vim-

As he was thinking, Bilu said coldly: “Who are you, dare to sow discord here!”

Xiao Zhou smiled, facing this powerful, beautiful girl, he still had no sign of fear, said lightly: “I am only a unknown child, joined the holy faction out of admiration. Compare to Miss Bilu, it is the difference of sky and earth. But now the Righteous are waiting for a chance to kill us, while Vim is one of the four major factions, at this situation they are our leader. But if they leave us at this

dangerous spot without concern, isn't it really unjustifiable?"

Even Shaw Danon could feel it. Although this Xiao Zhou spoke in a kind tone, each words are aiming at the Vim, meaning to stir up the tension is obvious, but his intention was remain in question. Seeing the surprised look of Nian Boss, it seemed he is not under the Bloodforgers' control.

Other Felkins were even more agitated, their voice was getting louder, and their faces showed hostility to the Vims. Bilu frowned, then took a step backward, turned her head and quickly talked to the person behind her.

Shaw Danon looked at that direction. But the light of the torch was not so bright. A large man was next to Bilu, and behind the large man, it seemed there was a middle-aged man standing. However, the place he was standing was dark and covered by the large man, Shaw Danon could not see his face.

Bilu talked to that person, then turned her head and took a step forward, coldly glanced at the crowd.

Her beautiful face was as cold as ice and frost. Under the golden light of the burning torch, she had a sorrow and lonely beauty.

The talking quickly died down, everybody's eyes fixed on her.

"Everyone," Her voice resounded in the cave: "Vim is like everyone, we are all disciple of the holy faction, warship Nether Mother and Heaven Vidyaraja, no matter how strong we Vim are, we will never commit such act that against our faction. So please rest assure."

After this being announced, most of the Felkins were relaxed. Nian Boss let out a long breath, then quickly step forth and pulled Xiao Zhou, whispered: “Have you said enough already?”

Xiao Zhou smiled to him, then said loudly: “If that is so, we are more rested. But Miss Bilu, please explain about Mindrot Menance. If we really can’t find Mindrot Menance, then better allow us leave soon. Otherwise even the Vim has no intention to harm us, we will die in the hand of the Righteous.”

Bilu and other Vims glared at him. But Xiao Zhou was still smiling, did not know he was in great trouble. Other Felkins also shouted:

“Correct!”

“Exactly, Miss Bilu please give us an explanation!”

“.....”

When the noise got quieted by a little, Bilu removed her eyes from Xiao Zhou. She knew this isn’t the time for arguing. She said: “Everyone, even if he did not mention it, we Vim will still give you guys an explanation. Actually this time we came to Billow Hills is for—”

“Boom—”

The entire cave was suddenly shaking. Shaw Danon and Hidi staggered. The Felkins were very surprised, some of them shouted.

“What was that?”

“Earthquake?”

But soon, they got their answer. The wind howled at the cave entrance. A powerful voice went into the cave like thunder roaring against their ears: “Felkin theives, hurry come out and receive your death!”

Everyone were terrified. Shaw Danon and Hidi exchanged a glance, they were glad that it was Head of Dragon Head Peak, Master Vasp Caelo’s voice.

Shaw Danon’s heart was filled with admiration. There was a great distance from the entrance to here, but Master Vasp Caelo’s voice was very clear and wall shaking. This level of cultivation was far superior than his.

The Felkins looked at each other, soon someone screamed out: “This place is so well hidden, how can they find it?”

Then Xiao Zhou yelled: “Miss Bilu, this is a critical situation. We were here because the Vim gathered our allies to Billows Hills. Now we meet such great danger, what should we do?”

The people also said: “Correct, Miss Bilu say something!”

Bilu took a deep breath, while the sound of piercing wind issued wave after wave at the outside of the cave. It appeared the people from Righteous were

coming here after they heard the news. The color of Bilu's face darkened. She took a step forward, said: "Everyone, I do not know how the Righteous knows we are here. I, as Master Vim's only daughter, also trapped here in this dangerous situation. Is anyone still suspect us?"

Most people quiet down. Then the tall man next to Bilu step forth, said in a deep voice: "Everyone, there is a great treat before us, why don't we work together as one and resist the enemy? With our strength combined, we may not lose to those hypocrite outside!"

Everyone nodded. Actually at this moment, there was no other choice. Although the cave is large, it is a dead end, no other exit. The Felkins got ready and encouraged themselves, then rushed out at once.

Soon, the sound of espers crushing and people cursing filled outside. The originally crowded cave only left with Bilu from Vim and the mysterious man who stood in the shadow.

Shaw Danon was glad but at the same time worried for Bilu. He knew she is a heretic from Felkin, they can never be walked on the same path. However, they experienced life and death together for several times during the journey. He had develop a different feeling for this obstinate girl.

Bilu frowned tightly. When she was about to turn her head and talk to the man in the shadow, her eyes caught that there was still another person standing alone here and did not confront the enemy. It was Xiao Zhou. Reason why he was left behind was unknown.

Xiao Zhou had fanned the people to go against the Vim, surely Bilu would not have any good impression on him. Her face immediately darkened, smiled

coldly: “You are not helping your allies but stay here, what are you planning?”

Xiao Zhou’s face was still remaining calm, could not see the sign of fear when facing the threat of Righteous. He smiled: “I am just here to see, are the Vim really going to advance with the worthless pawn like us, or letting us to be the ashes under the cannon?”

Bilu’s face froze, was about to argue, the man in the shadow suddenly said: “You are not under our holy faction, who are you?”

Bilu was surprised. Xiao Zhou was also shocked. His eyes glanced at the shadow, his eyes shot out alert, and said in a deep tone: “Who is this person, how can you say thing like this? I am a disciple of the Bloodforger. Is it because I spoke out against you, you guys are going to slander me?”

Shaw Danon and Hidi were also surprised. They did not expect it will turn out like this. But there was another question in Shaw Danon’s mind. The man in the shadow, his voice was familiar, but he could not remember where he heard it.

The man who stood in the shadow said lightly: “The Bloodforger was the leader of our holy faction eight hundreds years ago without doubt. But now they were already weakened. With your potential and cultivation, Nian Boss is far behind you, how can he adopt you as disciple? If he really has this ability, the Bloodforger will already come back again.”

Xiao Zhou snorted: “You haven’t seen me fight, how do you know my level of cultivation?”

That person seemed smiled: “To know your level of cultivation, is there a

need to see you fight? When the old Taoist Vasp Cealo used 'Pure Essence' to channel his voice into the rocks, shocking the vein of the mountain. His intention was to terrify us. The one that were less cultivated will have their souls shocked, and unable to stay steady, Nian Boss was also one of them. But you stood there like nothing happened, this level of cultivation was obvious, how hard is that to see through it?"

The color of Xiao Zhou's face changed. He looked at the man in the shadow for a while, then said: "Can't imagine Felkin really is hiding skilled people inside. Who are you, sir?"

Bilu shouted, flew in mid-air, said angrily: "Die!"

All in a suddenly, white light flashed with soft fragrance in the dark cave. The white flowers danced in front of Bilu like flying snow. However, even with the brightness of the flowers, it could not shine at the man in the shadow. They still could not see his face.

Xiao Zhou did not react slowly. He took a step back and grabbed at the empty air. After a long "clang~~~~", he pulled out a glaring celestial sword. The most eye catching part was the seven brilliant stars that carved on the bright sword.

"Huh?" The man in the shadow mumbled: "'Nava Sword'!" (Note 1)

When he was speaking, Bilu and Xiao Zhou were already battling in mid-air. With the flower and sword flying across, the large cave seemed shrank.

Shaw Danon could guess the man named Xiao Zhou was probably from Righteous, he was a bit worry for him. But when he was watching the fight, his

eyes always peered at Bilu. His heart was in contradiction. He only wished the fight could result as a drew quickly and allow Bilu to escape.

Hidi suddenly whispered: “That man Xiao Zhou is probably a disciple from Jadeon.”

Shaw Danon was surprised, said: “What, you know him?”

Hidi shook her head, took a glance at the fight, then said: “I heard mother mentioned about it before, Nava Sword is a famous divined sword in the main house Peak of Widows. Dayol Shen Shibo used it before. Later I heard it was given to-”

Before she finished, Bilu shouted. Heartending Flower spread out and filled the entire cave with shining white flowers. And like sharpened wall of light, it crushed at Xiao Zhou.

Shaw Danon had seen Bilu casted this magic before. He knew the power of it. He couldn't help but felt worry for Xiao Zhou.

Xiao Zhou frowned, and dashed a yard backward. His right hand held the incantation mark while his left hand held his right wrist. It was like holding thousand tons of energy, but also like tracing wild grass. The fingers created air piercing sound, and drew a Taichi just in a blink of an eye.

When Shaw Danon and Hidi saw it. There was no more question. Xiao Zhou is a Jadeon disciple. The magic he used was Jadeon's Pure Essence!

Instantly, the Nava Sword charged upward and shined brightly. It stood on the center of the Taichi. After a second, Nava Sword shot out while the Taichi's aura circled around it, increased its momentum.

Then, the two espers crushed on each others in mid-air.

“Boom.....”

The flare that caused by the crush of the two espers spread in the cave. The stone cave could not withstand the power hit, some rocks began to fall down.

Shaw Danon and Hidi could also feel the shaking of the surrounding. They almost fell on the ground. His heart was filled with admiration for Xiao Zhou's cultivation on Pure Essence, this level of cultivation is stronger than those Jadeon disciples he had met.

Bilu's wall of white light dispelled. Her face was a bit pale, appeared to be in disadvantage. Shaw Danon knew her for a while. His heart felt terrible, and he knew Bilu will not stop so easily. Just as he thought, anger flashed on Bilu's face. She retrieved Heartending Flower, while her hand reached to her waist, holding a pretty, golden bell.

Xiao Zhou frowned, facing it cautiously. The girl who stood before him was young, but her cultivation was far out of his expectation. He used most of his strength, but it could only hurt her a little. Base on what she is doing, it seemed like she had a even more powerful esper. And what he fear the most was the man that stood in silently in shadow, whom power was unpredictable.

The clear bell rang in this cave that filled with killing, very inconsistent with the picture. Bilu lift into the air. Both hands waved softly. The golden bell slowly flew before her, sounding melodiously.

Shaw Danon looked at the beautiful girl who stood in mid-air. Her arms were soft as if there were no bones. The golden bell spinned slowly between her hands.

“Ding, ding, ding”

Xiao Zhou was surprised that he was spellbound by the ringing and forgot he was at the edge of life and death. If not because of his many years of cultivation, his would already lost his mind. This small bell has the ability to attract one’s soul.

At that moment of hesitation, an anger rose in his mind. He was surprised and would not listen to it any longer. He shouted: “Die devil!”

His shout shook the walls, covered the ringing of the bell, while Nava Sword shot out like lighting!

Bilu’s paled face appeared to be a bit tired, but she did not retreat when she saw the Nava Sword was coming. Her right fingers flicked. The “Lupin Bell” sent forth and crushed with the Nava Sword.

Xiao Zhou’s body was shocked. It was like the music of demon was sent from the Nava Sword and pierced through his ears.

Shaw Danon and Hidi were surprised, and about to assist. But Xiao Zhou’s

face suddenly calmed. He shouted. The Nava Sword brightened again and counter attack. Bilu was extremely pale on the other hand. Her eyes were a bit dull, seemed lost her mind and lacked the ability to resist. She was about to be killed by Nava Sword.

Shaw Danon's mind became empty. Without much consideration, he came out, cried: "No-"

Before his word ended, a shadow passed by, after that a purple energy flashed then disappeared.

Xiao Zhou was being hit back. He fell on the ground, fresh blood immediately came out from his mouth. The Nava Sword flew back and stabbed into the solid rock.

Shaw Danon and Hidi were terrified. They dashed to Xiao Zhou. Hidi was about to raise up the Phoenix Soul. However, despite his injury, Xiao Zhou grabbed them, said in a husky voice: "Don't-don't, Zhang Shidi, Tian Shimei, that person's cultivation is too high. You are not his opponent!"

Shaw Danon startled. Hidi already couldn't help but asked: "How do you know our names?"

Xiao Zhou paused, and looked to the front. The two also felt something, they turned and faced Bilu.

A middle-aged man stood in mid-air with his back facing Shaw Danon and others. He helped Bilu to come down, said kindly: "Yao'Er, this Lupin Bell is a divined artifact left by Lady Jinling. Your cultivation is not enough yet, very easy

to get back fire by it. From now on, don't use it lightly!"

Bilu's face returned to normal at this point, she said quietly: "Yes, dad."

Shaw Danon and others were startled. Xiao Zhou seemed got better. He glared at that person's back, said in a low voice: "So you are the archlord of one of the four great Felkin factions-Master Vim?"

That middle-aged man turned around and smiled. They could finally see his face clearly. With his thin eye brows, square face, and scholarly eyes, he looked very different than those fierce and rough Felkin. But Shaw Danon was even more surprised, he said blankly: "You?"

The Master Vim with a middle-aged scholar looking, is the person who told him the secret of the fire stick, below the Kongsang Mountain in a tea stall—Wan Renwang.

Note 1: A Taoist sword that was used by Zhuge Liang during Battle of Chibi. Also a name for a well known sword, "Sword of Dragon Spring", during Zhou Dynasty.

Chapter 65 Worries

Shaw Danon stared at that middle-aged man, who is the greatest enemy of the Righteous. His mind was in chaos. For the past days, he often have a little doubt on his belief, and it was all came from the conversation in the tea stall under Kongsang Mountain that day.

And now, he met the person again. His feeling was very complicated, almost caused him to forget his current situation.

Although he had forgotten, others did not.

Xiao Zhou wiped away the blood from his mouth, managed to stand up, and whispered to Shaw Danon and Hidi: "This person's cultivation is too high. We can not face him directly. I will hold him, you two run!"

Then, he waved his hand. The "Nava Sword" that was inserted into the rock received the summon. It broke away from the stone and returned to his hand.

Master Vim took a look at Xiao Zhou, nodded with a thin smile, and said: "Base on your cultivation, it appears you are the top of the Jadeon disciples. Can't expect there is a talented person like you in Jadeon other than Shaw

Danon. Not bad, not bad!”

Shaw Danon was surprised, but found his shijie Hidi and Xiao Zhou peered at him. His face flushed, don't know what to say for this moment.

Xiao Zhou took a deep breath, and took a step forward. The Nava Sword in his hand brightened. However, Master Vim made no move, he only stood there and smiled at them. Xiao Zhou knew this person is the toughest enemy he had met in his entire life. But there were shidi and shimei behind him. He could not run away from the battle. He could only hope he can hold him, allow his faction members to escape.

Unexpectedly, when he tried to channel his energy, the blood in his chest rose. He couldn't hold it anymore, and spew out a mouthful of blood.

Shaw Danon and Hidi were surprised. They quickly supported him. Xiao Zhou face was pale. He knew the hit that Master Vim did to him had shocked his inter-organ, meridian was injured, therefore he could no longer cast any spells. He was frightened. One is that he knew he is in a hopeless situation, two is that he was worrying about the high cultivation of Master Vim that was shocking, the harm that he may do to the Righteous is hard to predetermine.

Master Vim glanced at him, said: “You force yourself to continue fighting, is it that you want to hold me for a while and allow the other two to escape?”

Xiao Zhou snorted and did not answer. Hidi stood up and blocked before him, said angrily: “Evil heretic, don't think you can be complacent just because your cultivation is high, I am not fear you!”

Shawn Danon was surprised. Master Vim could injury Xiao Zhou severely with one move. Anyone could see his cultivation is extremely high. Three of them add together may not be his opponent. Seeing Hidi's fearless looking, he was a bit worried and grabbed her, signalled Hidi not to be rush.

Before Hidi react, this action was already in Master Vim and Bilu's eyes. Bilu's face darkened, snorted, glanced at Hidi then Shaw Danon. She spoke: "Shaw Danon, is this she your shijie Hidi you kept talking about?"

Hidi and Xiao Zhou were both surprised. Xiao Zhou frowned, said: "Zhang Shidi, you know this pair of father and daughter?"

Shaw Danon was quiet for a while, then said: "Yes."

At this moment, Hidi suddenly cried out: "Ah! I recongize her. You are the devil who sneak into our place that night, then was chased you to an island. You were saying you are looking for a person name Xiaofan....."

Then she stopped, her eyes glared at Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon's heart was terrible. This situation is what he have been fear of. Now it really appeared, he did not know how to deal with it.

Master Vim was standing there, watching Shaw Danon's complicated look. He still smiled and said: "Mister Zhang, after the talk below the Kongsang Mountain, how are you these days?"

Shaw Danon's mind was distracted, and ignored what he said. Xiao Zhou frowned, he was puzzled. Seeing the favor that Master Vim and Bilu have

toward Zhang Shidi, their relationship is probably not simply. But Jadeon's rule is very strict, getting into any relationship with the Felkin is furthermore forbidden. But he did not know what are their relationship, if it violated the rule, then it will be far from good.

But this is not the time for interrogation. The three of them were in a hopeless situation. Xiao Zhou managed to focus his mind, and turned to Master Vim, about to speak. However, when Master Vim saw him, he spoke first: "You forced yourself to channel the vigor and injected the spirit into Nava Sword. Are you trying to use your remaining strength to hold me and allow your faction members to escape?"

Xiao Zhou was shocked. His face was dead as ashes. He did not expect Master Vim can be that sharp minded. With his cultivation, plus his awareness, Xiao Zhou and his friends will not survive.

But Master Vim smiled: "You don't need to feel hopeless, I have no intention to make it difficult for you."

"What?" Xiao Zhou and Hidi were confused. Shaw Danon also looked at him with surprise.

Master Vim looked at Bilu, then at Shaw Danon, he smiled: "Mister Zhang, that day in Kongsang Mountain's Forsaken Abyss, you showed true love to Yao'Er and experienced life and death together....."

The color of Shaw Danon's face already changed. Xiao Zhou and Hidi were also looking at him with weird eyes. He was rushed and said: "You-you are lying....."

At this moment, Shaw Danon felt the eyes of Bilu. But in her pair of bright eyes, it was hidden with sadness. He suddenly recalled the stormy night with the heaven and earth raging, and only she alone stayed with him. His heart softened and unable to continue.

Master Vim continued: "That day you unlocked Yao'Er, solved the knot between us. We owe you a gratitude." He smiled: "Today it will let three of you go as a respect to you. But when you return to Jadeon, you will be punished by those unreasoning old fools, why don't you join my Holy Faction. I will value you, and you can also be together with Yao'Er, isn't that?"

"Shut up!" It was a shout from Shaw Danon. He couldn't bear it anymore. He pointed at Master Vim and shouted: "Come kill me! Even if I am to die, I will never join your Felkin!"

Hidi was relieved, she clapped: "Nice one, Xiaofan."

But Xiao Zhou was only glanced at Shaw Danon lightly. His eyebrows were still locked.

Master Vim shook his head, smiled: "Anyway, just let you decide. Long time ahead of us, you can consider it slowly!"

Finished, he took Bilu and flew out of the cave.

Bilu turned her head and looked at Shaw Danon before she left. Seeing her eyes, Shaw Danon's angry heart filled hazy confusion.

Xiao Zhou took notice of Shaw Danon's reaction. His eyebrows frowned tighter.

Master Vim and his daughter soon vanished in the darkness of the cave. A moment later, the noise outside rose suddenly. It seemed the Righteous have been assaulted.

After that, the wind whistled with air piercing sound, seemed like many people were flying into the sky.

Master Vasp Caelo's powerful voice shook the surround, said: "Who are you, sir. With the cultivation this high, why don't you dare to come down and fight this Taoist?"

This is obviously saying to Master Vim. But with the wind howling and no body answering, Master Vim and Bilu were already long gone.

The cave was also quiet. Hidi noticed Xiao Zhou's face was pale, she asked concernly: "Zhou Shixiong, are you alright! Um, which house are you from?"

Shaw Danon saw Xiao Zhou was about to fall, he also came and supported him. Xiao Zhou glanced at him. Shaw Danon had an uncomfortable feeling and lowered his head.

Xiao Zhou sighed lightly, and smiled to them: "You don't need to call me Zhou Shixiong. That is the fake name that I used for mixing into the Felkin. My surname is not Zhou."

Hidi: “Ah, then you are.....”

Xiao Zhou smiled, but then eyebrows jumped, it seemed because of his wound. He immediately returned normal. He smiled: “I am disciple under the Jadeon house of Peak of Widows, Master Doyal Shen. Surname Xiao (Note 1), name Yicai.”

“What, you are Enu, Xiao Shixiong?”

Xiao Zhou, who is also Enu, nodded with a smile.

Shaw Danon and Hidi looked at each others. They have been hearing this name for a long time.

※ ※ ※

The night was dark. Countless of bright stars were sparkling above the Billows Hill, shining the world.

In a well hidden place, Master Vim came out slowly. Bilu was standing lonely on the hill, staring at the east of Billows.

That place is where the Righteous stays.

Master Vim sighed, and went behind her, said: “Yao’Er, the night is cold, you need to be careful of your health.”

Bilu turned around quietly, forced a smile: “Yes, thank you, dad.”

Master Vim asked: “You are thinking of that boy name Shaw Danon?”

Bilu blushed, but did not say anything.

Master Vim kindly patted his daughter’s shoulder, took two steps forward, said: “Today when I saw him, I discovered that his cultivation have been improved after going into Dark Drake Cave with you.”

Bilu startled, then said gladly: “Really?”

Master Vim nodded: “I guess it is because he has some understanding after reading the first volume of ‘Libruis’.” Then he paused and smiled: “By the way, the Libruis Volume One Summary that you gave me from Blooddrops Cave, it benefited me a lot in cultivation after reading it.”

Bilu said happily: “Really?”

Master Vim nodded: “Correct. Libruis has a total of four volumes. Legend said there is the fifth one, but no one have read it. Since ancient time, our Holy Faction has four volumes. Unfortunately, most were lost. We Vim can have the glory of today, it is thank to the previous Master Vim three hundreds years ago of obtaining the Libruis Second Volume.”

He paused for a moment, then said: “But the writing of the Second Volume is mysterious and difficult even though it contains deep cultivation. It is because the crucial part of the incantation is following right after the Summary of the First Volume. That is why for several hundred years, we Vim can only share the

world with Lupin, Longevity, and Venom. But from now on, heh heh.....”

Bilu smiled: “Then I have to congratulate dad.”

Vim smiled and nodded: “You have rendered us a great help. Sent you to Kongsang Mountain’s Bloodforger is originally a training, but also see if there is any artifact left behind by senior Elder Blackheart. However I did not expect you will bring back the Libruis. This is much better than any espers.”

Bilu smiled, but her face soon darkened.

Master Vim watched his daughter for a while, then laughed all the sudden.

Bilu blushed, scolded: “Dad.....”

Master Vim smiled and shook his head: “Why are you worrying?”

Bilu bit her teeth, said: “Dad, you saw it today, too. How Shaw Danon, that bastard, to his shijie, I am not only afraid.....”

Master Vim said: “Afraid what, afraid that he has no feeling for you?”

Bilu lowered her head.

Master Vim said lightly: “My thought is different than yours.”

Bilu was surprised, said: “Dad, what did you say?”

Master Vim said: “Base on what I have seen today, Shaw Danon really care about his shijie. But at the critical moment in the fight between you and Xiao Zhou, he couldn’t control himself and came out shouted without considering his own safety. Just with that, and also experiencing life and death together with you during his journey, maybe himself not even know, your place in his heart is no less than his shijie.”

Bilu blushed again. It was even more charming under the color of the night. There was a happiness in her eyes that unable to conceal.

Master Vim stroked through her hair, the love on his face was undoubtable, then he said: “However, don’t get happy so early. First of all, the different of factions is the rift that he can not overcome; moreover, the elders in Jadeon will not allow him to have any feeling toward you. So today before I left, I proposely make the relation between you two to be a bit ambiguous. I see that Xiao Zhou’s position in Jadeon is quite high. With him to bring the word back, the Jadeon must suspect Shaw Danon. Therefore, his chance of seeking refuge on us is higher.”

Finished, he seemed he was very proud of what he done and laughed.

Bilu also smiled, but soon taken back and quietly lowered her head.

Master Vim frowned: “What is it?”

Bilu hesitated, then said softly: “I, I am worry that Xiaofan will need to suffer

again!”

Master Vim snorted: “If it is not sharpened, how do you know the sword is sharp! If he can’t withstand such little suffering, not to mention that I will be worry to hand you over to him, even if he join my faction, I won’t be value him!”

Bilu nodded slowly, but somehow, she was still a little worried. She looked toward the east, but only saw the sea of woods under the sky that blocked her view.

The sudden appearance of Enu raised a disturbance within the Jadeon. Master Vasp Caelo and Tian Bolis were both surprised and delighted. From Enu, they found out the Felkins were searching for a celestial beast called “Mindrot Menance”, and also surprised to find out archlord of one of the four great Felkin factions, Master Vim, was also here.

Master Vasp Caelo nodded slowly, said dignifiedly: “So that person is the new Master Vim of the Felkin, really is cultivated highly.”

Tian Bolis frowned, said: “Yicai, how did you get into the Felkin?”

Enu smiled: “That day I followed master’s order to sneak into Kongsang Mountain to investigate the Felkin, and found the remainers of the Felkin’s sect Bloodforger were having activity. But after many investigation, the remainers of the Bloodforger are not great enemies. They mentioned about their Holy Faction, it seemed the Felkin is about to make a big move. To seek the answer, I called myself Xiao Zhou. And because it was also the time they are recruiting, they saw me quite talented, I was easily got into the Felkin.”

There, with a little apology, he said to Tian Bolis: “But Tian Shishu, that day when Zhang Shidi and Bamboo Height’s Anan Lu Shimei fell into Forsaken Abyss, I was assigned to the group against Skysong’s Fazzan Shixiong. I was unable to help, I am really sorry. But fortunately Zhang Shidi have a strong life, he is safe. My heart can be relieved.”

Tian Bolis smiled: “Doesn’t matter, it can’t blame on you. You don’t need to be worried.”

Master Vasp Caelo snorted.

Tian Bolis ignored him.

Master Vasp Caelo said to Enu: “But Yicai Shizhi, this move is too dangerous. You know those Felkin theives are all dangerous and cunning. If something happens to you, we don’t know what to report to Head Shixiong.”

Tian Bolis also nodded: “Exactly, before we left, Head Shixiong was quite worrying about you since he lost track of you for several months. He asked us privately that we need to pay attention to your track!”

Enu’s face darkened a little, shook his head, said: “Alas! It is my fault to cause master to worry.”

Master Vasp Caelo smiled: “Don’t think too much, this time you made a great achievement. After we clean up the Felkin’s remainers, when we return, Head Shixiong will not punish you, or maybe he will even reward you?”

Enu blushed: “Vasp Caelo Shishu, you are kidding.”

Tian Bolis said lightly: “This is no kidding. You have provided us a big help. But Yicai, don’t do thing that dangerous again. Head Shixiong very value you. After he ascend, the position of the Faction Head is most likely pass on to you. You are burdened with important duty, so don’t be reckless again.”

Enu said solemnly: “Yes, thank you for the teaching from Vasp Caelo Shishu and Tian Shishu.”

Master Vasp Caelo nodded: “Then that is it! I see that you are tired, you should rest early! Fortunately your wound did not harm your root of your meridian, otherwise it will be troubling.”

Seeing Master Vasp Caelo and Tian Bolis got up, Enu was also about to get up. Tian Bolis stopped him and shook his head: “You are injured and should rest. This is just common manner, and since we are not in Mount Jadeon, just ignore it!”

It was not proper for Enu to defy him, also his body really is tired, he leaned back to the stone wall again, said: “Thank you shishu, then forgive me not escorting you.”

Master Vasp Caelo waved his hand, and walked to the outside with Tian Bolis. When they reached the entrance, Enu suddenly called: “Tian Shishu.”

Tian Bolis startled, then turned around, asked: “What is it?”

Enu leaned on the wall, smiled: “Look how forgetfully I am. Last year when I went to Bamboo Peak to visit shishu, Surin Shushi mentioned that she want to

get a 'Large Shell Pearl' from the south east sea coast. I found one when I came to the East Sea. Do you want to have a look?"

Tian Bolis pondered for a moment, then looked at Enu, he smiled: "If you didn't remind me, I would have already forgotten. It is lucky you remember, otherwise when I return to Bamboo Peak, I will be annoyed to death by your Su Shishu."

Then, he went back to Enu. Master Vasp Caelo paused for a moment, but of course he won't ask about the pearl, so he left.

Only Tian Bolis and Enu were remain in the cave.

Tian Bolis was smiling, however, the smile disappeared when he sat in front of Enu. He peered behind, then said lightly: "Your Su Shishu's personality is always calm in the outside and impatient in the inside. She would already come to East Sea to find that Large Shell Pearl a hundred years ago. There is no one here now, what it is that you need to say?"

Enu nodded, said to Tian Bolis: "Tian Shishu have good insight. I keep shishu here is to talk about Shaw Danon Zhang Shidi who is under your house."

Tian Bolis frowned, slightly surprised, he asked: "What about him?"

Enu coughed, and lowered his voice. Tian Bolis leaned forward, listening.

The cave was silent, only the whispering voice softly sounding.

Note 1: The word Xiao here is 萧 as a surname, in first tone, different than young which is 小, in third tone.

Chapter 66 The Past

The atmosphere had turned heavy. Tian Bolis slowly straightened his body, his face was unstable, unable to know what he is thinking.

Enu quiet for a moment, then said: "Tian Shishu, I have been hesitated for quite a while, but it is not good to conceal it from you....."

Tian Bolis took a deep breath, nodded: "Xiao Shizhi, I know what you mean, thank you."

Enu nodded, then thought of something, said: "Tian Shishu, I think that although Zhang Shidi knows Master Vim and his daughter, he doesn't seem fall into the evil, yet. However, the Felkins are cunning, Zhang Shidi is also young, it will be dangerous most likely."

Tian Bolis snorted, his face was cold as frost, said: "That animal, let's wait and see how I punish him!"

Enu glanced at him, said: "Tian Shishu, I have a word, but don't know should I say it....."

Tian Bolis said: “Say it.”

Enu said: “Yes, Tian Shishu, the reason why I talked to you privately about Zhang Shidi is that I hope you can solve this issue well before it gets serious. Vasp Caelo Shishu is in charge of punishment, his temper is also unyielding, if he find out, I am afraid Zhang Shidi—He is your disciple, and you must have spent much effort on him over the past years, if this becomes a huge issue, you and Vasp Caelo Shishu will not take any step back. So—” Then he lowered his voice, said: “If Zhang Shidi did not commit anything seriously wrong, just scold at him privately.”

Tian Bolis lifted his head, looked at him deeply, said: “Xiao Shizhi, you really have great leadership, no wonder why Head Shixiong value you so. It seems the position of the Head of the Faction is none other than you.”

Enu slightly lowered his head, said: “Tian Shishu you over praised me.”

At this moment, Tian Bolis’ face had already returned normal, smiled lightly: “Alright! You should rest early! We Bamboo Peak will remember your kindness.”

Intentionally or not, his tone got heavier when he spoke the word “Bamboo Peak”.

Enu was a little confused, smiled: “Shishu is too polite.”

Tian Bolis nodded, rose up and left.

Tian Bolis stood alone at a quiet place in the forest, hands behind his back.

It was deep in night, the stars were shining and the moon was hanging in the sky. The bright moon light shined pass the thick forest leaves, sprayed on him. From the darkness, his eyebrows were frowned tightly, seemed like he was pondering something.

At this moment, footstep sounded behind him.

Tian Bolis turned around and looked, startled, said: "You?"

It was his wife Surin. In this desolated night, silent forest, she walked quietly, it was like all attention have been drawn to her.

It was like, after many years, the time did not wipe away her beauty.

Surin went next to Tian Bolis, smiled: "You told Daren to call Xiaofan to here, but Xianfan is absent, I told him to go to Vajra's Herald of Vigor, he should be return soon."

Tian Bolis nodded, took a look at her, about to speak, but then stopped.

Surin said lightly: "Since when you saw Enu, your were frowning, what happened?"

Tian Bolis let out a long sigh, face relaxed a little, said: "I know I can't conceal it from you." Then he told her about what Enu said about Shaw Danon.

Surin quietly listen to him until he finished, pondered for a moment, then she

said: “Let’s not talk about does Xiaofan knows Master Vim and his daughter, even if they know each other, using this to say Xiaofan have fallen into the Felkin, or he is even a spy in Jadeon sent by the Felkin, I will never believe it.”

Tian Bolis snorted: “I know this already. Heh, I adopted six disciples before, from oldest for sixth, none caused so many troubles, giving me such headach!”

Surin glanced at him, smiled: “But from oldest to sixth, none gave you such honor at Seven Peaks Tournament!”

Tian Bolis paused, but still not admitting defeat, he rolled his eyes, said: “That is called honor? Being hit by thunder like a burned rock.”

Surin laughed: “Oh my! Tian Shixiong, I heard that three hundreds years ago when you participated in the Seven Peaks Tournament, you were also only in the top four!”

Tian Bolis was embarrassed by the old stuff that his wife took out, he said: “Isn’t that because—That night before the contest I sneaked out with you to Peak of Widows’ ‘Rainbow Bridge’ to watch stars and moon together, did not sleep for the entire night. I had no energy during the contest, how could I stand as Vanti Shixiong’s opponent?”

“Boo!” Surin scolded, but her face blushed, very tender, like it was back to that night: “Vanti Shixiong is gifted by heaven, extremely intelligent, in the disciples among our generation, none can be compared to him in cultivation beside for Doyel Shen Head Shixiong. What are you? You already made your master very happy when you got into the top four, you still want to defeat Vanti Shixiong?”

Tian Bolis laughed, his mood got better, said: "Of course Vanti Shixiong is much better than me. But you chose me instead of him, that means I have something that is better than him."

Surin rolled her eyes on him, said: "I was blinded by ghost, that is why I followed you."

Tian Bolis did not get mad, but looking at his wife, his eyes were filled with laughter. Then, he reached out and held Surin's soft, boneless like hand.

Surin glared at him, whispered: "How old are you now, still doing such disgusting thing? When Xiaofan came, what will it be like if he see it!"

Tian Bolis laughed but did not speak. Surin lowered her head, but did not took her hand back.

The color of the night was soft as water, there was no one around. The cool wind passed back, shaking the branches in the night.

It was very quiet inside the forest.

After a moment, Surin suddenly said: "Actually, I think that Shaw Danon is pretty similar to you back then." Then she raised her head, said to Tian Bolis: "Do you feel it?"

Tian Bolis startled, said: "How can it be?"

Surin smiled: "What is this face? Back then you were dumb looking, everyone

think you can't be compared to your ambitious shixiongs. But in the end in Bamboo Peak, the highest achievement, highest cultivation turns out to be you. Then, your master passed you the Head of Bamboo Peak."

Tian Bolis snorted, said: "This is called restrained talent, not dumb."

Surin laughed, shook her head, said: "You! Age got older, skin also got thicker, really can't deal with you." Paused, then she said: "But about Xiaofan, I don't believe you can't see it. The performance of him during the past years is not as intelligent as Baye and Anan, but he is not dumb. I think he is above average. However, it was you treated him coldly, caused him to be low self-esteem, and making him seem like dull and coward."

Then, she thought of something, pondered for a moment, finally said: "But what I can't understand is that, the most basic level one Pure Essence incantation, how come he used three times more time than a normal person?"

Tian Bolis shook his head, let out the breath from his chest, said lightly: "Don't think too much now, when seventh comes, I will ask him, what did he do? What did he do that we don't know?"

Surin glanced at him, said: "You make a fierious face when he is here, otherwise before he can speak, he is already scared by your look."

Tian Bolis snorted: "Don't know why, a gust of anger will come out from my heart when I see him."

Surin smiled: “You actually want your disciple with the most future to be better, not only in cultivation, but also in dealing daily affair, you want him to be like Kevern, Enu, successful at both ways, in future—” Then she sighed and stopped.

Tian Bolis remained quiet for a moment, then said: “What is it?”

Surin looked at him, hesitated, then finally said: “Buyi, your temper, over so many years, you haven’t become like Vanti Shixiong, so—”

Tian Bolis pondered for a moment, slowly nodded: “I understand what you mean, no need to say it.”

Surin looked at him for a while, then laughed: “If Xiaofan know his master who always despise him has high expectation on him, I wonder how happy he will be like?”

Tian Bolis snorted, face filled with disdain, turned away, said: “With his dumb looking, I can have high expectation on him? Don’t dream about it!”

Surin stood behind him, smiled at him. She could still feel the palm that is holding her hand, warm and large, it was like it haven’t change over the past three hundreds years.

Quietly, she also held his hand tightly.

Shaw Danon and Xavion left the place where Onara and his master Herald of Vigor lived. As they were returning, he could still hear Onara’s thick laughter resounding against his ears. The night became deeper, except for the night

guard disciples, everyone slowly returned to their sleeping place.

When they were about to arrive at the cave where Bamboo Peak lived, Xavion had a little worry in his heart, turned to Shaw Danon, said: "Xiaofan, do you remember what I told you?"

Shaw Danon said: "Yes, Da Shixiong."

Xavion nodded: "I don't know why Master is looking for you, but his eyebrows have been frowning since he came back visiting Enu, I am afraid it is something unpeasant."

Shaw Danon remain quiet. His heart was unrested, perhaps Enu told his master about Master Vim and Bilu. If it was really like that, he did not know how to answer his master if asked.

Xavion saw Shaw Danon wasn't speaking, he thought he was scared, so he patted his shoulder, said: "Xiaofan, don't need to worry. Although Master is always strict, he truly loves us." Then he paused, lowered his voice: "But don't get impetuous, if you go against Master, we can't plead you!"

Shaw Danon's heart was warmed. He gritted his teeth, looked at Xavion, and said quietly: "Xavion, I am really sorry about how I treated at the past few days, for-forgive me!"

Xavion laughed, then patted his head, said: "What are you saying this for? Hurry, don't let Master wait for too long. Today really is weird, the bright moon was hanging in the sky a moment ago, now the clouds have came. East Sea is different than our Central Plain after all."

Shaw Danon lifted his head and looked at the sky and saw it was darkened. The bright moon that was there a moment ago now covered by black clouds, weakened its brightness significantly, annoying to people.

While they were talking, they had returned to the cave. Xavion and Shaw Danon stopped their pace. They could hear the laughter that came out from Hidi and Amandla.

Shaw Danon was silent for a moment, then said to Xavion: "Da Shixiong, I will not go in then, and shall directly go into the forest to find Master."

Xavion took a glance at him, nodded: "That's fine, hurry! But now the forest is dark, you need to be careful while walking in the forest, understand?"

Shaw Danon showed a smile, nodded, then headed into the forest.

Xavion looked at his figure, suddenly felt the Xiao Shidi appeared to be a bit lonely. He sighed, shook his head, then went into the cave.

Once he stepped into the forest, darkness surrounded him aggressively.

Shaw Danon paused for a moment, his heart was moved. After a moment, his eyes adapted the surrounding of the woods. The remnants of moonlight shined pass the thick leave, landed on the ground, leaving a bit of light.

Everything in the forest was quiet. No bird cries of the morning, no breathing of the beast, even the song of insects was also disappeared in tonight. Only the

enormous tree that stood everywhere like a warrior in the darkness!

There were only the whistle of the wind!

The wind came from the far away sea blew pass the trees, creating rustle sound.

In this ghostly forest, a young man walked alone.

Shaw Danon's mind floated away in this ghostly forest, dead silent night. He suddenly recalled many, many things of the past: at dusk, when he was still a child, he cuddled in his mother's arms, facing the night color, there was a faint fear in his large eyes.

But then, without feeling it happened, the time that had passed was already this far away.

He closed his eyes, took a deep breath, shook his head, then quickened his pace and continued forward.

However, he did not notice on the path where he was walking, a pair of bright, red eyes rose quietly from the darkness, burning with the flame of hatred.

Like a pair of angry eyes from a person!

Tian Bolis frowned, a bit impatient, said: "What is wrong with him, still not here after long time?"

Surin glanced at him, said: “How can he be that fast? Daren ran to find him, then he need to return from Herald of Valor. Even with running, it will takes some time. You can’t make him to fly around just for a tiny matter?”

Tian Bolis snorted, raised his head and looked at the sky, said: “Strange, why the sky changes so fast at East Sea?”

Surin looked around, also frowned: “Yeah! It was just shiny a moment ago! Now it got covered by dark clouds.” But she didn’t keep this in her mind, and asked something else: “Buyi, there is still a thing that I don’t understand since the beginning.”

Tian Bolis looked at her, said: “What?”

Surin said: “If Xiaofan really knows Master Vim and his daughter like Enu have said, no matter what reason, he should tell Vasp Caelo Shixiong. He knows this clearly. But he spoke to you privately and concealed it from Vasp Caelo Shixiong, and he was not very close to our Bamboo Peak, I feel this is not right.”

Tian Bolis was quiet for a moment, then said lightly: “This person’s mind is not simple.”

Surin’s eyebrows frowned a little, said: “How?”

Tian Bolis did not answer right away, instead he pondered for a moment, said:

“From what I know, Head Shixiong have been focusing on cultivation for the past years and began to ignore faction matter. Most daily matter was taken care by Vasp Caelo and several elders.” Then he paused, laughed coldly: “Now people are discussing privately that Vasp Caelo is already the Headmaster who live at Dragon Head Peak.”

Surin was shocked, with a little worry, she pulled Tian Bolis' sleeve, whispered: “You must not say this outside.”

Tian Bolis nodded: “I know, rest assure!”

Then he pondered for a moment, continued: “You know this too, we Jadeon for two thousands years, especially since Master Jade Leaf established Jadeon Seven Houses, the position of Headmaster was always succeed by the Peak of Widows disciple. But now-”

Surin smiled, continued for him: “But now, Vasp Caelo Shixiong was repected in the facton, and also strong in cultivation, reputation is only second to Dayel Shen Shixiong. Enu succeed as Headmaster seems unarguable, but now it becomes questionable.”

Tian Bolis said lightly: “And for two hundreds years, Vasp Caelo was always in charge of Jadeon punishment enforcement, will not take anything other than his own will. Except for Doyel Shen Shixiong, he already looking down at everyone. Xiao Shizhi's worry is normal.”

Surin lowered her head, then said after a while: “Buyi, this battle for the Headmaster will affacts quite wide, don't get too into it.”

Tian Bolis shook his head: “How can I not know, but I am a head of a house, how can I avoid it. Today Enu gave me a gratitude, mostly is hoping I can give him support at future conflict. We can only take a step, watch a step.”

Surin sighed, nodded: “We can only do that.”

“Wooooo” A chill wind blew past from the deep of the forest.

Shaw Danon could feel the chill on his neck, lifted his head and saw the sky was full of figures of the trees, dancing like devils. He frowned, the forest was much ghostly tonight, very different than before. And then he thought, he haven’t seen anything unlucky for the past days in here, so they will appear if the sky get a bit dark?

Thinking of that, he laughed in his heart, then continued.

Suddenly, crying of the ghost bursted behind him. Shaw Danon was surprised, immediately turned around, then his face got pale even more. In the darkness, a skull slowly glowed in dark red light, spinning in the air.

In the crying the of ghost, the red skull stopped, it was facing Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon could see the ghostly fire inside of its eyesockets. He couldn’t help but shivered.

A moment later, behind that ghostly object, two figure slowly rose up. With the red light of the skull, Shaw Danon could see one of them was a tall and skinny old man, horrible, dry face, almost only skin and bones, not very different than the red skull. His pair of eyes glared at Shaw Danon, burning in fury.

An other person was in a very embarrassing situation, although he was quite big, he was hung in mid-air by the old man like a little chicken, face filled with helplessness.

Shaw Danon was surprised, let out a “huh?”.

This person was very familiar, it was Cynical Dialectian who he met in Cave of Fangs at Kongsang Mountain, and also ran into several times at Billows Hill. His collar was held by the bony old man, crying. Quickly he noticed Shaw Danon, then it was like he saw a savior, immediately pointed at Shaw Danon, cried out: “Ah! It’s him, it’s him!”

Shaw Danon was surprised, not knowing what Cynical Dialectian meant. The old man glared at him, issued a sharp, hoarse voice at Cynical Dialectia: “This is the brat from Jadeon?”

Cynical nodded, said quickly: “Right, right, it’s him, Senior Vampire. It’s the bastard who killed your only heir, vampire Jiang Lao San!”

Chapter 67 Vampire Devil

The old man with a hideous face was an old devil of Felkin that had been hidden for many years, known as “Founder of Vampire”. The Righteous, and many Felkin also, called him “Vampire Devil”, and the main reason was the evil art he practiced “Art of Vampire” require draining human blood into the body to assist cultivation, very awkward and horrifying.

Although this hideous art is powerful, it has backfire effect on the cultivator. Anyone who practice the Art of Vampire will result in a terrifying face, unacceptable to the world. Even in the Felkin, there were many people not happy about it.

But this art can not to be taken lightly, a hundred years ago when he made his first appearance, he had caused a reign of terror, giving the Righteous a large headach. Later when the Felkin lost the upper hand, the Righteous began adding pressure. And to avoid the hunting from the powerful Righteous, the Vampire Devil also left the Central Plain with the Felkin, so therefore there was no more news of him.

This time the Felkin was restored again, Vampire Devil, who was originally part of the major four Felkin sects “Venom”, was also invited. Before he parted, his only disciple Jiang Lao San, went to assist Cynical Dialectian and Liu Gao. To his surprise, his disciple was killed in Cave of Fangs.

Vampire Devil was extremely furious after learning his disciple's death. Because the Art of Vampire has a very bad reputation, and the process of cultivating is dangerous, one mistake may causes backfire by the art and bursts the blood vessel. So even among the Felkin, there is rarely anyone who is willing to practice to art. Jiang Lao San was a disciple he found years ago, and his attribute match the master's strange temper. Because of that, Vampire Devil really likes him. And now his disciple died without figured out the reason, how can he not be furious?

Recently, there was a big movement within the Felkin. With the Vim cut out an opening path into this desolated land Billow Hill of the East Sea, other three major sects also sent out reinforcement. Vampire Devil was among them. He arrived the Billows Hill just today. Coincidentally, he ran into Cynical Dialectian as well as other Bloodforger.

Nian Boss, Liu Gao, and many others were all cunning. Seeing Vampire Devil's face was clouded, and based upon their knowledge of this old man's strange, ruthless temper, they realized he must be still burned with hatred for his disciple's death, every one of them slipped away immediately.

As for Cynical Dialectian, discribe in a nicer way it would be striaght forward, more negative way would be slow react. He stepped forth and greeted Vampire Devil, saying: "Ah! Senior, haven't met for many years, is your body still well-"

Without needing it to be finished, Vampire Devil already felt this Cynical really death, mocking for not dying after caused my disciple's death? Under the anger, he grabbed Cynical Dialectian up in the air. Finally Cynical Dialectian realized something was not right and began begging for mercy.

The Vampire Devil was also not speaking any rubbish to him: “Now we will head to the Jadeon and search for the bastard who killed my disciple. If we find him, lucky for you. If not, I will first drink your blood to dry as a sacrifice for my disciple.”

Cynical Dialectian’s face turned dead pale immediately, but no one could hear his complain.

Shaw Danon met Cynical Dialectian several times since he arrived at Billows Hill. But Cynical Dialectian was always fighting someone or escaping in the sky, he never noticed Shaw Danon. Even the time when they were in the cave, Shaw Danon was hiding in the dark corner. And when he came out, Cynical Dialectian already rushed out among other people, busying with the Righteous disciple.

Cynical Dialectian thought in his mind, who knows if that bastard had came to Billows Hill. If he did not come, himself will be dead innocently under the rage of the the Vampire Devil. He kept begging for mercy, but Vampire Devil’s heart was hard as stone, ignored him and secretly flew to the Righteous’ living place.

Then at this moment in the dark woods, he suddenly saw Shaw Danon’s figure, Cynical Dialectian was very glad, much more happier than if he see his mom and dad, he immediately cried out: “That’s him, can’t be wrong, I can still recongize him even if he turns into ashes!”

Vampire Devil snorted, then tossed Cynical Dialectian away like some kind of trash. Shaw Danon heard a muffled bang, followed by a painful cry. Did he landed on the ground, or hit on a tree?

Vampire Devil examined Shaw Danon carefully with his eyes, did not make a move right after, but frowned. Although he was aggressive, he was not out of his

mind. That day when he saw Jiang Lao San's corpse that was carried by the bloodforger, aside from anger and sadness, he also discovered something strange. The way of Jiang Lao San's flesh dried death was so similar to his Art of Vampire. Are there people practice this "art" other than Jiang Lao San and himself?

Of'course he didn't know that in Shaw Danon's hand, on the fire stick, it was the "Sinister Orb" decended from Felkin's Elder Blackheart. But with his several hundreds of cultivation experience, he was determined that the "murderer", even if he was not using the Art of Vampire, he was using a similar magic that is similar to Art of Vampire. Additionally, that person cultivation power was no less than him. Now he was facing Shaw Danon, examining him carefully first, trying to seek an odd thing about him.

But he looked at every places of him, he frowned, but still couldn't make out anything. From head to feet, then from feet to head, this brat is still a common Jadeon disciple, without any unique place, not to mention he did not has any blood thirsty energy of the Art of Vampire.

Shaw Danon stood there, felt a creep for being watched by a ghostly old man. He did not know who he is, but seeing he was with Cynical Dialectian, must be a Felkin. And base on their conversation, it seemed they came for him.

The red glowing skull began spinning slowly again. Vampire Devil's voice came out coldly behind the red light: "Jadeon's brat, is it you who killed my disciple Jiang Lao San?"

Shaw Danon startled, asked: "Who is Jiang Lao San?"

Vampire Devil speechless and was furious, if it was usually, he would already

send a magic and drain his dry first. But thinking of this Jadeon disciple can possibly having a certainly level of Art of Vampire cultivation, he must figures this out.

He forced to suppress down his anger, but his voice was already like ghost howling: “The one you killed with Art of Vampire in Kongsang Mountain’s Cave of Fang!”

Shaw Danon was shocked. Hearing the word vampire again, he recalled the terrifying scene that floated in his mind. His heart tightened, his hand subconsiously reached to his fire stick.

The the fire stick peacefully lying at his waist, like a sleeping demon.

Vampire Devil saw he was quiet, which was very disrespectful to him at the extreme, ten times more “arrogant” than Righteous who hunted him.

His temper was always aggressive. If not because he had question in his mind, how could he hold it for this long. This anger triggered him, he roared: “Jadeon’s brat, return my disciple to me!”

Shaw Danon was surprised and took a step back. Ghost cried and chill wind screamed, he could even feel the creep on the back of his neck. The hair of his entire body raised.

The red skull suddenly opened its jaw in mid-air. Instantly, five beam of black lights came out and landed before Shaw Danon. After a moment later, they slowly rose up.

Shaw Danon gathered himself and prepared. Although knowing the Felkin heretic before him was awkward and evil, he still shivered when he saw what was before him. The five figures that were rising up were five monsters with unique shape, but terrifying nevertheless. The large jaws, sharp fangs, and the stink, dirty breath against his nose.

Just a short period of time, the five monsters already grew to giants that were one and a half taller than Shaw Danon himself. Behind them, Vampire Devil's hands held into a strange mark, often tap, hit and shake the red skull. The monsters answered; they were controlled by this old devil.

At this moment, it was like because of the red light that let out from the skull, even Vampire Devil's eyes seemed a little red. He gave a cold laughter, then ten fingers tightened on the red skull.

As if it reacted to his action, the five gigantic monsters' eyes brightened in red, letting out a vicious glance, at the same time they all howled to the sky.

“Woooooooo....”

Shaw Danon's body was shocked, his mind was almost captured by it. The figures shined around him, the ghostly cry pierced through his ears, stabbed straight into his brain, causing unbearable pain.

The five monsters howled, then pounced on him. Among the screaming of the fierce wind, Shaw Danon used all his strength to dodge it with a slight gap. But before he can calm himself, the five monsters inserted their claws into the ground among the howling.

Shaw Danon was in mid-air. With the fire stick held in his hand, his heart is more rested. It was like the fire stick also felt something, it beginning to get brightened with green light.

Without giving him a moment to think, the claws that were inserted into the earth by the five monsters pulled the entire piece of earth out. But more terrifying was under the ground, countless of nether spirits in all size came out, flying toward to Shaw Danon, completely surrounded him in a blink of an eye.

Vampire Devil smiled coldly, but then frowned. Because he was aware that this young man may beared with special ability, so he did not use his most capable skill Art of Vampire, instead he used a magic he cultivated during recent year—"Spirit Control". Using his own soul to cultivate into five "life ghosts" which are used as pulling force to capture all the wraiths within ten miles. After than, crafted them with magic and turned to to fierce, blood thirsty nether spirits, and ordered them to attack Shaw Danon.

This Jadeon disciple's cultivation was not low, he showed no sign of practiced Art of Vampire. Did he just missed it? Or was it because Cynical was trying to stay alive and found a random scapegoat for him?

As Vampire Devil was thinking, he suddenly felt something and his body shook. He lifted his head and found at the place where countless of white nether spirits were surrounding Shaw Danon so tightly that he could not be seen, among the heavy white light, there was a beam of green light, shined through countless of nether spirit.

A tearing noise, clear and loud.

The night of the Billow Hill got darker. Even the weakest moonlight can no longer be seen.

In this silent and lonely color of the night, there was a long whistle.

The tide at the far away sea got more aggressive.

There was a icy coldness passed through the heart.....

The fire stick suddenly glared. The originally black stick was like an awakened demon, opened its eyes. Instantly, a cold and vicious sense came out from Shaw Danon. The countless nether spirits were terrified, flew around in panic.

Vampire Devil's eyebrows frowned tightly, his face got solemn, and mumbled quietly to himself: "Very heavy vicious energy....."

The five enormous life ghosts howled together. Their figures flashed and lifted into the air, landed around Shaw Danon, surrounding him in the center. At the same time, their claws teared across the air, causing sharp sound.

The nether spirits that were in panic because of the mysterious vicious energy that came off from the fire stick, were suddenly froze in mid-air. Shaw Danon could see many of the painful look of those shapeshifted face had returned to fierce looking.

"Ah!"

The screaming of the ghost pierced through the air. Countless of nether spirits pounced toward at the only flesh body.

Shaw Danon took in a cold breath. Around him it was nothing but the ghostly white figures, rushing toward him, giving him no break. Few seconds later, the ghosts pressed him down to the ground like a thick cloud. Shaw Danon gritted his teeth, trying to hold out, but soon later he staggered, a sharp pain pierced into his legs, almost caused him to fall.

Shaw Danon was surprised, looked down and saw a pair of hands had reached out from the earth underneath, grabbed his legs tightly. The sharp claws almost stuck into his vein. Surrounding him, the five life ghosts that were there have only four of them remain.

The nether spirits cheered in the sky, swarming around him. The greedy jaws were before his eyes.

Shaw Danon was pale, even his muscles were a bit twisted. Bearing the pain, his right hand formed an incantation mark and sliced across the air before him. The fire stick rose and drew a wall of mystic green light, one after another.

The first several nether spirits could not halt quick enough and crushed on the black stick, then evaporate into smoke without a scream.

At the same time, Shaw Danon's body shocked again. He took a peer and the claws had pierced through his skin like a sharp knife. Fresh blood bled, fell on black claws.

The fresh, sweet smell of blood! Spread out immediately in the air.

Shaw Danon startled.

The nether spirits in the crowded air were also startled.

The light on the fire stick shook softly. It was like excited by the smell of its own blood.

A moment later, countless of nether spirits charged downward at the sweet body of fresh. Even with the cruel wind screaming, that person roared proudly. The fire stick dropped and caught by Shaw Danon, without caring the nether spirits above him. His eyes glared, with a bit of red light flashing.

A stab!

Stabbed downward!

Passed through the claws, also passed through his own blood!

The red blood quietly sank into the black stick. The red vein on the stick suddenly brightened.

“Poof!”, there was a muffled noise came from the deep ground. The nether spirits from the above were all paused, terrified. It was like the legendary demon who forge spirits was before them.

In the darkness, only the fire stick was shining.

At far, the red skull that was in Vampire Devil's hand suddenly made a quiet rattle. Then, on the right hand side, a piece fell off.

Vampire Devil's color changed greatly; he lifted his head with surprise on his face. That boy has defeated one of his life ghosts from his Spirit Control's array. On the scene, the four life ghosts clearly were not enough to control so many spirits without one of their companions, some nether spirits began to flee.

The earth around Shaw Danon suddenly sank half a foot deep. The claws that grabbed his legs slowly released, melt into blood and absorbed by the earth.

But before giving him a moment to relieve, he heard the nether spirits were screaming in the sky. He was surprised and about to resist. However, the nether spirits were fleeing instead. The white lights dazzled, the ghost cry screamed, the nether spirits fluttered, a red light flashed—

Red light?

Passing through countless of white nether spirits, a red light shot toward him as fast as lighting; the sparkling skull was already arrived before him in a blink of an eye. Shaw Danon was about to make a jump, but it pulled the wound on his legs. His body staggered and was unable to dodge.

The red skull opened its jaw, baited toward him like an evil spirit. In fright, Shaw Danon summoned his fire stick to block in front of him. But at that instant, a withered hand reached out from the jaw, soon became three feet long. The five fingers formed into claws, grabbed heavily on his chest.

Shaw Danon's body was greatly shocked. The withered skin of that ghostly hand suddenly full with blood, while himself was dizzy in his head, felt that all the blood in his body were surging toward the injury on his chest.

It was of course Vampire Devil's speciality Art of Vampire. See Shaw Danon is in his control, he couldn't help but laughed, shouted, and lifted Shaw Danon's body into mid-air: "Brat, give me my disciple's life!"

Shaw Danon was grabbed by him, the blood of his body were going inverse, very painful. His consciousness was fading, and he could only use the last bit of his strength to resist, hit that ghostly hand with the fire stick, but it was powerless like a feather.

The Vampire Devil ignored it. He snorted and thought: This young man is nothing, his cultivation is also average, but the esper is very weird. After finish draining his blood, the fire stick should be taken back and have a good look at it.

At this moment, the fire stick landed on the hand that was grabbing Shaw Danon's chest.

The mystic green orb sliced passed the skin that was drinking the blood savagely.

Was the blood beneath the skin summoning something?

The Vampire Devil suddenly screamed, let go of Shaw Danon and leap backward, looked at his arm. The healthy skin due to blood sucking withered almost at that same instant, worse than it was before.

And in front of him, Shaw Danon was tottoring, but the fire stick in hand, especially the orb on the top, was glowing strangely, shining on the blood vein, sparkling in red.

Vampire Devil made a cold laugh: “I was wondering about how Jiang Lao San died, so the secret is here. Heh heh, there can be such treasure in this world. Brat, hand it over to me along with your life!”

After that he rose into the air, hand formed into claws, this time he aimed right at Shaw Danon’s head. Pityful that Shaw Danon was strengthless all over his body, with no power to resist, about to see himself dead under Vampire Devil’s hand.

“Evildoer!”

A shout that filled with anger. A blazing wave of heat pierced through the air, like a tremendous wave, engulfed the entire forest. All trees within ten yards had withered. A brilliant light of fire came down from the sky, teared the dark clouds into pieces.

Vampire Devil was terrified. The person that was arriving had an innormally high cultivation. Where can he find the focus to harm Shaw Danon, his hands retrieved swiftly. Among the screaming, the red skull shined brightly, raised a blood red wall of light before him.

“Boom.....”

Like the sound of thunder hitting the ground, the fire light landed on the blood wall. The crushing heat wave turned into a shaking, red celestial sword.

The enormous power pushed Shaw Danon several yards backward. The strength did not weaken, still pressing on him like mountain and sea.

Vampire Devil's face paled, shouted, and changed the incantation mark of his ten fingers. A pair of bloody beams shot out from the eye sockets of the red skull, passed through the blood wall and hit on the red sword.

In the bang, the red sword flew backward while Vampire Devil shocked, steadied himself after backing up several steps.

“‘Flame Spirit’!” Creepy chill rose in Vampire Devil's eyes, his face was cold as frost.

The blazing heat flashed then vanished, Tian Bolis appeared from where the fire was. A figure flashed behind him, it was Surin, holding Shaw Danon who is about to fall. Shaw Danon's heart was warmed as he saw his master and shi niang arrived.

Surin was worried, whispered to him: “Xiao Fan, are you alright?”

Shaw Danon forced a smile: “I am fine, shi niang-”

His word was only half finished, suddenly golden stars flashed before his eyes, then it was darkness. He fainted.

Surin's brows frowned tightly. Tian Bolis ignored Vampire Devil to check Shaw

Danon first.

After a while, Surin finished checking. She reached into her sleeve and took out a bottle, poured out a yellow pill and let Shaw Danon took it, after that she nodded at Tian Bolis, said quietly: "He won't die." Paused, looked at Vampire Devil from far away, eyes filled with resentment: "It was the Art of Vampire!"

Anger flashed on Tian Bolis face, turned around and met his eyes with Vampire Devil's.

"Vampire Devil, you are already a several hundreds years old figure, and you used such cruel method on a junior, what are you?"

"Posh!" Vampire Devil said aggressively: "So your disciple's life is a life, my disciple's life is not a life?"

Tian Bolis said coldly: "What does that has to do with your stupid disciple?"

Vampire Devil's eyes froze, said: "He killed my disciple in Kongsang Mountain's Cave of Fangs, so I am here to kill him, how about this then?"

"Nice!" Tian Bolis suddenly shouted: "Nice killing!"

Vampire Devil startled.

Tian Bolis coldly laughed: "I used to despise this disciple, but today he appeared to be better than I had imagined, for he know how to rid of harm for the sake of the people!"

The anger was not minor for Vampire Devil, he said furiously: “Good, good, you *****-borned, hundred years ago you hunted me when I was in difficult situation. Today, allow me to taste the blade of your Flame Spirit again!”

Tian Bolis took a deep breath, right hand sliced across the air. As if the Flame Spirit answering to its master’s will, it, too, shaking in excitement.

“Hundred years ago I allowed you to barely escape with a bit of luck, today let me see how well you have trained your Art of Vampire that bold enough to harm my disciple?”

Chapter 68 Flame Spirit

Vampire Devil snorted, but he showed no fear, a fierce look appeared on his face: “Back then it was because you Righteous dominated with large numbers, do I really fear of you?”

After that, his hands shook. The red glowing skull pieced through the air, circling him rapidly. His eyes were becoming red.

Tian Bolis took a deep breath, prepared carefully. Hundred years ago, he was already a talented person in Jadeon. When he was hunting down the remainers of the Felkins, he was the part of the main force, and did fought with Vampire Devil. He knew this person can not be taken lightly, and the Art of Vampire was no small matter.

At this moment, the dark clouds gathered together again. The scar that caused by Tian Bolis heaven shaking strike disappeared. The color of the night darkened again.

Faintly, there was sound of wave from the ocean mixed with screaming of the wind, and becoming more aggressive. As if it was hiding in the depth of the sea, a long cry softly drifting in the color of the night, under the sky.

Shaw Danon slowly regain his consciousness. He felt an uncomfortable feeling on his chest. Suddenly he heard a “huh” from someone, then a white hand reached out and softly massaged his chest.

After a moment, the energy that was trapped in his chest cleared out smoothly. He felt much better.

Shaw Danon raised his head and saw his shi niang Surin, who is holding him, smiling quietly.

Shaw Danon blushed, mumbled: “Thank you, shi niang.”

Surin said gently: “Are you alright?”

Shaw Danon nodded: “Right now, it is the tiredness, nothing else.”

Surin nodded with a smile, then suddenly chuckled: “That’s good, now watch your master fight for you!”

Shaw Danon was surprised, then followed Surin’s eyes, he was stunned.

Under the dark sky, among the overcasted black clouds, a blazing, brilliant ball of light brightened half of the sky, it was like embed a frame on the edge of the dark clouds.

Tian Bolis was like ancient God of Fire, standing on the clouds, turning the flame of his “Flame Spirit” into a fire dragon, tearing the dark clouds, charged into the sky.

As for the Vampire Devil, there was no sign of him. However, next to the clouds on the sky, there was an enormous skull, screaming wildly. The wind and clouds changed, the ghostly blood light rose into the sky, fought with the fire dragon.

The sky filled of dark clouds were boiling, roaring. Watching from the ground, the two people were like deities of nine skies, fighting each other angrily.

Shaw Danon's heart was moved, completely admiring his master. The roar of the dragon shocked the earth; it swam in the clouds with heaven shaking might, quite similar to the time when he was in Dark Drake Cave, three-tails fox spirit used Inferno Mirror to summon the fire dragon, but this time it was much more powerful.

Reminded of that, his body suddenly shook. A wave of heat rose from the Inferno Mirror on his right arm like it was excited by something. The heat spread across his entire body.

Surin felt it, turned to him, asked concernly: "Xiaofan, your body suddenly becomes this hot, are you having fever after the injury?"

Shaw Danon was surprised, did not expect his shi niang is so sensitive. He did not know how to reply, only murmuring: "Not-nothing....."

Surin frowned, and was about to ask, she sensed something and turned around. Sound of footsteps issued from the forest, after a moment, no less than a hundred people came out. Skysong's Fazzan, Fashan, Incense Valley's Li Su, Yanon were also among them. The one who was walking in the front is Master Vasp Caelo.

Surin rose up, smiled: "Vasp Caelo Shixiong, you are here."

Vasp Caelo nodded, said lightly: "Tian Shidi is showing off here, shocking the heaven. We are not blind nor deaf, so we come and have a look."

Surin frowned, felt the sarcasm in his words. Before she said anything, the Bamboo Peak disciples already saw Shaw Danon, sitting on the ground languishly with blood all of him.

Hidi screamed and ran forth. Xavion, Amandla, and He Dazhi were also worried and followed behind her. But quickly after, a white figure flashed, rushed forward even faster than them. It was Baye.

Baye dashed to Shaw Danon's side, crouched down, grabbed his shoulders, with his face a bit paled, asked: "Xiaofan, are you alright?"

Shaw Danon could feel the worry in his eyes, his heart was warmed. He nodded and smiled: "I am fine, nothing wrong."

Baye took a look at him, then glanced on the wound on his chest, finally relieved and let out a long breath, said: "Who hurted you?"

Shaw Danon pointed up, said: "That devil, I heard my master called him, something like 'Vampire Devil'?"

Baye's body was shocked, it appeared he knew that devil. He surprised: "That old guy also reappeared?"

At this moment Hidi and others arrived next to Shaw Danon, interrogating him with questions. Shaw Danon felt Hidi's concerning eyes, instead he lowered his head, answering his shi xiongs' questions quietly, saying he is already recovered.

As the battle in the sky was getting exciting, Baye stood next to Shaw Danon, watched the above for a moment, then suddenly said: "Xiaofan, your master does not seem to be anything during normal days, can't imagine his cultivation is this high!"

Anger rose within Hidi upon hearing this. Since the time she lost to Baye right at her home's doorstep, she never like this kid. She snorted, said: "How can a kid from Dragon Head Peak like you able to see the deep level of my dad's cultivation?"

Baye frowned and turned around. But Hidi's eyes were glaring at him, not stepping back. It startled him, after that he suddenly smiled: "Tian Shimei, you are right."

Hidi was stunned, for she did not expect the arrogance young boy's attitude become this nice. Although Baye was smiling, he was looking at a different direction. She followed Baye's eyes and found he was smiling at Kevern who is standing next to Master Vasp Caelo.

With Hidi's quick wit, she immediately knew Baye felt improper to argue with her in front of his respected Kevern. Although her heart was not embarrassed, it was still sweetened when her eyes met with Kevern's.

Surin frowned; she heard what those youngster said. The speakers were

careless, but the listener was paying attention. After a while, she turned her glance on Master Vasp Caelo. Master Vasp Caelo was raising his head, watching Tian Bolis emotionlessly, but his eyes were shining, what was it that thinking in his mind?

At this moment, in the howling of the fierce wind, the flame shot in all direction, the blood light pierced into the sky, at the decisive moment of the battle, Master Vasp Caelo suddenly said coldly: “Did not expect Vampire Devil would be so reckless to provoke here. Kevern!”

Kevern was next to him. He step forth, said: “Master, what is the command?”

Master Vasp Caelo took a glance at the sky, said: “Your Tian Shibo’s victory is already certained, that old devil won’t be able to last long. You bring other men to lay up a trap, we can’t let this devil to escape again this time.”

Kevern answered, then waved his hand, called Baye back. Then, he turned to gather other major faction disciples such as Fazzan and Li Su, discussed their plan.

Surin walked next to Master Vasp Caelo slowly, smiled: “Vasp Caelo Shixiong, how can you see Buyi is about to win?”

Master Vasp Caelo looked at Surin, a smile appeared on his emotionless face, said: “Su Shimei, are you making fun of me, who is a useless shixiong?”

Surin shook her head, smiled: “Give me ten guts and I still will not dare to make fun of you. I am sincerity asking for knowledge here!”

Master Vasp Caelo smiled, said: “Su Shimei, you are always wise, a far better potential than me, a useless shixiong, why be so modest. Although Vampire Devil’s cultivation is not low, additionally having ‘Blood Skull’ with him, the blood light seemed sky breaking, matchlessly aggressive, I can see that even the momentum is fierce, the blood red light on the esper, three inches to the right, was unstable. The red skull seemed to be damaged at there. In normal situation it doesn’t mean anything, with this devil’s cultivation, just need to bring it back and repair it, then everything will be fine. But now in front of Tian Shidi, it is his greatest flaw.”

Then, he paused, an icy coldness flashed in his eyes, but his voice remained calm, said: “Tian Shidi on the other hand, steadily using Jadeon incantation to drive Flame Spirit sword, conjured the ‘True Dragon of Red Fire’. Although the Blood Skull’s red light shined brightly, it shrinks back everytime it contracted with True Dragon of Red Fire. And Tian Shidi was determined to attack the Blood Skull’s three inches to the right with every single one of his strike. Vampire Devil may seemed bold, but was already stranded, lose for certain. From Su Shimei’s perspective, am I wrong?”

Surin smiled: “Shixiong is wise. I only know it after you said it.”

Master Vasp Caelo smiled lightly, turned around and gazed at the sky, suddenly lowered his voice, but in a calm tone, said slowly: “Su Shimei.”

Surin said: “What, Vasp Caelo Shixiong?”

Master Vasp Caelo’s eyes were still on the two people that were fighting in the sky, his voice was clear, said: “Since Tian Shidi broke through into Pure Essence’s ‘ShangQing Realm’ a hundred years ago, his cultivation must be advancing rapidly over the past several years!”

Surin was shocked, but her face did not show, she smiled: “Vasp Caelo Shixiong you are overpraising. Buyi is nowhere as talented as Headmaster Shixiong and you—”

Master Vasp Caelo slowly shook his head, showed a smile on the corner of his lips, said: “Hundred years ago we Righteous crushed the Felkin, I, and Tian Shidi, Peak of Wind’s Ceng Shidi, Sun Rise Peak’s Shang Shidi, and the main house’s Vanti—”

Surin suddenly called quietly: “Vasp Caelo Shixiong.”

Master Vasp Caelo was shocked, appeared to have remembered something. He nodded, then continued: “.....We hunted those Felkin devil deep into the Wildlands. At that time, Tian Shidi already broke through into ShangQing Realm. Vanti Shi—That man told us, Tian Shidi seemed dull, but intelligent in the inside, especially his unwavering attitude, a very rare quality. In path of cultivation, he will have an immeasurable future.”

Then, he smiled, said: “Su Shimei, that man, you know him. What he said, what he thought, you probably won’t have question about it!”

Surin smiled lightly, did not say anything, only turned around, looked at the sky.

Vampire Devil stood in mid-air, very vicious appearance, but his heart was getting more and more scared. A hundred years ago, he fought against Tian

Bolis already. At that time, that man's cultivation was not low, but with his Art of Vampire, he was certain of victory.

A hundred years after, when they fought again, that man's cultivation advanced unexpectedly fast. The fire dragon from Flame Spirit sword always crushed on the "Nether Blood Light" that was supported by his Art of Vampire. Not only the dragon was not in the lower-hand, it was getting more and more suppressing.

The most head hurting thing was not only that. When he was fighting Shaw Danon, he was careless because he saw he was only a young Jadeon, and got one of his life ghost from the "Spirit Control" array destroyed.

Couldn't blame Vampire Devil for not really understanding not happened. His Blood Skull was artifact of ghost, if it meets any legendary divine weapons, like Anan's "Aeolian Firmus", of course there will be some counteracting, with his experience, he would be careful.

But Shaw Danon's fire stick esper was just too awkward. It had no sign of energy of a divine weapon. Because the vicious energy was too strong, it was more like an evil esper like Vampire Devil's, so he didn't put that into his heart.

The fire stick in Shaw Danon's hand, the Sinister Orb can only absorb blood from living thing, helpless when against the ghosts. An other half, however, was the "Dead Wand", a legendary evil artifact that refined with nether spirits over thousands years, the oldest of all artifacts of ghost. During the fight it was excited by Shaw Danon's blood, when it inserted into the body of the life ghost, it instantly cleansed the life ghost into nothingness, much more simpler than any divined weapons.

If it was usually, Vampire Devil would only be a little bit surprised, since Shaw Danon's cultivation was far worse than him after all. When Vampire Devil used this most powerful skill, Shaw Danon fell quickly. But now facing Tian Bolis who cultivation was not lower than him, instead slightly stronger, this small hidden weakness was showed.

Spirits Control and Art of Vampire were both relied upon Blood Skull. One of the life ghosts was destroyed, the Blood Skull also received a minor damage. At this moment however, it became Vampire Devil's greatest danger.

Tian Bolis held the position of the Head of Bamboo Peak for nearly a hundred years, not only cultivation was far superior than Shaw Danon, knowledge and experience were also better than him hundred times. After a few rounds, he noticed a spot on the Blood Skull was unstable, therefore he used all his strength to attack there. At the beginning, it was nothing. But once time prolonged, Vampire Devil was very exhausted.

The dragon roared in the sky, dancing with its claws. The large skull that conjured by Vampire Devil was getting dimmer. The blazing flame, on the other hand, almost dyed the entire sky into dark red.

Vampire Devil regretted for being too arrogant. He thought with his hundreds years of hard cultivation, except for the several tops in Righteous, none he should be feared. This time he came, he did asked secretly to ensure knowing that the several people he feared did not come, and his heart was rested. Unexpectedly, Tian Bolis' cultivation have been advanced rapidly over hundred years.

As he was worrying, he took a glance below unintentionally, then it was an other surprise. On the ground, many figures were moving, at least dozens of them. Base on their clothing, they were most likely to be the Righteous. There

were several who he familiar with, especially Master Vasp Caelo in the front, he was one of the Jadeon who hunted him.

Vampire Devil's heart was really frozen, he immediately looked for a retreat.

At the moment his mind was distracted, the fire dragon suddenly screamed, loud like thundred. Vampire Devil was surprised and lifted his head, what he saw terrified him. The fire dragon suddenly brightened with flame in mid-air, but for a while it did not attack, instead, it shrinked and returned to Tian Bolis' hand like a whale sucking in water. It returned to Flame Spirit sword. As for the fire light, it did not weaken, still shined the entire sky.

Tian Bolis' face was cold and solemn. Flame Spirit lay in front of his chest, left hand held the incantation, took seven steps of the position of the seven stars, then stabbed toward the sky with Flame Spirit sword, mumbled: "Rage of Nine Skies, turns to Divined Thunder. Might of Heaven, arrive at this sword!"

On the ground, especially the Jadeon, it was a wave of excitement. The Bamboo Peak disciples were all extremely excited. Even Master Vasp Caelo became a little pale.

The lowered dark clouds was like boiling water, the wind howled between sky and earth. A moment later, noise of blasting thunder came from the deep of the dark clouds, then exploded near the two people.

At that instant, the world was shaking!

The entire Billows Hill was also shaking. Even the calm ocean water surrounded the island was now unbelievably boiling.

An ancient lighting flashed in the sky, pierced through the dark clouds, teared up the sky. Like a proud, mightly deity entered the realm of mortal, landed on the tip of the burning sword.

At that instant, the men in the sky could no longer be seen. That glaring and brilliant radiance covered this piece of sky and earth.

Wind, blew pass.

Fluttered, everyone's clothes—

The world suddenly became a deadly quiet!

Suddenly, thunder roared again! In the exploding bang, the world changed its color. An enormous pillar of light shot out, pierced through all black clouds, brighter than summer-day sun, striked at Vampire Devil determinedly, unstoppably.

A moment later, Vampire Devil was completely covered by the radiance. Even the red light of his Blood Skull had completely disappeared instantly.

A figure was falling from the clouds.

Tian Bolis held Flame Spirit tightly, breathing heavily, face was a bit paled, but he stood on the clouds like a god.

After the shocking silence, an uproar bursted in the Righteous' crowd, many

were filled with admiration. Every Bamboo Peak disciples were proud. Shaw Danon was stunned, completely filled with admiration. He forced his eyes to leave Tian Bolis and saw everyone were smiling, Hidi was laughing.

Other than happiness, Shaw Danon thought of something and looked at the Bamboo Height disciples. Anan was standing there quietly, staring at Tian Bolis' figure, lost in thought.

The same skill "Thunderblade", but in Tian Bolis' hand, the power was not just ten times stronger than Anan.

Vampire Devil's face was red as blood. His body fell without any control. Master Vasp Caelo snorted, then gave Kevern an eye signal. Kevern understood, waved his hand, then quickly six or seven disciples came out from the Righteous crowd with their espers out, and dashed toward to where Vampire Devil is about to land.

Vampire Devil's body shook, waving his hands in mid-air, like trying to resist. But quickly, red light flashed on his face, then spewed out mouth-full of blood. His face immediately turned ash grey.

Everyone laughed, they knew Vampire Devil was powerless to offer resistance and about to see Kevern captures him alive. Suddenly Surin shouted: "Careful!"

Kevern, Baye and others were surprised. Suddenly their eyes were confused, purple light and black gas flashed, several great force striked out from the darkness. The two people who flew in the front, a Jadeon disciple and a Skysong monk, were badly beaten with blood coming from their mouth, and fell backward.

Kevern and others were surprised and forced their body to hold, but the great force was already arriving before them, falling on them overwhelmingly, like mountains and oceans. Kevern called loudly: “Retreat!”

At the same time, he gritted his teeth, the Frozen Ice sword in his hand flashed over and over again, instantly formed seven layers of ice wall, trying to create covers for his allies. But without giving them much time, the great force hit on the ice wall and broke through them like papers, rushed upon them.

Kevern was standing right in front of it, at this moment he almost stopped breathing. A green light appeared, it was Baye, who saw Kevern in a dangerous situation, recklessly summoned Dragon Slayer and charged forth.

Kevern shouted: “Lin Shidi, run!”

But the speed of the overwhelming strength, it was already before them in a blink of an eye. The two people were like a small boat in a large storm, couldn’t do anything but wait for death. Suddenly someone shouted from behind:

“Devil!”

Wind blew, the strange force met their opponents. Sound of fighting rang for a while. The sound of wind howled, then suddenly stopped. Kevern and Baye’s collars were grabbed by someone, then thrown several yards backward, saved their life at least.

The two putted themselves back together and saw the person who saved Kevern was Master Vasp Caelo, the person who pulled Baye back was Surin. And standing with them were from other factions, elders such as “Herald of Vigor”, also including Tian Bolis who came down from the clouds.

At far, the purple light and black gas caught Vampire Devil. Several people appeared, while countless of footsteps issued from the forest behind them. The darkness was filled heavily with shadows, could not see how many people were hiding in there. But base on those who appeared, they were most likely Felkin.

Shaw Danon was surprised and rose up, looked at the Felkin standing in the front. The one who caught Vampire Devil was Master Vim. There were three men next to him, a bald-head old man, a vicious looking but tiny midge, the last one was a white face scholar, cool and different, with a smile hanging on his face, could not see a sign of evil.

Among the Righteous, Master Vasp Caelo exchanged a glance with Tian Bolis, the corner of his eye was twisting. He snorted, said coldly: “Good! Good! Now you old men finally appear.”

Chapter 69 Meri Koon

Someone had come to help Vampire Devil up. That bald headed old man seemed to know Vampire Devil, he went to him and whispered something. Master Vim's hands were now empty. He smiled but said nothing, face was relaxed, had no feeling of facing powerful opponents. The pale faced scholar exchanged a glance with him.

"Vasp Caelo dog, do you still remember your grandpa?" Suddenly, a hoarse voice issued

The young disciples in the Righteous frowned. The person who spoke was the vicious looking midge. He was glaring right at Master Vasp Caelo. Viciousness shined in his eyes, like a raging wolf.

Vasp Caelo gave him a cold laugh: "Devil, do you still remember the cut I gave you?"

Everyone could see the muscles on the midge's face were twisted, the teeth gritted, clearly he hated it bitterly. However, he slowly nodded, used his hand to draw a line from his left shoulder to the right side of his chest, said fiercely: "Yes, yes, I still have not forgotten and did not expect you to remember. That is great. This cut, of course I need to return it on your body."

Vasp Caelo snorted, ignored him. His eyes moved to the two calm men that were standing on the side.

Surin's face was solemn. With her experience, she could see that these people's cultivation was not simple, absolutely not below Vampire Devil's. They were most likely the old devils of Felkin that hadn't came out for a long time.

After hearing the conversation between Master Vasp Caelo and the midge, Surin whispered at Tian Bolis: "Who are these people?"

The color on Tian Bolis' face was not well, his brows frowned, said: "That midge is called Baiduzi, belongs to Felkin's House of Venom. That old bald head is Jieshi Mountain's Master Duanmu, always a loner among the Felkin. These two men and Vampire Devil, were the remainer of Felkin we hunted a hundred years ago. As for the two men that stand on the side, one appeared to be Felkin's Vim Archlord that Enu mentioned. But the paled face scholar, I have never see him before."

Surin took a cold breath. A hundred years ago, her cultivation was not complete, therefore did not accompanied Tian Bolis, Master Vasp Caelo and others into the Wildlands. But these people's names were loud as thunder back then, especially Baduzi and Master Duanmu. Their evil reputation was far overshadowed Vampire Devil's.

At this moment, the bald headed Master Duanmu suddenly turned around, his eyes swept across the Righteous, then screamed: "Vanti the Etherblade! How come that dog Vanti the Etherblade did not come?"

The young Jadeon disciples were startled, did not know what he is talking

about. But Tian Bolis, Master Vasp Caelo, Surin and others were shocked. Tian Bolis said coldly: “Vanti Shixiong’s cultivation was superior, understood the Way of Heaven, and already became a celestial. Only a evil crown like you will bark brainlessly here!”

These men from Felkin were startled, Baiduzi and Master Duanmu, including Vampire Devil who just regained his breath, were shouted: “Dead?”

Even Master Vim and the paled face scholar were also stunned a little.

Vanti the Etherblade, a name that the young Jadeons never heard of, seemed to be magical to these heads of the Felkin. They looked at each others. Their emotion was awkward. The hatred was heavy on their face, among with some fear, but they could not cover the joy under their eyes.

Master Duanmu’s face was complicated. He grabbed his head, murmured a few words, no could hear what he said except for the last sentence which is more clear: “Heh heh, did not expect that dog would die, heh heh, heh heh, ha ha ha ha ha.....”

Then, that man was bursted into wild laughter.

The face color of the Jadeon was changed. Master Vasp Caelo stared at him, suddenly laughed coldly: “What are you laughing about? Although he is not here, but in Jadeon, there are a lot of devil tamers to handle you evil crowns.”

“Posh!” A disdainful voice came from Baiduzi, he said aggressively: “It is really hard solve the deep hatred in our heart without killing him with our own hands. One day we will invade into Mount Jadeon, crush his bones and scatter his

ashes, not giving peace for the dead!”

Vampire Devil screamed from behind: “Exactly, just like that, otherwise it will be difficult to dispel the hundred years hatred within me!”

None of the Righteous did not feel indignant for savageness and cruelty of the Felkin: they did not give up even for the departed.

Hidi quietly asked her Da Shixiong Xavion: “Da Shixiong, who is this Vanti-Vanti Shibo, it sounds like he is extremely powerful, even these Felkin heretics are scare of him, but why I have never heard of him before?”

Xavion’s face moved a litte, opened his mouth but stopped, smiled bitterly then said: “Xiao Shimei, ask Master and Shiniang yourself when we are back to the mountain!”

Hidi curled her lips, snorted, then said in a bit of annoyed tone: “Fine, don’t tell me then, I will ask mom myself.” After that, she was about to go forth.

Shaw Danon hurriedly reached out and pulled her back, whispered: “Shijie, we have enemies in front of us right now, don’t go up there. We can ask later!”

Hidi took a look and realized the situation was very serious. She stopped, turned around and smiled at Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon’s heart was warmed, but suddenly a cold snort, filled with angry, issued from the Felkin’s side. Shaw Danon lifted his head and saw Bilu slowly appeared behind Master Vim, staring at himself from afar.

Shaw Danon's heart was surprised and released Hidi's hand.

From far, among the Bamboo Height disciples, Anan slowly moved her eyes away from Shaw Danon, and watched Bilu quietly.

At this moment, the silent, frowning, Herald of Vigor suddenly spoke: "Baiduzi, Duanmu devil, you were fortunate enough to escape, you should have started a new life. Today you come out and cause trouble, are you tired of living?"

"Posh!" Those people cursed endlessly with vulgar words.

Herald of Vigor's face changed a little. The paled face scholar suddenly took a step forward, smiled: "This must be Herald of Vigor of Vajra?"

Herald of Vigor glanced at him, said: "Correct, and who are you?"

That paled face scholar smiled faintly and did not answer, only talk on his own: "If Vanti the Etherblade was standing here, spoke what you just said, we, the evil crowns in your eyes, may probably be more alert. But with your crappy art of Vajra, you better hide behind the Jadeon!"

The Felkin bursted into laughter. Behind them, sneers came out from the dark forest.

Herald of Vigor's face immediately flushed red, very furious. But the Jadeon next to him, Master Vasp Cealo, Tian Bolis, and Surin exchanged a glance. Their

eyes were filled with worries. Based on the laughter, not only Felkin's elite reinforcement has arrived, even the numbers have strengthened by a lot.

This battle is probably extremely risky.

"Bastard!" A loud voice suddenly shouted. Onara rose up behind Herald of Vigor. Unable to bear the insult his master suffered, the Shatterer staff brightened in golden light, charged toward that paled face scholar.

Tian Bolis and others were surprised. Herald of Vigor quickly shouted: "Onara, come back, do not act too rash!"

But Onara's surprise attack was very fast. In a blink of an eye the golden light of Shatterer was already in front of that paled face scholar. But the paled face scholar was not in a hurry. He lifted up his right hand, green light flashed at the center of his palm, facing the charging Shatterer staff.

The golden light of Shatterer staff was like a released arrow, crushed on the paled face scholar's palm. Everyone's eyes were dazzled, golden light was shining, buzzing sound aimlessly in the air. They could not see the figure of that paled face scholar.

The young Righteous disciples clapped loudly, but the faces of Master Vasp Caelo and Tian Bolis had darkened.

A moment later, as the golden light faded away, everyone saw that the paled face scholar had been unfazed by the attack and using only one hand to block Onara's Shatterer. Stuck in the air Onara was unable to advance forward.

The pale faced scholar laughed and said " Young man, you should go practice for a hundred more years."

Suddenly with a wave of his hand, a burst of light was seen before Onara's body was sent flying backward and his Shatterer staff blown high into the sky.

Yi Zheng, Herald of Vigor, immediately flew up to catch Onara. Seeing that the wound was nothing major his heart relaxed. Anger flared in him as he turned to face the scholar ready to strike.

Suddenly Taoist Cang Song raise his hand to stop him, and coldly said " In the end who are you to be in possession of the "Ring of Empyrean Light" that has been missing for more than a thousand years! Why is it in your hands?"

Just a moment ago Yi Zheng was brimming with anger but with those few words he suddenly became speechless before he could utter out, "What? Ring of Empyrean Light?"

Of the people that was present, eight out of ten were shocked. Zhang Xiao Fan who was curious, asked Song Daren: " Senior Brother, is that esper really powerful?"

Song Daren was still in shocked before he nodded and replied, "I have heard Sifu said that the ring is a magical treasure from the Nine Skies but had been lost for thousand of years. I never imagine that it would resurfaced today."

Zhang Xiao Fan began to slowly inhaled the icy night air, only to see the paled face scholar smile before answering Taoist Cang Song, "I am but a lowly scholar under the command of Ghost King." Ghost King grinned and shook his head before he bellowed out, "Brother Long you are much too modest!"

At that very moment Elder Duanmu, standing beside Bai Duzi, was heading towards Vampire Devil but when he heard Ghost King called the pale face scholar "Brother Long", his eyes immediately scanned the man's sleeves. Even though he could not see the esper, having heard the exchange between Cang Song and them, there was no doubt that it must have truly been a magical treasure.

The magical treasures from legends were all suppose to have many wondrous abilities, and those that sought immortality place magical treasure above all else! It was no mystery that everyone present was now trying to catch a glimpse of the magical treasure while harboring the secret desire to possess it for themselves!

The three elder and the scholar merely appeared at the same time and were not acquaintance. They only know that not long after they had appear, there appeared a mysterious person next to Ghost King whose cultivation was profound, indeed an expert.

Baiduzi momentarily looked at the scholar's hand before turning to Ghost King and said : " Ghost King, we have never met this gentleman before, can't believe Ghost Sect had such an expert.."

Ghost King smile and said: " Brother Bai, our Ghost Sect is just a small Sect of the Holy Fraction, naturally can't compare with your Thousand Poison Clan."

Baiduzi huffed angrily, his Thousand Poison Clan was one of the four main Sect of the Holy Fraction, this time only because of the sect master's order did he come to this barren wasteland, speaking of which this was his first time leaving the sect during the last hundred years.

Even though he hasn't left the sect for the last hundred years he was still aware of current happening in the world. Within the four major Sect of the Holy Fraction at the current moment, Thousand Poison Clan, Lupin, and Longevity Hall were all Sects that had solid foundation and rose to prominent after the collapse of the Blood Forging Hall and death of the Blackheart Elder eight hundred years ago. Only Ghost Sect, a minor sect, suddenly rose to prominent three hundred years ago. Their experts were as numerous as the autumn leaves. Along with the other 3 sect they controlled the Holy Fraction.

The power balance within the Holy Fraction was always changing, unlike the time where Blood Forging Hall dominated and had total control. Each of the four major sects had numerous minor sect under its wing and there was always a struggle for power. On the surface however ,towards the enemy they showed a face of unity.

Before Baiduzi departure, the Thousand Poison Clan's master has given him specific instruction to keep an eye on the Ghost Sect and find out their secrets and strength. In recent years a rumor within the Holy Fraction was that the Supreme Sacred Manual "Holy Scripture" of the Holy Fraction was in the hand of the Ghost Sect.

At this moment however, "Holy Scripture" was nowhere to be seen and instead there was the Ring of Empyrean Light which has been missing thousands of years. Baiduzi deep down was astonished, knowing that Ghost Sect's strength was unfathomable, his face was slightly smiling but in reality he

was more miserable then when he was crying.

He said: “ Ghost King surely must be joking, who doesn’t know that Ghost Sect’s strength is like the rising sun, but we have never met this Brother Long before, and is very curious about him.”

Ghost King calculatingly look at Baiduzi then smiles and says: “ Since you have said that, right or wrong you will have to met eventually. Brother Bai do you know that 300 hundred years ago in our Ghost Sect there was four Holy Guardian.”

Baiduzi’s face changed colors, Elder Duanmu who was speechless said: “What, Qing Long, Bai Hu, Zhu Que, and Xuan Wu are still alive?”

The scholar and Ghost King looked at each other and laughed. He then said: “ Correct, I am indeed Qing Long.”

Within the Good Fraction there was no reaction, however Baiduzi and the Evil Fraction were astonished. Three hundred year ago, when Ghost Sect rised up, beside the previous Ghost King only the four Guardians were notable. Their influences expanded day by day, only after years of battle and bloodshed that their influence became what it was today. Needless to say one can imagine the skill level of those four.

Qing Long let out a sigh and turns toward Ghost King and said:” I am old now, look at the Good Fraction’s disciples, they show no fear, it looks like they have never heard of me.”

Ghost King laughed and said: “Brother Long don’t have to worry, the young

one don't know you now, but from now on your name will be known throughout the world."

Qing Long laughed out loud all the while staring at his right arm, his laugh full of sorrow and sadness.

Chapter 69: Qing Long (addition 1)

Lin JingYu = Long Shou Valley disciple, Xiao Fan childhood friend

Fa Shan = Tian Yin Temple's disciple

YanHong = FenXiang Valley disciple

As the flashes of light from the Evil Faction became more aggressive, the Good Faction were slowly being cut down. The main issue was that in the night darkness, it was impossible to see the Evil Faction disciples who were hiding. They really suffered a major loss.

Zhang Xiao Fan was still at his original position and saw that his surrounding seniors and Ling TianEr's stress were mounting, he felt anxious. He felt that even though his body was tired but still fine, he went up to join the battle.

At this moment, suddenly a soft whistling sound was heard, like celestial wind chimes resounding through the nine heavens, pleasing music to the ear. A splendid blue light suddenly rise up, Lu XueQi rise with the sword but that TianYa divine sword shone resplendently and it actually lighted up the areas around it.

Darkness, appears not to be able to touch her!

But she hurl towards the darkness. “Hu”, a sharp whistling sound that shook the heaven, this beautiful girl, turned into a blue electric light, shot towards the darkness of the ancient forest.

A few moments later, only blue light radiating was seen, cries of alarm from the darkness were heard, the pressure from the crowd were lifted monetarily.

Also at the same time, waves of Buddhism chants were heard, Fa Xiang placed his palms together and rose. Tips of his fingertips were shinning with golden lights from the dignified and solemn “reincarnations pearls” and he was slowly turning. All of a sudden, he opened his eyes and the reincarnation pearls also flew to the other side of the darkness. A few moments later, a dazzling gold light raged in the darkness, just like daylight, numerous Evil Faction disciples cried and flew out.

This immediately change the situation, like QiHao, Lin JingYu, LiXun, YanHong and even FaShan, ShiTo etc all of the outstanding younger generation of Good Faction, they were only being caught unprepared beforehand and now started to attack one after another. And the Evil Faction, who were slyly attacking from the surrounding, appeared not to have skilled masters, and not many could defend that well. The situation started to turn towards the Good Faction.

Standing far way, Ghost King and Qing long, who were taking it in, frowned. Qing Long shook his head slightly, sighed and said, “the Good Faction young disciples’ aptitude, everyone without exception, one in a million, compared to our juniors, they are much stronger”

Ghost King nodded and looked somewhere far away. He suddenly said, “The

girl that attacked first, her magical weapon, did you see it clearly?”

Qing Long said indifferently, “is TianYa right?”

Ghost King turned his head and looked at him, Qing Long smiled, slowly and seemingly spoke in a soft and low voice, “TianYa divine sword, TianYa divine sword!”

Ghost King stood with his hands clasped behind, slowly said, “and that monk from TianYin Temple, he had reincarnation pearls in his hands, the white attired young guy from QingYun sect, his dark green like water celestial sword, should be “ZhanLong (Dragon Slayer) sword”. The Good Faction these few years really took pains to cultivate their young”

Chapter 70: The Past

By this time, the late night forest has been lightened up almost like daylight from the numerous magical weapons' lights. From the deep of the forest until the most intensive battled open-air area, it seemed like piercingly cold sharp lights were flying everywhere. Under the colorful rays of lights, fresh red blood was unceasingly splattered onto slightly trembling trees.

Coagulated into blood pearls, dripping silently.

Lu XueQi landed with a clear whistling sound. In a moment, the night turned azure like the sky, a halo as clear as water appeared from her TianYa divine sword and shot out in all directions. Like a beautiful girl's glance brushing past this mundane world.

Countless lush leaves turning outwards, making a rustling sound.

The surrounding black attired Evil Faction disciples were making odd cries incessantly. Although there were ones who tried their best to resist but eventually were knocked down too. Ever since making it alive from the Forsaken Abyss till now, her skills actually seemed to have progressed a lot.

Zhang Xiao Fan observed from afar and sucked in a breath of cold air, surprised and also respectful. Surrounding him, Song Daren, Du BiShu etc were gradually buckling under the strain. Although there were not many Evil Faction disciples who were attacking the Bamboo Valley disciples but those were much skilled than the rest. Their clothes also carried a human skull symbol but not known if that was Ghost King Clan's symbol.

Tian LingEr stood in front of Zhang Xiao Fan, her face was pale and little beads of perspiration also appeared on her forehead. Her actions of controlling the amber vermilion silk appeared slightly flustered.

Although among the Bamboo Valley disciples, except for Zhang XiaoFan, Tian LingEr was the youngest but her aptitude far exceeded the few senior brothers. Comparing skills, except for Song Daren, she was next. Not sure was it that she was a girl or due to other reason, the Evil Faction disciples mainly kept attacking her. Now, even Zhang Xiao Fan also felt that Tian LingEr was feeling the strain.

The night wind quietly blew past the forest that has become a battlefield. In the depth of the darkness, countless eyes seemed to be also spying on them.

The shouts around them were getting urgent; Zhang Xiao Fan frowned and looked outside. Only in a short period of time, the situation changed again. The Evil Faction disciples retaliated and Lu XueQi, Fa Xiang, QiHao etc who were previously fighting like splitting a bamboo, were now surrounded and battling with masters. Although not at a disadvantage now but they were already unable to get away.

However for those somehow less skilled Good Faction disciples in the surroundings, more and more Evil Faction disciples were gathering around. Shrieks were heard and the situation has started to lean towards the Evil Faction again.

Zhang Xiao Fan gritted his teeth and took out his firestick. He was unwilling to continue to rest and wanted to at least give a helping hand to his seniors and Tian LingEr. However, he has just started to move when he heard Tian LingEr cried out. He stifled, as if tripped by something, in a moment there were three or four strange magical weapons' lights charging over.

Song Daren and the rest were shocked but were unable to give aid in time. Zhang Xiao Fan did not stop to think and rushed over but it seemed that he was also a step too late.

At that critical moment, Tian LingEr's face was as white as paper. Both of her hands did not stop wielding, "Shua Shua Shua" the amber vermilion silk danced in front of her to defend but it was also too late. In an instant, there were 2 magical weapons, one black and one white, charging with the speed of light towards her.

Zhang Xiao Fan's heart almost jumped out. He opened his mouth but was unable to make any sound. At that moment, there was a flash of white, a figure blocked in front of Tian LingEr, using both hands and immediately strike back at both weapons. In the far darkness, shouts of anger and cries of fear were heard right away.

Everybody sighed in relief and looked at the figure. It was Master's wife, SuRu. SuRu quickly turned her head back and did a quick scan on Tian LingEr and said, "LingEr, are you alright?"

Tian LingEr was still in shocked, nodded and said, "Yes Mother, I am alright"

SuRu frowned, at this time the Evil Faction disciples were closing in again. SuRu quickly said, “All of you quickly go, we cannot stay here! All of you leave this island once you all have escape, we will rendezvous at East China Chang He City.”

Song Daren, Tian LingEr and the rest were shocked but they did not dare to speak upon looking at SuRu’s solemn face. Tian LingEr muttered a reply and the Bamboo Valley disciples started to walk towards the back.

At the moment, the situation was a mess and the battle was unusually intense. SuRu dodged to the left and swayed to the right, and went up to help whenever she saw the Good Faction disciples were in danger, thus allowing them to withdraw from the battle.

Her skills were considerably high and far exceeded the general Evil Faction disciples. Only her fluttering figure was seen in the dim light of the night, graceful and never revealed any traces of urgency.

As long as there was a break, she raised her head and looked up. She could see only heavy dark clouds in the sky but a disarray of brilliant flashes was also seen. Battling in the mid-air would be Taoist Cang Song and Tian BuYi fighting with Evil Faction Bai DuZi and Elder Duanmu.

Her heart was rather worried but looking at Tian BuYi, who just had a fight with Blood Sucking Demon, and currently still not at a disadvantage with Elder Duanmu, she was then relieved.

Most of the Good Faction disciples had separately left after SuRu did a few attacks to rescue them. Those left in the battlefield were mainly a few higher skilled disciples like Lu XueQi *etc.* But over at the Evil Faction side, it seemed like

many had also left to pursue so even though the Good Faction side was still at a disadvantage, there were no immediate danger at the moment.

However, SuRu felt more anxious. Because ahead of her, from the beginning till the end: Ghost King and Qing Long, the two most mysterious figures from the Evil Faction, ... had always been standing there, smiling and watching from the sidelines.

Over at Evil Faction side, Ghost King and Qing Long were standing side by side and looking on while Good Faction disciples were unceasingly running away. Qing Long commented indifferently, "You are going to let these people go?"

Ghost King smiled and said, "These juniors are not important. Beside, this time we come to LiuBo hill, is not really to fight till our deaths with the Good Faction people!"

Qing Long nodded, raised his head and looked at mid-air saying, "These two were among the five-member team from Qing Yun Sect that brazenly encroached into our Wildlands and savaged us badly?"

Ghost King said, "You are right. Taoist Cang Song, Tian BuYi and Shang ZhengLiang, Ceng ShuChang, plus one more, Wan Jian Yi, it's those five people"

Qing Long softly heaved a sigh and said, "A hundred years time passed by in a great haste. At that time, these people were only young ones resolute to kill and now unexpectedly are also leading and taking charge"

Ghost King smiled lightly and said, "Long brother, you were not present at that time due to some affairs. If not, with the four of you holy envoys, during

Qing Yun hill battle, even though our holy sect may not be able to pull out a victory but at least we would not be defeated that tragically!”

Qing Long shook his head and said, “Impossible. The three main Good Faction sects were at their prime hundred years ago and those old fools were coming out of their retirement one after another. Even if you included us, we would not be able to defend as well. But, hehe, it is laughable that at the Holy Hall in Wildlands, thousands of our holy sect members flee at the mere sight of them....”

Ghost King was silenced for a moment and slowly said, “Right. I was not at Holy Hall at that time because I had to take care of the our predecessor Ghost King but I also heard that it was very embarrassing. It was a pity that our highly skilled disciples were sent out to Qing Yun big battle and had countless casualties, if not...”

Qing Long suddenly interrupted, “That time I was at Holy Hall”

Ghost King’s body shook in surprise and said, “What? Long brother, you were at the Holy Hall at that time?”

Qing Long (also can be translated as Green Dragon) laughed bitterly and said, “That’s right. Actually not only that, except for that big slacker Black Warrior, White Tiger and Scarlet Bird were also at Holy Hall”

Ghost King’s face expression changed. He forced a smile and said, “Then how is it that Long brother you were unable to recognise these two people just now?”

Qing Long laughed bitterly again and said, "It could be said as an embarrassing matter. The attack by these five did not stop at Wildlands, they even invaded into our Holy Temple. The act shocked and terrified the whole Wildlands. Although both Wan Du (Thousand Poison) Clan and Chang Shen (Longevity) Hall were in charge of guarding the Holy Temple, and despite the fact we were never on good terms with these two factions, nevertheless the three of us - White Tiger, Scarlet Bird and myself - decided to lend a hand together with other branches' highly skilled fighters, in defending the Holy Hall"

Ghost King took a look towards mid-air and said, "Why? Their skills were already that powerful a hundred years ago?"

Qing Long shook his head and said, "Actually it was not so. After the crisis was over, I thought over it carefully. Actually it was because after our great loss at Qing Yun hill, many of our highly skilled fighters were either dead or injured and there was a widespread panic. When these five people barged in and attacked, we thought for a moment that the Good Faction forces had already arrived and we lost our will to fight. But we did not imagine that there were only five people"

He paused a while and continued, "Among these five people, I had only met Wan Jian Yi which was why I did not recognise the other four. When they attacked Holy Hall, five of them went separate ways instead and each came in from different direction. At that time, we were unprepared and in a state of agitated confusion. Once we heard cries of attack coming from all directions, we just lost our minds. If we were to receive the attacks calmly and waited until the situation settled down, we would have won without question. A pity, 'Ai'! Too bad they had someone like Wan Jian Yi..."

Ghost King frowned and said, "What about this person?"

Qing Long briefly closed his eyes and was silent for a moment. He heaved a long sigh, shook his head and said, "That person was a man of rare talent and outstanding ability. One that I rarely seen in my whole life. After the event, we discussed among ourselves and felt that even though the skills of the other four were good but compared to Wan Jian Yi, there was so much difference. It can be said that if they did not have him, these Qing Yun Sect guys absolutely would not be able to invade into our Wildlands, not to say our Holy Hall"

Looking at Qing Long's expression, there was a look of wistfulness..it was as if he was reliving the memories, "That time, the four of them attacked from the sides, front and rear but we only concentrated our forces at Holy Hall main door. While we were hesitating and panic-stricken, Wan Jian Yi wielded his sword and carried on the attack alone"

Ghost King frowned and said, "Only him?"

Qing Long sighed and said, "Yes, only him alone. I still remembered his clothes were as white as snow, his sword were jade green like water....Ah! That's right, it was that Dragon Slayer Sword! I almost could not recognise it after not seeing it for a hundred years"

Ghost King was shocked. He looked at the direction of Qing Long's left finger but it was pointing at the one who was still fighting in the battlefield, the jade green like autumn waters colored sword in Lin JingYu's hand, the Dragon Slayer Sword.

"So that Dragon Slayer Sword was the one held by Wan Jian Yi originally?"

Qing Long nodded and said, "That's right, it was in his hand. At that time, I

loudly questioned him but he only laughed incessantly and charged into the crowd. He was attacking like an unhindered and irresistible force. “Zeze, Zeze*”
Ai! He was really a hero!”

Ghost King looked on admiringly and nodded his head saying, “That person was really unbelievable and extremely audacious. What happened next?”

Qing Long said, “We were all taken aback and angry but were worried that beside him, there might be other Good Faction skilled fighters attacking in any moment. We were even more alarmed when the battle roars behind the Holy Temple were getting nearer. In a state of panic, he managed to enter the Main Hall where we worshiped our Wisdom Queen and Wisdom King.

Ghost King’s usually expressionless face suddenly turned pale. He asked hoarsely, “What?”

Qing Long laughed bitterly and said, “Even you have such a reaction. You could have imagined how infuriated we felt at that time. We did not care whether there were still any highly skilled fighters coming in, all of us were like madman and rushed towards him. Whatever magical weapons we had, we used. In a short while, his white dress was stained with blood. However, he did not even turn back and continued to charge into the Holy Temple. He swiftly flew up onto the altar where we placed our offerings for our Wisdom King and Queen idols. In-between the two idols, he physically engraved three big words into the white wall, [Wan Jian Yi]!

Ghost King was speechless.

Qing Long suddenly said, “You know that Scarlet Bird had always veiled her face, right?”

Ghost King was surprised and said, “Yes, what happened?”

Qing Long said, “Among us, she was the only female but was also the most devoted one towards our two sacred idols. On that day, she was the first to attack without any hesitation. She sneaked an attack in the split seconds that Wan Jian Yi took to carve the wordings and slashed her sword. And that slash actually chopped off Wan Jian Yi’s left arm”

Ghost King was again shocked.

Qing Long heaved a sigh and said, “It gave you a shock too right! We were stunned too. It was because when Wan Jian Yi charged in, his mighty aura was overpowering. We never imagined that he would take on all of us alone and even how mighty he would be, he would eventually be spent, like an arrow at the end of its flight. But his countenance did not change and only his face looked pale even though his left arm was chopped off and blood was spurting like a fountain. Instead, he turned and went to Scarlet Bird, stretched out his hand and lifted off her veil. He looked at her, laughed and said, “A stunning beauty as expected!”. Saying which, he rode and steered his Dragon Slayer Sword and fought his way out again...”

Ghost King shook his head and said, “He was still able to fight his way out even like that?”

Qing Long sighed and said, “Firstly, he was much too dauntless. His blood was all over the Holy Temple and despite losing his arm, his sword aura force seemed to surpass what we felt previously. Secondly, his other four Qing Yun

Sect teammates started a fire in the Holy Temple. Thick black smoke billowed everywhere. We were worried that there might be more Good Faction enemies and we were also anxious to put out the fire. Unexpectedly in that panic state of mind, we let him escaped”

Ghost King heaved a long sigh and said, “Couldn’t imagine that within the Good Faction, there was still such a hero!”

Qing Long lightly said, “It was a pity even though he was a hero without a doubt, unparalleled in this world but he did not have a good ending. After we confirmed that there were actually only 5 member team from Qing Yun Sect that attacked us on that day, we were really incensed. But I could also see that despite the fact that those guys from Thousand Poison Clan and Longevity Hall were cursing fiercely but in their heart, all were in awe of Wan Jian Yi. Especially that junior sister of mine, Scarlet Bird....Ai!”

He seemed to have thought of something and did not continue his statement. Instead, he changed the topic and said, “At that time, we all felt that among the Qing Yun Sect, he would definitely be the one to take over as the chief head of the sect. However, not long after the incident, we heard that it was his senior brother, Dao Xuan, who took over. And from that time onwards, we never heard anything more about this man with astonishing talents. It was only today then I know that he had actually passed away.”

He heaved a sigh after he finished, showing great regret over the matter.

Ghost King gave a smile and said, “That’s right. It was a pity that I could not have a showdown with this hero, it was really a regret of a lifetime”

Qing Long looked up, glance at mid-air and suddenly gave a sarcastic laugh

and said, “Elder Duanmu and Bai DuZi these fellows escaped into Wildlands after losing at Qing Yin Hill. Eventually, they met Wan Jian Yi five-member team before reaching Holy Temple and fled after getting a beating. They did not even dare to return to Holy Temple. Now they dared to boldly ask for Wan Jian Yi. They were really shameless!”

Ghost King smiled lightly and said, “They were only Thousand Poison Clan that old freak’s lackeys. Long brother, why do you bother to get angry over them!”

Qing Long stretched his hand, lightly flicked his white dress and lightly said, “It was an unimaginable big insult when Wan Jian Yi encroached our Holy Temple. I painstakingly practised for a hundred years and also took great risk to find the Universe Pure Light Ring, only to prepare for that very one day where I could fight with him again. When I heard that he had passed away today, I only felt disappointment and regret. But I never expected these people to say shameless words like digging out his body from his grave. I felt ashamed to be associated with them!”

Ghost King shook his head and smiled gently. He looked up to watch the battles but could only see that the flashes of lights in the mid air were getting intense and he almost could not make out those four people silhouette. And the dark clouds in the sky were as if being lighted up even more from the magical weapons’ lights.

Silence across the firmament, only in the distance vast sea, that series of long whistling sounds, gradually becoming mournful.

Ghost King suddenly frowned, turned and said to Qing Long, “Did you feel

that, something strange was going on tonight?”

Qing Long looked up, remained silent for a moment, his countenance suddenly changed and said, “You mean...”

Ghost King nodded, said, “The legend stated that every time the strange beast was born, Heaven and Earth would surely change, accompanied with big storms. Therefore, in the ancient scroll, [Divine and Evil The strange], it was recorded that Thunder God mounted that beast”

Qing Long’s expression gradually turned solemn. He frowned and said, “Why was it such a untimely coincidence, tonight would be the night?”

Ghost King pondered for a while and said, “It had been a few days since I arrived at this LiuBo Hill, but during the past few days at dusk, there had not been any such strange whistling sounds like tonight, I was only afraid if the Kui Niu* was really coming out tonight, it seemed like we would have to do some early preparation”

Qing Long slowly nodded his head, said, “That’s right. After all, Kui Niu matter would be more important, let us leave this place to Thousand Poison Clan people. Heihei , once we subdued Kui Niu, with another three supernatural beasts, our...”

Ghost King suddenly gave a cough, Qing Long was startled and immediately laughed in spite of himself while shaking his head and said, “The hundred years of bitter training, turned one into an idiot, keke, ZongZhu please don’t mind!”

Ghost King faintly smiled, turned and left, without another glance at the

people fighting intensely in the battlefield.

Qing Long glanced at a distance, but from afar, he saw that the Good Faction disciples were leaving one after another, gradually fading into the forest, figures disappearing. Involuntarily his thoughts were again vaguely stirred up, he heaved a sigh, and turned to follow Ghost King.

Silent darkness, but countless ferocious eyes seemed to be watching menacingly, like a tiger eyeing its prey. When the crowd ran, a wail of misery was heard from somewhere, from far it drifted out, reverberated in the depths of the forest and accompanied the mysteriously long whistling sound in the distant vast sea.

That night, seemed especially forlorn!

Zhang Xiao Fan and Ling TianEr, Song Daren, He DaZhi and Du BiShu, a total of five people, drove their magical weapons and hastily flew forward into the forest.

Actually, with their current skill levels, directing their weapons to drive up in the sky would naturally be much faster, but just as they broke through the Evil Faction disciples' encirclement and were about to take off, they noticed some distance away, a few juniors followed suit and flew up. Suddenly a few ominous lights shined through the dense forest below their feet, and literally beat them down.

Those wails of misery, it seemed they would not be able to make it alive.

Everyone's countenance changed. The lush foliage forest before them, in

addition the late night, and the numerous Evil Faction disciples surrounding them, if they were to be discovered while flying out, they would practically become live targets.

Song Daren as the eldest disciple, had seen more compared to the rest of his junior sister and brothers, made the decision on the spot and decided to fly rapidly in-between the forest. Although the forest was dark and hard to spot the Evil faction disciples, but the other party would not be able to take a good look at oneself too. As long as they kept going east, once out of the forest, they would leave the Evil Faction encirclement and be much safer.

Once the decision was made, the five of them flew off with all of their might towards east.

Song Daren took the lead, Zhang Xiao Fan was the last. Everyone had their concentration on driving their weapons, flying back and forth in the middle of the forest.

At that moment, although Zhang Xiao Fan's chest was still throbbing with pain, but the wound sustained from the fight with Blood Sucking Demon was not as serious as he had thought. And from the firestick that was tied to his right arm, it radiated warm Yang energy to him from time to time, circulating slowly in his body, and seemed to have special control over Blood Sucking Demon's strange blood-sucking art skill.

But although that firestick stealthily controlled the evil power from the blood-sucking art skill, but at that moment when Zhang Xiao Fan was using his firestick to fly forward, a strange cold feeling passed on from the firestick and yet had some conflict with the Inferno Mirror. In his body, the two strange energy currents repelled once they encountered each other. However, since the Inferno Mirror was not energized by Zhang Xiao Fan's spiritual energy, very soon it was oppressed by the cold energy from the firestick.

Zhang Xiao Fan was concentrating all his energy on following his seniors brothers' and sister's flight paths, and naturally would not noticed these minor changes in his body. He only kept looking up while he was flying, but saw that dark clouds beyond the horizon, churning like boiling water, waves of light rays, lighting up the nine heavens directly, turned half of the horizon red.

Over there, obviously would be the battleground between his teacher, Tian BuYi, and ShiBo**, Taoist Cang Song, with the Evil Faction demons, he wondered if the elders would be alright?

Thinking about that, Zhang Xiao Fan immediately shook his head, musing that since his teacher's skills were that powerful, naturally he would not have any mishap and he was probably worrying too much. After laughing at himself for having too much concerns, he bestirred himself, increased his speed so that he could follow well behind his Senior brothers and sister.

The darkness in front of them was like a boundless net, with long and unseen boundaries. The five of them gradually became far from the noisy fights, immersing into the darkness, even the surroundings were also gradually quieting down.

In the night, there seemed to be only darkness in front of them, the approaching sea surface, that mysterious mournful long whistling sound, distinctly became clearer, distinctly became nearer.

Notes: *夔牛: Kui Niu - An old name for a wild ox or yak
(ref:http://www.absoluteastronomy.com/top...ese_mythology)) . It was also described in Baike as an legendary animal that sounded like thunder, one

legged and it's image was seen on bronze during Shang and Western Zhou Dynasty

It appears that Kui Niu and most of the other divine animals or demonic beasts that follows in later chapters are drawn mainly from the 山海经, (Shan Hai Jing), Classics of Mountains and SeasKui Niu and most of the other divine animals or demonic beasts that follows in later chapters are drawn mainly from the 山海经, (Shan Hai Jing), Classics of Mountains and Seas (ref:http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Classic...tains_and_Seas).

Images of the beasts can be found here, including the Kui Niu,<http://www.humanpopulationacademy.or...-shan-hai-jing>, <http://zh.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Wu...angzhu-Kui.jpg>.

**A term for older brother/respectful form of address for a senior, which in this case would mean Zhang Xiao Fan's teacher's senior bro

Chapter 71: Ambush

TL:

I have changed a few characters names:

Cynical Dialectian=Wild Dog Taoist

Nian Boss=Nian Leader

Lin Fang=Lin Feng

I have also made a correction to Book 3, Chapter 70: The Past - Part 1 to change Dead Spirit Deep Pool to Forsaken Abyss.

The five of them, were all from Qing Yun Sect, so while using their magical weapons to fly at full speed, the speed was naturally unbelievably fast. Within a short time, all of them, using their magical weapon's subtle lights, could already faintly viewed the boundaries of the forest, and even further away, the sea that was disappearing into the darkness of the night

A breeze blowing from the sea, accompanied by the intermittent long whistling, reverberated in the late night.

Everyone was delighted, their moods brightened and were intending to speed up and fly out of that dark forest. Suddenly, at that moment, a dark red stream of light shot out silently from the darkness, in a flash, hit He DaZhi who was in

the middle of the group.

He DaZhi groaned, his body swayed, and fell from mid-air. Song Daren and the rest were shocked, but had already flew some distance in that span of seconds, quickly turned back. Zhang Xiao Fan, Tian LingEr who were following behind, also quickly flew towards He DaZhi.

Among them, Zhu BiShu was nearest to He DaZhi, his reaction was also the fastest. Immediately he abruptly stopped his body physique and landed beside He DaZhi. He scanned the surrounding areas while urgently asking, “Fourth brother, are you alright?”

He DaZhi’s forehead was already covered with cold sweat within that short while, hoarsely said, “Be careful, that person’s demonic skills were quite powerful...”

He had not even completed the sentence, in the darkness, another stream of dark red light shot over. Du BiShu frowned, thrown himself sideways in front of He DaZhi, both of his hands moved to grab hold of his magical weapon, that three mysterious and strange dices immediately flew out, to receive that red light.

In the darkness, a sound “Yi” was heard from someone. That exclamation seemed to carry a feeling of odd surprise but it was directed at the outlook of the magical weapon. Whether Du BiShu’s skills were high or low, that stream of light did not hesitate and continue to attack.

In that split second, both objects collided. Du BiShu’s body shook from the impact and when that light hit onto his dices, a feeling of dense evil energy spread onto his own weapon, and at the same time, using his weapon as a

medium, he indistinctly felt that it was inclining to attack him.

Du BiShu was shocked. He had never seen that level of evil heretic skill before. While he was still lost on his next move, Song Daren, Ling TianEr and the rest had already arrived. Zhang Xiao Fan followed behind, and frowned. He felt that that red light was somehow familiar, seemed like Evil Faction Blood Forger Hall, Nian Leader's [Red Devil Eye] encountered at Forsaken Abyss.

As expected, following a few long laughter, a number of people walked out from the darkness. It was really the group of people from Blood Forger Hall, headed by Nian Leader. Nian Leader stood at upfront, a big red eye on his face, looking extremely horrible. However, it was already slowly starting to return to normal. And behind him, that beautiful lady and Liu Gao, Wild Dog Taoist were also there, only the young Lin Feng was not seen.

Zhang Xiao Fan had met these people many times, he recognized them at one glance, especially that Wild Dog Taoist. It was him who brought the Blood Sucking Demon over tonight and caused Zhang Xiao Fan to suffer so much hardship. But looking at him at that moment, Wild Dog's face was full of green and purple patches and riddled with scars. It was most probably because he was carelessly flung by Blood Sucking Demon a while ago but unfortunately he crashed into that thick wooded forest which made him disoriented, and a swollen face.

These people from Blood Forger Hall were weak and powerless. While the Evil Faction's main sects battled intensely against the Good Faction, they were, however, assigned to that far away forest boundary, to wait for fishes that slipped through the net. Obviously, the Evil Faction looked down on them.

Nian Leader and the rest were angry but did not dare to speak out. They had been sulking but unexpectedly there were actually people who escaped out

from the forest. It was a really good opportunity for them to gain favour, they only had to capture these people and in the days to come, Blood Forger Hall's status in Evil Faction, would naturally leveled up.

Wild Dog Taoist was, at first, extremely depressed tonight, when he turned and looked, he suddenly discovered that Qing Yun lad was actually also among the five people, and at that moment the lad was also looking back at him, his face expression appeared to have a smile but yet not a smile, presumably laughing at him.

This time, Wild dog's anger was no trivial matter. Because Blood Sucking Demon's skill attainments were too high and with his his savage and cruel characteristic, even with ten guts, Wild Dog also would not have the courage to seek revenge. But at that moment he saw Zhang Xiao Fan, his immediate thought was that if not for that brat, he would not have suffered that kind of misery. Instantly, his anger rushed to his head, he cried Wa Wa twice, brandished his magical weapon, a long sharp fang, and attacked Zhang Xiao Fan.

Since the sneak attack was successful, Nian Leader was feeling arrogant himself and was about to say a few words like: [All of you better smarten up and you would suffer less.] those kind of arrogant sarcastic words. Unexpectedly, he had not even uttered the words when Wild Dog had already charged out. The words were on the verge of being said out, his mouth was half-opened and was about to speak, yet he had to forcibly swallow back those words. In that moment of agitation, he felt a pain in his chest and had to cough twice. He was extremely vexed!

Song Daren quickly flew to He DaZhi's side, landed and did a check. He

discovered that due to the sudden attack and his junior brother was unable to defend in time, that evil heterodox energy had already penetrated his body. It seemed like he would not be able to fight for a short period of time, but luckily there was no danger to his life.

While he was worrying over that, suddenly he heard two strange shouts behind him, and saw a sorcerer, whose face resembled a dog, charging over. Junior Zhang Xiao Fan wielded his magical weapon and received the blows, Ping Ping Pang Pang, an aggressive fight started.

From far, Nian Leader angrily glared at Wild Dog, but soon after, he started to frown. He recognised the one fighting with Wild Dog now, was the Qing Yun lad who had that strange firestick-like magical weapon. That day at Forsaken Abyss, his very own Red Devil Eye actually could do nothing to that person, and nearly suffered some damage from him, therefore he had a very deep impression.

By then, Wild Dog Taoist and Zhang Xiao Fan had already fought for some time, the two figures flashed between the trees in the forest, and almost became two streams of light flitting by. But in Wild Dog Taoist's heart, he was instead becoming more and more alarmed. Since their last encounter several months ago, Zhang Xiao Fan's skill level actually progressed much more than that day at Forsaken Abyss, and especially that strangely-looking firestick in his hand, it had a ugly outlook but with glittering green light, flashing here and there in front of him.

TL:

And I changed a few description terms, not sure if it is appropriate or if it is better to use back the previous ones. If you guys have any better suggestions,

pls let me know, thanks.

Libruis=Tian Shu (Or Book of Heaven. It was quite hard to find an appropriate word so I decided to just literally translate it.)

Fuwa=Buddhism

Fawin Wisdom=Great Brahman Wisdom (大梵般若)

Each time his fang magical weapon attacked, it was immediately defeated by that firestick, and as time passed by, that green black ordinary pearl at the head of the firestick, slowly began to radiate a noxious suction force, targeting him.

Wild Dog Taoist's heart turned cold. He could not help but recalled that day that unlucky Jiang Lao San, was sucked dry by this lad without any rhyme or reason and died. He silently lamented that how was it possible that nowadays those little bastards from Good Faction, the magical weapons in their hands were actually tenfold more evil than your own Wild Dog grandfather!

Nian Leader frowned tightly. Since many of the Holy Sect members were here tonight, he expected that it would be not long before someone made their way over, and if they saw that Blood Forger Sect currently could not even handle a few Qing Yun juniors, then in the future they would be too ashamed to face anyone. Immediately he turned and signalled to both beautiful lady and Liu Gao.

Both of them understood, they moved immediately and headed to the scene. But almost at the same time, Song Daren and Ling TianEr also went up to receive them.

The circumstances tonight were actually unfavourable to the Good Faction, initially everyone thought the gathering at this desolated land involved only the small group of Evil Faction remaining members, unexpectedly not only a huge number of people turned out, even those old evil heads living in seclusion for a hundred years also came.

Song Daren felt anxious. It seemed they were again entangled with the Evil Faction and he intended to go all out to dispose these evil demons in order to get away, unexpectedly when he had just made his move, sideways a stream of dark red light struck towards him. Song Daren quickly used his celestial sword to receive it, his heart filled with trepidation.

The evil toxic energy from the Red Devil Eye passed through the “Ten Tigers” celestial sword in an instant and continued to advance. Song Daren’s level of Taoism attainment was deep, naturally he was able to withstand it, but at the same time, he felt that this sorcerer’s skills were in fact not low, and might even surpassed himself.

At that moment, Tian LingEr had already started fighting with that beautiful lady. Du BiShu looked on from the side for a while, and already could tell that that big eye sorcerer’s demonic skills were powerful and big senior brother was having some difficulty, so he rushed up and join Song Daren to fight as two against one. Nian Leader never moved from his spot, the red stream of light filled with evil deadly energy continued to shoot out from his Red Devil Eye, even when it was two against one, he was still not at a disadvantage.

And at a distance away, Liu Gao instead went to assist Wild Dog, and attacked Zhang Xiao Fan together.

But Zhang Xiao Fan, after all, was not that Nian Leader, who had trained for many years. After a short while, he immediately felt the pressure. Wild Dog now

had a strong ally and it boosted his morale. He laughed loudly and said: [Stinky brat, today you are in my hands, watch how Wild Dog Grandpa take care of you!]

Zhang Xiao Fan was unable to speak out the difficulties in his heart and only felt the pressure was mounting. But he could only grit his teeth and hang on, hoping both his senior brothers and sister could quickly defeat the other sorcerers so that they could come over and help him. Actually, ever since he comprehended some parts of Tian Shu from the Black Stone Cave, his attainments had already progressed to the next level without his own awareness. It was just that firstly, the time he took to comprehend was too short, and he did not practice enough; Secondly, he was also unable to use the Buddhism's [Great Brahman Wisdom] in front of everyone; Lastly, most importantly, tonight he was beaten by the Blood Sucking Demon. Although his injuries were not serious, but because at the moment, he was fighting intensively, as time goes by, his body was beginning not to heed his will.

And looking at the fight beside, Tian LingEr were almost equal to that beautiful lady. Both flew high and evaded low, their appearances were also equally beautiful and with their graceful figures, it was actually nice to watch. However, to come over and help, it would be hard to do so for a short period of time; and over at Song Daren, Du BiShu, at the moment, both were being tied down tightly by Nian Leader and were unable to get away. Although they saw that their junior brother's situation was increasingly becoming dangerous but with round after round of unceasingly stream of dark red light attacking, even if it was urgent they were also unable to get away, and instead because of the distraction, both were almost hit by the red light.

Zhang Xiao Fan was forced to move back by both Wild Dog and Liu Gao, beads of perspiration appeared on his forehead, his breathing became laboured, even some of his steps were also disordered. He DaZhi lie on the ground, his heart became anxious. He knew that if there were still no help given, in a period of

three minutes, he was afraid his junior brother would be killed by these two sorcerers.

The Bamboo Valley Sect disciples had always been close. Towards this honest junior brother, Zhang Xiao Fan, they always had been fond of him. Right now, He DaZhi gritted his teeth, forced himself to stand up, took out his magical weapon and intended to give a helping hand to his junior brother. But he had not even summon the commands, the evil energy inside his body began to flow in reverse. His head spinned and saw stars, and [Po Tong] fell over again.

Zhang Xiao Fan heard the sound, turned around from the intensive battle, and immediately was shocked. He cried out, "Fourth Brother!"

Unexpectedly, at that moment when he was distracted, Wild Dog and Liu Gao's weapons attacked at the same time. Zhang Xiao Fan could not react in time and barely managed to raise his firestick in front of him to defend. [Hong] a loud sound, Wild Dog and Liu Gao's bodies shook violently but Zhang Xiao Fan's body flew out from the impact and hit the ground hard.

Wild Dog gave a loud laugh, flew up together with Liu Gao, his fang and Liu Gao's weapon raised up and struck down, about to take Zhang Xiao Fan's life. At a distant, Tian LingEr, Song Daren and the rest cried out involuntarily, but was unable to come to his rescue in time, and could only watched helplessly as Zhang Xiao Fan was about to die there. He DaZhi had already turned his head over, he could not bear to watch anymore.

Suddenly, a flash of blue light shot past in the forest, an aperture as blue as water waves, quickly rippled over, illuminating the whole place in an instant.

He DaZhi was overjoyed, he involuntarily called out: “Lu.....”

He had not completed his sentence, and saw that figure broke through the sky, like an arrow shot from a bow. Lu XueQi rode on her sword, her face as cold as frost, but in her pair of bright eyes, rays of blue light from the TianYa Sword in front of her reflected in it, as if it was emitting blazing flares, burning unceasingly.

Wild Dog and Liu Gao were greatly shocked, the blue light that was just seen a distant away, was now in front of them in an blink of an eye. And looking at it, it seemed to have the ability to split the sky and break a mountain, an eternal unparalleled grandeur. Comparing both matters, their own lives were naturally more important. Almost at the same time, both of them took back their weapons, and struck back together at the TianYa sword.

[Rumble], sands flew and stones rolled, the trees in the forest nearby violently swayed, leaves fell one after another. Wild Dog and Liu Gao flew backwards, landed straight behind Nian Leader.

Lu XueQi's figure slowly emerged from the sky full of falling leaves, stood beside Zhang Xiao Fan. It could be because of that violent impact just now, her face looked especially pale.

Zhang Xiao Fan turned to look at her, but in the dim light of the night, her appearance was still breathtakingly beautiful, like a proud lily that bloomed in the deepest darkness. And in that ice-cold elegant expression, he instead indistinctly saw, was a trace of faint gentleness.

“Thank you.” Zhang Xia Fan suppressed the sudden feeling of a jump in his

heart and said in a low voice.

Lu XueQi shook her head, quietly said, "When I encountered danger in that Forsaken Abyss, you too saved me like this, why bother to say these words?"

Zhang Xiao Fan was stunned, for a moment he did not know what to say and silently nodded, Lu XueQi looked at him, and suddenly smiled lightly.

That was a smile in the sky full of falling leaves! Zhang XiaoFan saw it clearly, it was as if under the starlight, the frost melted only in front of him.

Zhang Xiao Fan suddenly swung his head, he dare not look at Lu XueQi again, he grabbed his firestick and ran towards his big senior brother who was dueling with Nian Leader. Lu XueQi stood behind him, watched his back figure, and was silent for a moment. She followed after him and went up to receive the attacks from Wild Dog and Liu Gao, who were coming to obstruct them.

With the addition of Lu XueQi, the situation immediately changed, her level of attainments was already high, and it progressed to another level after she escaped danger in Forsaken Abyss, besides she also had the divine weapon, TianYa, even as Liu Gao and Wild Dog attacked as two against one at the moment, both were actually still at a disadvantage.

And for Nian Leader, once he saw Zhang Xiao Fan joining the fight, his heart jumped a beat. He was not afraid of this lad's skills but was extremely fearful of the strange stick in his hands. As expected, when Zhang Xiao Fan came, he steered his firestick to block a few shots of red light, the expression in his face did not even change. The Red Devil Eye's evil deadly energy that Song Daren and etc were exceptionally wary of, seemed to be completely useless on him.

With that, Song Daren and Du BiShu were able to free their hands, the celestial sword and dices immediately went forward to give their greetings on Nian Leader's body, Nian Leader cried out indignantly repeatedly, but even how much he tried to hasten the efforts of the Red Devil Eye, Zhang Xiao Fan only felt a bit of strain while blocking the red energy light but was absolutely not affected in anyway by the deadly energy.

In a short while, Nian Leader was already pulling on the lapels and exposing the elbows (in short: unable to handle the situation), in the chaos he looked to the side, and saw that Liu Gao, Wild Dog, including that beautiful lady, also looked as if they were not able to gain an upper hand, he had no alternatives but to shout loudly, "Go!".

While he shouted, the Red Devil Eye suddenly behaved as if it had exploded, [Suo Suo Suo] seven or eight streams of red lights shot out simultaneously, Zhang Xiao Fan only managed to block five lights, but the rest of the lights already block off Song Daren and Du BiShu. Nian Leader took advantage of this window, turned around and escape. And those further away Blood Forger Hall members, had also started to retreat.

Lu XueQi snorted, disregard Song Daren's yell of "Do not pursue the beaten enemy", the TianYa celestial sword streaked across the sky, and pursued straight ahead, Zhang Xiao Fan was taken aback, and quickly followed.

The blue light of TianYa was like electricity, it caught up instantly. Trailing at the end was Wild Dog, who only felt the cold air behind him whooshing, even the fine hairs at his back were standing up, unwillingly he gave a odd cry of "Help!"

TL:

Bilu=BiYao

Nian Leader and the rest were shocked and quickly turned back but at that time, behind the Blood Forger Hall members, from within the depths of the the dark forest, suddenly a ray of white light flashed by, and a white flower drifted out from it.

Zhang Xiao Fan was standing behind, he stopped in his track, loss for words.

That strange white flower flashed and flashed again in the air, in a split second white light swept past the whole area, and seemed to conjure countless of white flower petals, turning into a rain of flowers, like a tranquil sea of flowers, it charged towards the blue light of Lu XueQi's sword.

Lu XueQi's TianYa celestial sword did not make any attempt to avoid and charged up straight. In an instant, the two extraordinary weapons with peculiar lights collided together.

Time, for that moment, seemed to suspend for one minute.

Suddenly, an invisible but strong wave of energy exploded from that collision, with the two magical weapons as the core, it exploded out in all directions. Fallen leaves fell like rain but instead were blown up towards the sky, and those people on the ground, a few actually moved back a few steps.

After a long time, the howling of the wind began to slowly quiet down. Lu XueQi flew back and stood beside Zhang Xiao Fan. Zhang Xiao Fan looked at her,

she appeared to look even paler, and it seemed like there was not even any color on her face.

Lu XueQi seemed to feel Zhang Xiao Fan's concern, turned to look at him and nodded slightly, implying that she was alright. Zhang Xiao Fan turned his head away and looked ahead.

In the darkness, that strange white flower slowly spinned in mid-air, and after a short while, it started to descend. There was no sound but out of a sudden, a hand as white as snow, stretched out from the darkness and gently took that [Heartbroken Rare Flower].

Zhang Xiao Fan suddenly felt his heart jumped again.

BiYao quietly, very quietly, walked out from the darkness, the expressions on Nian Leader and the rest appeared to be respectful but BiYao did not even glance at them. A pair of eyes, only concentrated on Zhang Xiao Fan, and then shifted onto the person next to him, Lu XueQi, carefully assessing.

Lu XueQi's gaze did not have any intention to avoid, and also stared at the girl standing opposite her, whose elegance surpassed many others.

Nobody spoke a word, the atmosphere from the intense fight earlier on, quieten down all of a sudden, and also seemed to carry some awkwardness.

Zhang Xiao Fan looked at BiYao, and looked at Lu XueQi again, and felt that his mouth had turned dry. Unexpectedly at that moment, footsteps sound was heard, it was Tian LingEr who had walked over to him. She looked strangely at Lu XueQi and BiYao, who was staring at each other, and asked Zhang Xiao Fan,

“Xiao Fan, what happened to them?”

Zhang Xiao Fan was startled but actually, he did not quite understand too. Deep down, he felt strange and embarrassed, and was caught unaware by Tian LingEr’s question. He stammered and replied that he did not know why.

But just that Tian LingEr this question, BiYao and Lu XueQi both suddenly turned and looked at her, that two pairs of calm, quiet eyes, brushed over Tian LingEr’s face.

Tian LingEr was startled and unconsciously moved back a few steps, but she and Lu XueQi, after all, were from the same sect, therefore she went to ask Lu XueQi, “Lu Senior Sister, what happened?”

Lu XueQi was silent for a while, looked away and said quietly, “Nothing.”

At the same time, BiYao, who was standing in front, also looked away.

Zhang Xiao Fan stared blankly and shook himself suddenly, silently reprimanded himself for being absurd, now that everyone here was being exposed to danger which lurked everywhere, he himself instead was staring blankly, he should really be damned. Immediately he spoke to both Tian LingEr and Lu XueQi in a low voice, “Let’s quickly go! There are really too many Evil Faction disciples on the island.”

A cold snort sounded, with a hint of anger. It was, however, made by BiYao, who was standing in front.

Zhang Xiao Fan did not dare to look at her, turned and went back. Lu XueQi

glanced at BiYao again, following which she and Tian LingEr also went back together, Song Daren and the rest waited for them to come back, helped the injured He DaZhi up, said, "Let's quickly go."

Saying which he turned and prepared to head towards the direction of the sea. Behind them, Wild Dog was leaping with eagerness but was pulled down by Nian Leader, he said, "Miss BiYao is here, do not act recklessly, we will all listen to Miss's commands."

BiYao heard it, but remained indifferent and only watched the Qing Yun Sect members gradually retreated while being on the guard against them.

And her figure, remained motionless.

Far away, from the direction of the sea that Zhang Xiao Fan and the rest retreated towards, a long and mournful cry sounded suddenly, and this time, the sound of the cry was far from the cries heard earlier tonight, like dragons singing, it resounded through the nine heavens, and shook the surrounding lands.

Also faint thunder sounds were rumbling, but that cry, seemed to come from the depths of the sea.

BiYao stood where she was, lifted her head and felt coolness on her face. A drop of water, landed on her face.

The wind started to blow, it had begun to rain.

Chapter 72: Kui Niu

TL:

Abyss Snake=ancient demon

Abyssal Viper=Black Water Mystical Viper

Like all of a sudden, drizzle of rain fell from the gloomy sky, and from the depths of the distant sea, gusts of violent strong winds, like a wild animal breaking through it's cage, howled towards that isolated small island in the middle of the boundless sea.

The wind laden with rain, surged over like (literary) hiding the sky and covering the earth, in a blink of an eye, those people were caught in the storm.

Zhang Xiao Fan followed the rest, and stopped too. He raised his hands and barely managed to shield against the lashing wind and rain, those raindrops with the size of a soybean, hit onto his face, and already he started to feel some pain.

Ahead, the sea with large waves battering in the storm, in the night, it also looked like a huge beast who woke up from a deep sleep, it started to roar!

In front of Zhang Xiao Fan and the rest, was a long beach, and at the end of the beach, lay the fairly savage sea. In the endless dark night, the waves with increasing height, kept coming waves after waves, and crashed heavily onto the smooth beach. Each time it crashed, the earth seemed to shake with it too.

Wave, and again another wave!

Resembling some ferocious gigantic beast, stepping onto the raging giant waves, slowly making it's way over to them!

Silence all around, except for the incessantly sombre thunderclaps in the dark clouds.

Everyone's expression changed. That was the might of heaven and earth!

Tian LingEr asked Song Daren in a shocked voice, "Big Senior brother, what shall we do? What is this thing?"

Song Daren also felt frightened, he had never seen such scene before, a worried frown crossed his face and he agonized on what to do next. But for Zhang Xiao Fan, who was standing at the back, although he was also shocked but because previously at Forsaken Abyss's Heartless Sea, he had witnessed the return of the ancient demon Black Water Mystical Viper, and instead was calmer. But when he recalled that day, the might of the Black Water Mystical Viper, was not what a mere human could handle, he felt a chill in his heart.

At the same time, he felt his heart suddenly moved. Unconsciously, he turned and looked at Lu XueQi, and saw that beautiful girl silently standing beside him, the wind and rain soaked her clothes and hair, which clung onto her fair and

white face. She only stared at the dark far-off places of the sea ahead of her, staring blankly.

“Yi?”, suddenly, Du BiShu, who was standing in front, yelped and pointed somewhere in front and urgently said, “All of you look in front, there seemed to be someone!”

Everyone was surprised and looked over. And really, several ten zhang (a unit of length) of the beach ahead, several people emerged suddenly from the darkness. Each and every one of them wore black and in the darkness of the night, it was hard to notice them if one did not pay attention. Presumably Du BiShu had always been sharp-eyed, unexpectedly they were being discovered by him.

But even though they were discovered, with the heavy downpour and night darkness, they simply could not see what those people were doing. They could only faintly saw that those people scattered themselves and were busy on the beach.

Tian LingEr frowned tightly, turned around and asked, “Did all of you watch closely? Who are these people?”

Du BiShu and Song Daren both shook their heads at the same time, Lu XueQi, who was at the back, suddenly said, “These are the Evil Faction people!”

Tian LingEr was taken aback for a moment, and immediately understood. At the moment, the Good Faction members on LiuBo Hill were all fighting with the Evil Faction, where would it be possible to have those ten over people doing the strange things on the beach?

At the thought of this, she became more worried and could not help but turned to look behind. However, the Evil Faction disciples who were in the fight just now, not one of them had walked out of the forest.

TL:

Peak of Widow=TongTian Peak

Mister Spirit=Venerated Spirit

Water Kirin=Water Unicorn

“What shall we do? Senior big brother?”

Everyone looked at Song Daren, Song Daren hesitated for a while, in the end he still decided that they should avoid the Evil Faction for now and said, “The circumstances are not favourable to us, we should leave first and decide later.”

Saying that, he notified everyone, and was about to turn sideways, to go further and make a detour from the beach. However, they had only moved a few steps when they heard a long cry that sounded like a dragon, rumbling from the depths of the sea.

In a short while, the sound of wind, rain and thunder from the heaven and earth, the vault of heaven, sounded loudly together. A flash of lightning which ripped apart the vast sky, streaked across the horizon, followed by an explosive sound of thunder from above. From the sea, a rolling wave as high as a small hill, suddenly as if being torn apart, separated!

The foaming waves splashed and sprayed. In the raging storm, from the dark depths, almost like stepping on claps of thunder, a massive figure impressively leaped out from the depths of the sea, and after almost blending into the night, landed down heavily.

The whole of LiuBo Hill, at the same time also quaked!

Zhang Xiao Fan and the rest of them held their breath, it was an extremely huge strange beast, it's head was slightly bigger than Qing Yun Hill TongTian Peak's Venerated Spirit Water Unicorn, the whole body shape resembled a cow, with dark green body, but there was no horn on it's head.

But most unfathomable was, below the strange beast's huge body, there was only one thick sturdy leg, right in the middle of it's stomach. Looking at the beast, it seemed to be a type of monodrama that was popular among the common people, under that fierce tough exterior, there was actually a slight comical feel and cuteness.

Right then, those black attire men on the beach immediately retreated soundlessly into the darkness. But on the beach, every several zhang away, a strange object was stuck into the sand, faint red light glowed out. And just in front of the strange beast, it formed a large circle, in the dark of the night, even though separated by the wind and rain, it was still striking.

Over at Qing Yun sect side, everyone looked at each other, wondering what the Evil Faction people were up to? Looking at it, it seemed they were targeting the strange huge beast, but the trap looked too obvious, in the night, anyone would have seen that red circle of light. The only thing that they did not know was what actually was this strange beast?

As expected, after that strange beast emerged from the dark sea, it seemed to feel something, and kept standing in the turbulent waves. It did not come ashore and only used it's large head to repeatedly stretch out and smell the air.

Du BiShu suddenly startled and exclaimed, "Oh no, this fellow may have bad eyesight!"

Everybody also reacted, right now that few red light spots were really obvious, but the beast only looked and did not notice the things in front of it, could it be because it had been living in the deep sea without using it's eyes, therefore it's eyesight had deteriorated?

Unknowingly, Qing Yin sect disciples instead, started to worry for the strange beast.

After a short period of time where they held their breath, lightning flashed and thunder boomed, whipping wind and heavy rain, there was no signs of it diminishing. But that strange beast seemed not to detect anything, nonchalantly shaking it's head. And without seeing it using any force, suddenly there was another clap of thunder, that huge body launched up into the sky and leaped forward.

That unparalleled sturdy leg, landed onto LiuBo Hill's beach, in the middle of those spots of red light, it left a deep footprint.

In the night, within the darkness, almost at the same time, a mysterious chant of incantation started.

The chant were like moans of the netherworld, low and distant, wafted

through the night storm. Also at the same time, accompanying that mysterious incantation, the light spots which were emitting weak red light, suddenly lighted up at the same time. And the black attired men who had disappeared just now, also at the same time, returned to the mysterious objects which were stuck into the ground.

The strange beast, suddenly raised it's head, after a short while, gave a tremendous shout!

“An ao.....”

The deafening sound almost became a physical sound wave, the wind and rain, because of the roar that sounded like a thunder which had landed on earth, flew out sideways, projected out!

But at this time, all the black attired men placed their hand upon the mysterious objects on the beach.

In an instant, those objects on the ground threw out brilliant lights, crystal clear red light, the red light every several zhang away, suddenly shot out sideways, in a short while, became one and formed an enormous circle of red light.

Without waiting for anyone's response, that red light circle, magnificently rise up again. Countless of red lights, at the same time, shot out and formed a spectacular wall of red light, trapping that strange beast in it. At the same time, the lights shot up directly towards the sky and finally converged in the higher

altitude.

It was as if the night had lifted off its veil, the darkness too slowly receded. A figure appeared in the air, slowly emerging.

Ghost King, standing proudly on top of a red ancient cauldron, which was floating in the high altitude. His expression was serious, both hands holding the inscription in front of him, reciting that mysterious incantation in a low voice.

And all of the red light, flowed continuously to converge in that ancient cauldron floating underneath his feet.

“An ao.....”

Again, another bellow filled with fury. That strange beast surrounded by the red light circle, leaped up angrily and slammed against the light wall directly.

Ghost King, who was in the air, grimaced, and the voice that was reciting the incantation immediately quicken.

And the Qing Yun sect members who were standing afar, right now were also dumbstruck. They had forgotten that that moment was actually their best chance to escape, and instead watched on without even blinking.

In the sky, almost like above Ghost King's head, a clap of thunder suddenly exploded, that strange beast had slammed onto the light wall with all of its might!

[Rumble!]

The thunder rumbled and boomed, reverberated in the sky. In an instant, that impressive huge wall of red light shook like a leaf, thousands of tiny electrical currents that looked like lighting, raced up and down the light wall, producing a piercing sound. Even the black attired men, standing below the strange beast and separated by the light wall, could not stop shaking.

Ghost King's face, in the mid air, seemed to pale immediately!

But eventually, after the violent shaking, this red screen did not crack. On the other hand, it slowly calmed down and that ancient cauldron under the Ghost King's feet, instead became more dazzling!

“An ao.....An ao....An ao.....”

The infuriated huge beast almost went berserk, at the same time the claps of thunder were exploding incessantly in the sky, this strange beast's body started to be suffused with green light. Again and again it slammed against that enormous light wall that was trapping it.

Between the earth and the sky, the wind and rain howled, almost as if in the nine heavens, the Thunder God was bellowing with rage too!

That successive peals of thunder, each time it seemed to quake LiuBo Hill, and shook the entire sea!

But even with this impressive Heaven and Earth's might, that sheet of red light wall including the ancient cauldron in the sky, with no clue on its origin,

unexpectedly was unwavering and instead gradually suppressed that strange beast's might.

Time slipped by quietly, the poundings from the strange beast, had also become weaker and weaker, but looking at the Evil Faction side, it appeared that they did not have it easy too. Ghost King, who was standing on top of the ancient cauldron in the sky, was better off and only looked pale. Obviously, in order to cast spells to trap such an ancient beast, even though he had help from that unusual ancient cauldron, it was still not easy at all.

And those several black attired men, more than half were already lying on the ground, they were actually killed by the vibrations from the two enormous forces. Those remaining seemed disoriented, only a few of the disciples with high attainments were still able to secure the surroundings around the red screen.

The storm, also started to diminish, and seemed to forebode something.

Eventually, after that strange beast's last pounding was futile, it breathed heavily and cried out softly once, and stood at where it was, no longer moving.

The Qing Yun sect members collected their thoughts and looked at each other, unable to speak for the moment.

After what seemed like half a day, Du BiShu spoke to Song Daren, "Big Senior brother, what, what should we do?"

Zhang Xiao Fan also looked at Song Daren, earlier that electrifying contest, aroused him. However, without knowing why, he felt pity for that strange beast

instead. Deep inside, he had a desire to lend a helping hand to it.

Actually to say, among those Qing Yun sect members, it could not be said that the same thought did not appear in their minds. They were enemies with the Evil Faction for thousands of years, and witnessed the great pains that the Evil Faction took to catch this beast, very likely it had a significant value.

But Song Daren as the eldest senior brother, remained silent for a while and eventually still shook his head and said, “Lets not stir up any trouble, quickly go!”

Everyone looked at each other, nobody said a word. All of them knew that this was not the time to complicate the issue, thus everyone followed Song Daren, who was already walking ahead.

TL:

乾坤清光戒 - translated by Honpaka as Ring of Empyrean Light but I will like to make it more direct, so I am using Ring of Universe Clear Light.

Under Note, these are the terms I assumed:

大荒东经 - Classics of Vast Eastern Wastelands

其光如日月 - brightness like the sun and moon

状如青牛 - strong like young cattle. I searched online and it also meant another term 为神仙道士之坐骑. So I am not sure which is it.

Note: have amended to ‘its appearance is akin to a young calf’.

Zhang Xiao Fan, who was at the rear, walked a few steps and suddenly realized that Lu XueQi did not follow up. He got a shock and turned back but saw that Lu XueQi was standing where she was before, without making any step. He curiously asked, “Lu Senior sister, what happen to you?”

Lu XueQi gazed ahead at that strange beast who was trapped behind the wall of red light, the beast bowed his head down, as if it had already resigned to its fate, listlessly standing there. The sky full of gloomy clouds at this time, also looked like it was going to disperse. The power and might, which caused the Heaven and Earth’s winds and clouds to change countenance, displayed when it just emerged from the sea, to think it would not be seen anymore.

As if, a sorrowful child who had came to the end of the road, disheartenedly standing there!

Somehow despairing, somewhat lonely.....

[Qiang Lang!]

Rays of blue light, like a meteor suddenly appearing in the night, illuminated the surrounding darkness.

TianYa celestial sword resolutely unsheathed, the clear blue light flashed, reflected on its master’s unrivaled beauty face, carrying a hint of indifference and silent gaze.

Lu XueQi unhurriedly turned her head over, looked at Zhang Xiao Fan, her

expression was as cool as ice water, calmly said, "This rare beast seemed to have an important value, you should quickly...you all should quickly go! I will go and be back soon!"

Everyone was stunned, Zhang Xiao Fan opened his mouth slightly, said, "You..."

He had not completed his sentence, that beautiful figure, turned into this night's resplendent radiance of a shooting star, pierced through the surrounding darkness, charged straight towards that enormous wall of red light.

Qing Yun sect members all turned pale with fright, Zhang Xiao Fan and Tian LingEr, Du BiShu almost at the same time, turned around and shouted towards Song Daren, "Big Senior bro...."

Song Daren's forehead was dripping with sweat, if he decided to leave, he would not be able to convince everyone and he himself, would feel bad too, but to stay, it would most likely be disastrous, these few junior brothers and sister were young and ignorant, he had to think for their lives. For a moment, his mind was in a mess.

But Lu XueQi, the speed of her driving the sword was unbelievably fast, in an instant she already charged near to where the Evil Faction's circle of light on the beach was, and the Evil Faction disciples also already realized something was amiss, immediately shouts rise from all directions.

Ghost King was still floating in the sky, his face was slowly regaining composure. Right then, he looked down and frowned, in a low voice he muttered one sentence, "TianYa celestial sword?"

The Evil Faction black attired men were all in a fluster from Lu XueQi's sudden attack, and Ghost King, who was in the midair, also seemed not to be able to descend in time. Even the beast, who was trapped in the screen of light, also suddenly opened its eyes which had been closed all the while.

Out of a sudden, halfway across, a clear light crossed over and abruptly blocked Lu XueQi. TianYa celestial sword emitted a sharp sound and forced this ball of clear light back a little, but Lu XueQi's own figure, was also immediately impeded from reaching that red light screen which was still several zhangs away.

Qing Long, still chic in a suit of white attire, but as if like a ghost, suddenly appeared in front of Lu XueQi. And at the same time, the right hand that wore the Ring of Universe Clear Light, again disappeared into his sleeve.

"This lady...." Qing Long smiled and seemed not to treat Lu XueQi as an enemy at all, said, "This Kui Niu (Note 1) was what we took a huge effort to trap it, also it did not cause any hindrance to your honourable sect, why must we start a dispute again?"

Lu XueQi took a deep breath, she knew that the person in front of her, his level of attainment were immeasurable and she might not be his match. But when she looked around, and her sight landed on that beast, and the beast was also looking squarely at her, its eyes bright and piercing, and was still howling softly. Who was to really know what it was thinking at this moment?

"Evildoer!" she exclaimed suddenly. Without any regards, the brilliant blue light of TianYa celestial sword, struck towards Qing Long.

Qing Long was startled. Facing this celestial weapon, TianYa, no matter how

high his skills were, he did not dare to underestimate. He only frowned and concentrated all his attention for battle.

In the battlefield, the blue and clear lights immediately tussled together, but Qing Long after all was still higher skilled than Lu XueQi, and the Ring of Universe Clear Light did not appear to lose out to TianYa. After a short while, it gained advantage right away and the clear light gradually suppressed the blue light.

Zhang Xiao Fan saw it clearly, and was anxious in his heart. He turned around, Song Daren clenched his teeth and quickly said, "Little junior sister, you and junior brother immediately bring Fourth brother away, Du BiShu and I will go and assist. Once we have the chance to escape, we will come immediately."

Tian LingEr anxiously said, "Big senior brother, I..."

Song Daren glared at her and angrily said, "I don't have time to waste my breath with you, quickly go!" saying which, he called over Du BiShu and immediately rushed towards the fight, leaving Zhang Xiao Fan and Tian LingEr standing there.

Actually, if to go according to Song Daren's intention, originally he indeed did not want to meddle in this affair, but Lu XueQi was from his own sect after all, he could not leave her alone. But right now, the situation was fraught with danger, the other side in addition, had Ghost King and Qing Long, these two great evil. Left with no choice, he had to take his junior brother and sister into consideration first, checked out things on his own, and escaped if an opportunity arises.

Tian LingEr after being scolded by Song Daren, instead was dazed for a while.

Ever since from young, Song Daren doted on her and never scolded her, not even a word. Today, he actually scolded her a sentence, she was still unable to react from it.

But nevertheless, she was, after all, an outstanding disciple from Qing Yun sect, also since young, she was eager to do well in everything and was also pampered. She frowned and thought deeply for a while, turned to Zhang Xiao Fan and said, “Xiao Fan, you stay here and look after Fourth brother, I will go and help!”

Zhang Xiao Fan was greatly surprised, and had not even spoke when He DaZhi, who was injured and lying by the side, suddenly struggled and exclaimed, “Little junior sister, it is dangerous over there, you cannot go over!”

But Tian LingEr once made up her mind, how could it be that she would listen to him. Unless Tian BuYi was there at that moment, he could still keep her in check. He DaZhi’s words, instead was unheeded by her.

He DaZhi at once saw that Tian LingEr did not even pay attention to his words, turned and quickly spoke to Zhang Xiao Fan, “Little junior brother, quickly hold on to her!”

Zhang Xiao Fan roused with a start, hurriedly ran over and pulled on Tian LingEr’s sleeve, saying, “Senior sister, you don’t go over, you stay here, I will go help...”

The word [out] had not even been said out, Tian LingEr, who was feeling impatient, with a fling, she shook off Zhang Xiao Fan. Zhang Xiao Fan, in a moment of desperation, wanted to hold onto Tian LingEr again. Unexpectedly at this moment, Tian LingEr flung her hand and soared up at the same time, a

very small circular item suddenly dropped from her sleeve.

A beautiful and glossy stone, silently slid down in the dim light of the night.

Indistinctly, there seemed to be a girl smiling lightly and saying, “Later when we get back, I will give this stone to Qi big brother, he will surely like it!”

He was suddenly dumbfounded, the hand that had rise into the mid air, stopped where it was just like that, motionless.

Until He DaZhi who was behind, shouted loudly urgently, “Little junior brother, why didn’t you hold onto her!”

Zhang Xiao Fan’s body shook, he abruptly came to his senses, cold sweat broke out all over his body, and hastily looked over. Tian LingEr was already driving the amber vermilion silk, flying towards the scene. At that moment, he did not even consider and hastily drove his firestick to give chase.

Tian LingEr flew midway into the sky, and saw that Song Daren and Du BiShu, who were ahead, had already joined Lu XueQi and Qing Ling’s battle. But Qing Long, as one against three, was not even being disadvantage at the slightest, instead he looked calm and unhurried, battling with skill and ease.

Although Tian LingEr was impatient by nature but she was naturally gifted and clever. She could tell at once that Qing Long’s was too highly skilled, plus his magical weapon was too powerful, even if she joined in, she herself might not win over him. Looking around, she immediately had other ideas. She did not fly towards Lu XueQi and the rest, instead shifted her direction, and quietly flew towards the other side of that enormous red screen.

Zhang Xiao Fan, who was following behind, turned pale with fright, but he saw that the Evil Faction members' attention were all concentrating on the battle of Qing Long as one against three, even the one who was highest above them and presiding over the spell, Ghost King, his gaze was also following Lu XueQi's TianYa celestial sword and kept changing. For the moment, unexpectedly he also neglected to pay attention to where Tian LingEr went to.

In an instant Tian LingEr was near the other side of the light screen, the black attired men who were supposed to guard the area, were already laying disordered on the ground. Evidently they were quaked to death during the earlier intense fight by the trapped Kui Niu.

Tian LingEr scanned the area quickly, and suddenly noticed that all of the red lights were projected from some strange dark red iron awl-looking items implanted in the sands, which continuously projected the lights up and converged into that ancient cauldron in the mid air, under the Ghost King's feet.

Clearly, the spell formation that was made up by these items, together with that ancient cauldron in the mid air, was the crux of what was trapping Kui Niu. Tian LingEr did not think twice, a stroke of her fair finger, the amber vermillion silk immediately flew out, sweeping directly at those things implanted in the sands

[Bong!] A loud sound sounded, the amber vermillion silk had struck onto one of the awl that was shrouded by the screen of red light.

Note 1: [Classics of Mountains and Seas. Classics of Vast Eastern Wastelands (translator's note: in Baidu, Classics of Vast Eastern Wastelands is stated as the tenth volume of the Classics of Mountains and Seas

[<http://baike.baidu.com/view/150961.htm>]

Eastern Sea Kui Niu: In the Eastern Sea, seven thousand miles into the sea, there is LiuBo Hill. On it there is a beast, strong like ox, dark green body with no horns, one-legged, there will be surely wind and rain when it enters or leave the water, it's brightness like the sun and moon, it's voice like thunder, it's name is called Kui.

Again Note: [Divine and Evil The strange. Spiritual beast chapter] Kui Niu: Ancient times rare beast, its appearance is akin to a young calf, three-legged with no horns, roar like thunder. Resides for a long time in deep sea, only appeared/born after three thousand years, during birth/appearance there will be wind and rain, thunder and lightning, also known in the world as the Thunder God's mount. Here it is written using Classics of Mountains and Seas version.

Chapter 73: Impasse

A wave of vibrations immediately passed through the screen of red light. Ghost King, who was in the air, and the rest of the Evil Faction black attired men, including the trapped rare beast, Kui Niu, almost at the same time turned back to look.

Red light flashed, Tian LingEr was startled but saw that only the red lights surrounding that dark red awl shuddered and flickered, but the awl itself, instead was under the protection of the red light, and it did not even move a tiny bit.

Within a short while, everyone gathered their senses and the Evil Faction black attired men, one after another, charged over. Tian LingEr turned pale and slightly gasped for breath. While she was panicking, a flash of light suddenly appeared in front of her, a wave of both hands, the amber vermillion silk, all of a sudden bore into the ground.

In the mid-air, Ghost King's expression changed right away. He stamped his feet in anger and said, "Little servant girl do not value her life, actually dare to mess up my plans!"

A flash of his figure and another flash, with unfathomable speed and

ferocious strength, he pounced down but also at the same time, from afar, sharp whistling sounds were heard one after another. Within a split second, numerous lights lighted up. The Good Faction disciples and the Evil Faction main forces had actually arrived at the place, the battles stopped and started, the most intensive ones were Taoist Cang Song with Bai DuZhi, Tian BuYi with Elder Duanmu. But at the same time, SuRu was fighting as one against two, obstructing the injured Blood Sucking Demon and the highly skilled young guy from the Forsaken Abyss that day, Lin Feng.

As for the others, such as the monks from Tian Yin Temple and disciples from FenXiang Valley, including Herald of Vigor master and disciple, had all arrived here.

With so many people arriving at this place, and suddenly noticing that there was such an enormous sheet of light wall on this beach, and a grotesque huge strange beast was also trapped in it, for a while, their hands slowed down. Bai DuZhi and Elder Duanmu leaped away at the same time, abandoning Taoist Cang Song and Tian BuYi.

Taoist Cang Song and Tian BuYi at that moment too, were unable to focus on the battle and allowed them to get away. Especially Tian BuYi, looking far ahead, he saw that his own daughter was heavily surrounded by the Evil Faction disciples, and could not help but turned pale. He was about to prepare himself to dive over there.

Bai DuZhi and Elder Duanmu stood together, at first they looked towards Qing Long's battle and saw that Qing Long, as one against three, was still battling with ease and skill, their face expression became different, huffed, and looked up at the sky. Currently they saw that Ghost King had dashed down but that ancient cauldron was still slowly turning in the air, projecting red light in all four directions.

Bai DuZhi suddenly frowned, and said in a low voice, “ [Hidden Dragon Cauldron] ! ”

Elder Duanmu, who was beside, got a shock and quickly looked up into the sky, immediately he was also stunned for a while.

Both of them were among the Evil Faction’s most senior disciples, their experiences and knowledge were incomparable to the average Evil Faction disciples. Viewing that ancient cauldron far away, it’s outlook primitive and crude, both rings on the cauldron’s sides were engraved with a relief sculpture of a dragon head, with the inclusion of the mysterious spell formation in front of them, it looked extremely like the Evil Faction’s legend, [Entrap Dragon WatchTower].

And for the mysterious Entrap Dragon WatchTower spell formation, all along, only with the Hidden Dragon Cauldron, then the sorcery could be performed. With the Hidden Dragon Cauldron spiritual power as the go-between, only then Heaven and Earth’s austere energy would be triggered. Even how high the skills were, once trapped in it, it was impossible to escape.

Speaking of which, if it was not for this kind of exceptional rare treasure, Ghost King and the rest who wanted to trap Kui Niu this type of ancient rare beast, it would be impossible to accomplish.

Coming back to the scene, at this time, the rest of them who were fighting, had almost already temporarily stopped their fights, their attentions were all already drawn over here.

Ghost King, who was rapidly charging down from the sky, and Tian BuYi,

concerned about his beloved daughter, although he was physically still far but still he drove his sword and dashed over. And nearby, Zhang Xiao Fan, because he was one of the earliest to follow, at the moment, he was the nearest person to Tian LingEr. But beside him, several black attired men had also already charged over.

It was an explosive situation, and the crucial point, was on Tian LingEr.

Zhang Xiao Fan saw that the black attired men were almost approaching, and felt very anxious. He leapt with his strength and flew near to Tian LingEr's back. When he was in the air, the firestick was already brimming with with green light and it swept a sheet of green light wall in front of the black attired men.

Dark Drake Cave=Fire Dragon Cave

Odd cries were heard one after another from those black attired men, in an instant, several magical weapons went over to attack. Zhang Xiao Fan's body trembled greatly from the impact but eventually he managed to block off the attacks.

Also at this imminent danger moment, Tian LingEr gave a shout of joy, the amber vermillion silk bore out from the ground, carrying with it, a metal awl head.

Suddenly, the red lights violent swayed, the entire Entrap Dragon WatchTower spell formation electrical rays flickered madly and was in disarray. Especially the screen in front of Tian LingEr, within a short while, a hole about

as tall as a human, tore open abruptly.

Within the red light screen, the strange beast Kui Niu gave a long cry. Shaking the surrounding grounds with its cry, its single leg exerted force, and started to charge over here.

Tian LingEr's face was full of joy and was about to call back the magical weapon amber vermillion silk when suddenly, she heard Zhang Xiao Fan cried out behind her, "Senior sister, watch out!"

She was startled and look up immediately. That enormous strange beast had already charged in front of her, a loud sound rumbled, that gigantic body slammed heavily against the light screen.

By this time, the Entrap Dragon WatchTower spell formation was already in a mess. With the additional massive force, the human-size hole immediately split open. In an instant it had become several times bigger and almost allowed Kui Niu to escape. And at the same time, the red lights quivered tremendously, projecting waves in all four directions, unexpectedly it threw Ghost King, who was charging down, to the side.

Right now, Kui Niu opened its enormous pair of eyes, shooting ominous glare everywhere, and without any regards that it was Tian LingEr who disrupted this strange spell formation, with a roar [An ao], swinging its huge head, it tried to bite Tian LingEr.

Tian LingEr turned extremely pale with fright. She saw a huge predator mouth heading towards herself, the smell of raw fish overwhelming her. Momentarily she was dazed with shock and was unable to move.

At the moment, it seemed Kui Niu was about to break out of the entrapment, after witnessing its strength and might from being able to cause the death of several people when it was trapped in the Entrap Dragon WatchTower, all of the black attired men subconsciously moved back at the same time. Only Zhang Xiao Fan, although terrified, but still gritted his teeth and charged over. Green light flashing from the firestick, it hit towards Kui Niu's head.

From far, Qing Long shook off Song Daren's Ten Tigers celestial sword, unintentionally glanced towards Zhang Xiao Fan's direction and happened to see that firestick heading towards Kiu Niu. Suddenly his body shook and he almost lost his focus. He involuntarily burst out, "This..."

On scene, Kiu Niu was indeed an ancient rare beast. It felt the magical weapon coming, swung its huge head and actually used its head to take on the firestick. A sound of [bang] , the firestick flew back and Zhang Xiao Fan's body shook greatly. He only felt a surge of huge energy, almost like blotting out the sky and covering the earth [translator's note: an idiom meaning earth-shattering or overwhelming], gushing over, and was forced back a few steps.

With Zhang Xiao Fan's attack, Tian LingEr already recovered her senses. Her face still pale, she was about to retreat. Unexpectedly tonight, that Kiu Niu was made a fool by these humans, even though it was not known how many several thousand years it had lived but presumably it had never met such situation, and was extremely angry now. It did not care the identity of the human in front of it, it only wanted to kill in order to vent its anger first.

Tian LingEr was seen to be only retreating half a step, slowly summoning amber vermillion silk and was planning to fly off but that horrible bloody mouth again tried to bite down on her.

Far off, the crowd cried out in surprise, SuRu looking pale and QiHao rushed

out at the same time. Foremost was Tian BuYi, who was already flying like the speed of light, but the distance was too far. Separated by a distance of several zhang more, it was difficult to render help.

But Tian LingEr after all, was not those average disciples, and would not die helplessly. In a moment of desperation, both hands continued to gesture. The amber vermillion silk, like a red dragon flying in the sky, holding up at the top of her head and hoping to hold up this enormous beast in order to create a gap for her to escape. And standing nearest to her, Zhang Xiao Fan, again leaped over.

And not sure if it was because the amber vermillion silk's red light looked similar to that Entrap Dragon WatchTower's red light, the rage in Kui Niu's eyes was even more intense. [An ao, an ao....] it roared loudly and as if the weight of Mount Tai bearing down, it bit down.

As soon as contact was made, a battle of strength ensued. The amber vermillion silk was pushed down by Kui Niu's huge mouth, Tian LingEr's face became pale with fright, both of her knees weaken, and was forced to sit down by the massive force. Dust flew everywhere and at that moment, from the corner of her eye, she saw Zhang Xiao Fan had already arrived in front of her. She urgently said, "Xiao Fan, quickly leave!".

How would Zhang Xiao Fan not know that this strange beast was too tyrannical to fight with and there was only death for those who go against it. Unexpectedly at this moment when the Heaven and Earth changed countenance, the sudden change of winds and clouds, in front of that ferocious enormous beast, the figure of that frail girl, instead anxiously calling out to him.

Quickly leave...

The wind, blown onto his face,

as if deep inside his heart, something was surging and stirring!

That familiar figure and face since young, was just in front of you. The time spend over the past years, engraved in his heart, at that moment surged and rolled ceaselessly.

What was it that made you desperately in love, what is it that made you felt anguished?

When you thought of that heartbroken human skeleton in the Blooddrip Cave?

When you thought of the fox spirits in the Fire Dragon Cave leaping together into the lava?

He breathed deeply, panted heavily.

Heaven, Earth and the world, peaceful.

Holding the firestick tightly, gritting his teeth, that youth's figure, charged over.

Just like that he charged over. Without having any regards, he charged over.

Charging in-between the enormous beast and Tian LingEr, he spreaded out both of his hands and roared loudly, like a soldier meeting his death, like a grieved hero. Becoming one with the firestick, it seemed as if eight hundred years of time appeared again!

For whom do you break your heart?

For whom do you go insane?

While Kui Niu bellowed with rage, he was also hollering, the firestick burned with a magnificent light that was never seen before, as if it was using its life as the firewood for the flame, burning furiously!

[Rumble....]

From the horizon, a sudden clap of thunder, shook the firmament!

Zhang Xiao Fan's both knees weaken, dark red blood flowed out from the seven apertures of his head, quietly slid down and dripped onto the firestick.

The shocked Tian LingEr suddenly felt her body was being lifted, and flew backwards. Tian BuYi had arrived and pulled her out. Even though he turned back immediately, he was shocked to see that Zhang Xiao Fan was already pressed down under Kui Niu's body.

Kui Niu bellowed towards the sky, the entire huge body shot up into the air. The enormous single foot aimed directly onto Zhang Xiao Fan, the immense strength of this might, everyone at the scene without exception were all shocked, even Tian BuYi's face turned pale.

Zhang Xiao Fan was panting heavily, the bones in his body felt like it was breaking in pieces. He slowly raised his head, the scene that filled his eyes were all the darkness that was pressing down on him from the sky!

[Dang!]

Do not know, whose hand had lost control and dropped the weapon?

And again who, crying out in despair within the darkness?

A stream of golden, solemn ray of light, quietly set off, followed by a stream of green ray of light.

The firestick that was held in the youth's hand, numerous tiny red fine line that looked like blood vessels, suddenly shone together. Under the shadow, the fresh blood flowed as if it was burning up life!

Golden and green light rays interweaved and suddenly burst forth from the firestick, reflected onto his face, gently in front of him. Above that green Sinister Orb on top of the firestick, a Buddhist symbol appeared.

[卐]!

Soon after that, as if coexisting with this symbol, underneath 卐, another Taiji image glimmering with green light faintly appeared.

Everyone, was stunned!

Except for Kui Niu!

That furious huge beast, already stepping down with unstoppable force, that youth who was unable to escape, that youth who was facing death, stretched out his both hands and blocked the attack from above.

Time, seemed to stop for the moment.

Heaven and Earth rustled, heavy dark clouds gathered again.

Cold wind, blew over gently.

Fallen leaves, falling one after another.

A figure suddenly appeared in mid-air, and pounced down urgently, with speed like lightning. It was indeed Ghost King. He was seen charging to the ground in a blink of an eye, snatched up the red coloured awl that was forced out by Tian LingEr, and immediately stuck it onto the beach. At the same time, his right hand immediately stretched out, slashed his left wrist, and fresh blood at once spurted out and splashed onto the awl.

In a flash, red rays flashed, on top of the dark red mysterious awl, red light shot out in four directions. In an instant, before Kui Niu landed, the lights merged with the surrounding light screen in front of Zhang Xiao Fan, the Entrap Dragon WatchTower spell formation again restarted.

Flame spirit sword=Scarlet flame celestial sword

In the mid-air, the Hidden Dragon Cauldron shone with brilliant lights, lighting up half of the horizon.

[Rumble!]

Amidst the deafening sound, Kui Niu had slammed against the red light screen. Ghost King's body shook and was forced back several steps. But Kui Niu, also received a shock from the red light screen, and immediately charged furiously again. But amid the ceaseless deafening sounds, it had finally become too exhausted to escape.

Ghost King heaved a sigh of relief and slowly released the tension from his body. He turned over and saw that the youth was still maintaining the same position, preparing to ward off the attack. The firestick's glow, gradually disappeared but looking at his face, with fresh blood dripping, carried a trace of desolation.

Ghost King stared at him, Zhang Xiao Fan opened his mouth slightly and also looked at him. The entire place had turned silent.

“Great Brahman Wisdom! This is the Great Brahman Wisdom!”

Suddenly, from a distance behind, the monks from Tian Yin Temple slowly emerged from the crowd, including Fa Shan, the monks were all appalled beyond words. Pointing at Zhang Xiao Fan and questioning loudly, “How did you

practise our Tian Yin Temple's Great Brahman Wisdom true way?"

Only that Fa Xiang, stood silently behind the agitated crowd and stared at Zhang Xiao Fan without uttering a word, a glint seemed to appear in his eyes.

Zhang Xiao Fan slowly, slowly turned over. It seemed that each movement, caused him a great amount of energy, until, he faced everyone.

Tian BuYi was livid with rage, he stood there motionless, the hand that was clutching Scarlet Flame celestial sword was bulging with veins. All of the Qing Yun sect disciples, looked as if they were seeing a monster for the first time, stared in consternation at this person, this youth who was covered with cuts and bruises.

From the back, a sound like Ghost King's deep sigh was heard.

Tian LingEr's face was terribly pale, she walked forward a few steps and suddenly stopped. The short distance between Zhang Xiao Fan and her, suddenly became so distant and impassable!

"Xiao Fan....." She whispered, her voice seemed to convey that even she herself would not believe again, "These masters, said what was correct?"

Zhang Xiao Fan's lips, started to tremble. Almost as if his deepest fear, from the depths of his heart, bit by bit, surfaced. He looked past Tian LingEr, looked at his teacher, looked at his fellow sect disciples standing afar, everyone's expression, were all so distant.

He suddenly felt like screaming, but when he opened his mouth, not a word

came out!

The night wind, blew and lifted his shirt, flapping gently.

“That’s right, it is the Sinister Orb, it can’t be wrong!”

Suddenly, as if it was a never-ending nightmare, another exclamation, again cried out. Qing Long stood at the side, his expression was in fact shocked.

As soon as these words were said, everyone at the scene, regardless whether it was the Evil Faction or Good Faction, each and everyone’s expressions changed.

“That circular pearl looking object on top of the magical weapon in his hands, with blood streaks surrounding it. And earlier on against Kui Niu, it demonstrated the ability to devour. It must be Elder BlackHeart’s Sinister Orb from eight hundred years ago!”

The crowd was in an uproar, everyone’s was astounded. Only Zhang Xiao Fan, unable to hear anything anymore, not a single word anymore, he only felt that everyone around him, were all making raucous noises, numerous people shouted and questioned him, but he could not hear anything!

He slowly turned his body. Ghost King, unknowingly had already disappeared behind him. In front of him, only that strange beast Kui Niu who was trapped in the Entrap Dragon WatchTower spell formation, was turning round and round disorientedly, but eventually it still resigned to its fate. It stood motionless and cried towards the sky with a sound of despair!

That sound, reverberated in the empty night sky, was particularly miserable.

Zhang Xiao Fan slowly lifted his head, and faced towards the sky.

Ah that bleak night light! Dark and endless, it seemed to make one breathless.

He suddenly laughed, laughed despairingly, laughing in silence, his body swayed and fell straight, heavily onto the ground.

In front of him, everything was in darkness, as if that endless dark night sky, stretched over and pressed on to him!

And then, he fainted.

Chapter 74: YouJi

The cave mentioned in Chapter 73 was referring to Fire Dragon Cave, where the two foxes were thrown into the lava.

Dark Drake Cave=Fire Dragon Cave [Part 6 Chapter 1 Death of the Devil B]

*In Chapter 74, Dark Drake Cave=Black Stone Cave [Chapter 8 Dark Drake Cave]

Li Su=Li Xun (FenXiang Valley disciple who also went to the Black Stone Cave)

Inside the room, it was really quiet.

Unaware of how much time had passed, Zhang Xiao Fan slowly lifted his head, lifted his quilt, and noticed that he was still wearing the same clothes as on LiuBo Hill, presumably nobody had changed it for him. He subconsciously reached and felt for the head of the bed, but suddenly his hand stopped in mid-air.

It was empty there.

The firestick which accompanied him for all these years, disappeared.

He sat there in a daze, lips slightly quivering.

Suddenly, he bolted out from the bed, headed straight for the room's door and jerked open the door.

The two people standing outside the door, turned back in astonishment, it was Song Daren and Du BiShu.

Looking at Zhang Xiao Fan, both of their expression seemed a bit strange, only after a long while, Du BiShu gave a dry laugh and said, "Junior, Junior brother, you have woken up?"

A ray of sunlight, from the sky behind them, shone down and shone upon Zhang Xiao Fan's face. Zhang Xiao Fan suddenly felt faint, and his body swayed.

Song Daren's face expression changed, without thinking, he wanted to step forward and support but the minute his hands stretched out, it withdrawn suddenly.

Zhang Xiao Fan was stunned, looking at him, the big senior brother who had always doted on him since young, his face was as white as paper.

Song Daren's corner of his mouth twitched, eventually he still slowly said, "Little Junior brother, you are still wounded, it will be better if you stay in your room to heal, don't wander out and walk."

Zhang Xiao Fan slowly withdraw his body back, was about to turn around, but as if he couldn't help it and suddenly said, "Big Senior brother, my firestick?"

Song Daren and Du BiShu's expressions changed, after a while, Song Daren then said coolly, "Little Junior brother, your magical weapon has been kept by Teacher temporarily, you, you don't have to worry."

Zhang Xiao Fan did not speak further, turned around and lightly closed the door.

In another corner of the inn, inside a secluded room, Taoist Cang Song and Tian BuYi with Xiao YiCai, the three of them, sat there.

On the table that was in-between the three of them, a green-black firestick was quietly lying there.

Suddenly, a hand stretched over, and took the firestick. It was Taoist Cang Song. He placed that firestick in front of him, touching it lightly with his hand. When his hand touched the Sinister Orb at the extreme end, there was a glint of lustre sparkling faintly in his eyes, after a long while, he said, "So this is the Sinister Orb?"

Tian BuYi gave a cold snort.

Xiao YiCai looked at Tian BuYi, and looked at Taoist Cang Song, and said, "Both Uncle Teachers, what shall we do now, will like to seek your advice?"

Taoist Cang Song glanced at Xiao YiCai and said indifferently, "Xiao Nephew, you have always been resourceful and decisive, why not you give your ideas?"

Xiao YiCai shook his head and said, “This matter is too serious, I too do not know what to say!”

Cang Song Taoist looked at Tian BuYi’s livid expression and said, “Currently the most complex issue is, those fellow practitioners from Tian Yin Temple. They kept coming after us to ask how did Zhang Xiao Fan practised the Great Brahman Wisdom true way, their attitudes were agitated and fierce. If not for their in-charge, Fa Xiang, who is still sensible and tried his best to contain it, I’m afraid they would have long ago demanded us to hand over him!”

Tian BuYi coldly said, “They want to take our people? They still have to wait until we find out the truth. Beside, it is our sect’s disciple who got into trouble, it is not their business to meddle.”

Taoist Cang Song frowned, and wanted to say something but Xiao YiCai already spoken, “Speaking of this, Tian Uncle Teacher, this morning I met FenXiang Valley’s Li Senior brother, he too, he too asked us for him!”

Taoist Cang Song was stunned, Tian BuYi rolled his eyes and said angrily, “What has it to do with FenXiang Valley again?”

Xiao YiCai spoke in a low voice, “Tian Uncle Teacher, please don’t be angry, actually I also feel that FenXiang Valley was being unreasonable. Li Xun Li Senior brother said, he had entered the evil foxes den’s Black Stone Cave together with Zhang Junior brother to investigate and find one of their FenXiang Valley magical weapon. In the end, Zhang Junior brother reached first, and when the rest of them arrived, the evil fox was already dead but the magical weapon was gone without a trace, and Zhang Junior brother instead said he had never seen that magical weapon. At that time, they felt strange. It seemed now most

probably Zhang Junior brother stole...”

[Pong], a loud sound, it was Tian BuYi, who in a fit of fury, slapped the table with a heavy palm. [Ka ka] a few sounds were heard, the table swayed for a while and collapsed. The table legs had already been split by this blow.

Xiao YiCai looked slightly awkward, Taoist Cang Song frowned, gave a snort of contempt and said, “FenXiang Valley these people obviously do not carry a good intention, this matter does not have any concrete evidence, we do not have to bother about them.”

Xiao YiCai nodded and continued, “Actually regarding FenXiang Valley, we can evade it for a while and it will be alright. But this time, Zhang Junior brother in front of everyone....er, a lot of our fellow Faction had already one after another requested for our Qing Yin sect to step out and give an explanation, to explain why eight hundred years ago Evil Faction’s evil item, will be with our Qing Yin sect disciple?”

Tian BuYi clenched his hands, light sounds of pi pa could be heard from it, his expression was livid with rage. He scolded in a low voice, “This little bastard!”

Taoist Cang Song slowly said, “Tian Junior brother, you don’t have to be so angry, nobody expect this too. Just that this time the matter is too serious, and it involved Tian Yin Temple and the Evil Faction sect, this is not a small matter, I think we better hasten back and seek advice from our sect leader before making the final decision!”

Tian BuYi let out a deep breath, but after all he had practised for many years, immediately he suppressed the rage in his heart, nodded his head and said, “Agreed. We shall set off now.” After saying, his gaze turned to fall upon the

firestick in Taoist Cang Song's hand.

Unexpectedly Taoist Cang Song smiled lightly, and instead placed the firestick into his bosom.

Tian BuYi's expression changed, Xiao YiCao who was beside also frowned, and said, "Cang Song Uncle Teacher, the magical weapon..."

Taoist Cang Song waved his hand at him, turned and said to Tian BuYi, "Tian Junior brother, your branch's disciple created such a big matter, which already caused us Qing Yun sect to lose face in front of all the Good Faction sects, and even offended Tian Yin Temple, I'm afraid you as the teacher have to bear some responsibility?"

Tian BuYi snorted, his nostrils flared and coldly said, "So what then?"

Taoist Cang Song indifferently said, "I am still in charge of the discipline in Qing Yun sect, this evidence will be placed with me, I guess Tian Junior brother won't have any objections right?"

Tian BuYi stared at Cang Song Taoist for a long while, suddenly stamped his feet and walked out furiously.

Doyal Shen=DaoXuan (Qing Yun Sect Head)

The more he talked, the more eloquent he became, unexpectedly beside him,

he felt Xiao Huan constantly pulling his shirt. He turned back in surprise and asked, "What happened?"

Xiao Huan was sweating, gave him a stare, and smiled obsequiously at BiYao and said, "This, um, beautiful big sister, what is it that you want to ask us?"

BiYao was silent for a while, said, "Just now what were you all looking at in front of East Ocean Inn?"

Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan looked at each other and said, "Not, nothing, we just happened to pass by and saw a lot of cultivators there, so we stopped to look."

BiYao indifferently said, "So, it means Qing Yun sect, all of their members are staying there?"

Zhou YiXian nodded his head and said, "Seems to be"

BiYao was silent again, after a long while, she said, "Then did you all...did you all see that Qing Yun sect young disciple who once saved both of you?"

Zhou YiXian was stunned momentarily but came to understand what she meant, said, "Miss you mean that youth called Zhang Xiao Fan?"

BiYao did not expect that they actually knew Zhang Xiao Fan's name, nodded her head, said, "Why? You all saw him?" At the same time, her face expression showed her concern.

Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan both shook their heads at the same time.

BiYao immediately looked disappointed, she looked as if she wanted to say more but suddenly she seemed to lose all interest, waved her hand and said, “Both of you leave!”

The words were like heavenly music to Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan, immediately they thanked her and quicken their steps to walk out of the small alley. Unexpectedly they had only walked a few steps, behind them BiYao suddenly said, “Wait.....”

Zhou YiXian’s heart went [thump]

BiYao slowly said, “Just now on the main street, you were all talking about a Lunar Ancient Well outside Black Stone Cave, what does that mean?”

After hearing that, Zhou YiXian then was able to put down the stone in his heart, he quickly told her about Lunar Ancient Well parable, and lastly said, “..... um, that is all. Legend said that on a full moon night, one only has to gaze into the Lunar Ancient Well and he will be able to see the person he loves most!”

BiYao’s face expression changed, did not speak anymore, and appeared to be in a daze, Zhou YiXian was still thinking whether this ever changing young girl still had any weird questions, suddenly he was pulled by Xiao Huan, and saw her kept using her eyes to signal to him, he then regained his wits, both of them slowly walked towards outside. However, BiYao and that mysterious black attired girl beside her, did not stop them.

After like half a day, inside the deserted alley, only BiYao and that mysterious

black veiled girl remained.

“Aunt You, who do you think he saw?” She had only just spoken the words, BiYao suddenly gave a bitter laugh, in her laughter there were some degree of sourness. “Do we still need to say, it must be his LingEr senior sister, if not, it will be that rare beauty, the one from Qing Yun sect who wield the TianYa celestial sword, what am I?”

The mysterious lady who was addressed as “Aunt You” by BiYao, said indifferently, “Don’t be like this, these men, sometimes they do not know exactly their own heart!”

BiYao closed her eyes, opened after a long while, carrying with it a faint plea, and spoke to the black attired lady, “Aunt You, I want to go and see him.”

The black attired lady immediately shook her head, said, “No”

BiYao begged pitifully, “Aunt You, his condition now, is really rather be dead than alive. I, I, I really cannot let go of this thought in my heart!”

The black attired lady gave a soft sigh, said, “Your father also knew you will be impulsive, that is why he ordered me to look after you. Now that most of the highly skilled Qing Yun members are inside the inn, if we go in rashly like this, we will surely be unable to avoid trouble.” Speaking until here, her voice became more tender, softly said, “Yao’er, there are still chances, we will surely see him again.”

BiYao stood there in a daze, spoke after a long interval, “But, but he had committed a big taboo in the Good Faction, will they just, just kill him like

that.....”

The black attired lady frowned, shook her head said, “BiYao, come to your senses, usually you are not this muddled. Zhang Xiao Fan currently, other than because he has the Sinister Orb and is suspected to be in league with our Holy Sect, the most important is, he actually practised Tian Yin Temple’s Great Brahman Wisdom, this is then the dire matter, if they are unable to get to the truth, firstly Tian Yin Temple will not let Qing Yun sect go off easily. I predict Qing Yun sect will have to bring Zhang Xiao Fan back to Qing Yun Hill, and let DaoXuan personally interrogate and make the decision himself, so as to give Tian Yin Temple a proper explanation, therefore he will be safe for now!”

BiYao subconsciously bit her pale lower lip, after a long while, there was still no reaction from her.

The black attired lady watched it all, and also seemed to feel some heart pain, she gently smoothed her hair and spoke in a reassuring low voice, “It will be alright, don’t worry, didn’t your father also said it before, he will not sit by and do nothing.”

BiYao nodded, suddenly she lifted her head, grabbed the black attired lady’s hand and urgently said, “Aunt You, I knew since long ago, you do not fight anymore, but I beg you, for my sake, please also help him!”

The black attired lady was silent for a while, gently shifted her gaze away, looked towards the outside of the small alley.

BiYao cried out again, “Aunt You!”

The black attired lady seemed to give a soft sigh and said, "Alright! If your father decide to save him, I will help you once."

BiYao's face lit up with pleasure.

The black attired lady smiled, but nobody could see the smile that was hidden within the black veil, just like nobody could see deep inside her heart, the waves of ripples that were ruffled.

In that dark and harsh night, when the youth who disregarded his life charged towards that huge ferocious beast, she in the dark, was captivated.

From the vague memories, many years ago, that figure in white, clothing as white as snow.

Even the expressions on their faces, had some degree of similarities.

Chapter 75: Conspiracy

Wu DaYi, who was standing afar, muttered a few words in a low voice, “These two bastards. I, your father, take such good care of them for these few months, and have never seen them that enthusiastic towards me before!”

After a while, under everyone’s attentive gazes, Zhang Xiao Fan stood up and walked towards his residence. Xiao Hui sat on his shoulder and Big Huang followed behind.

It seemed that only at this moment, the figure of Zhang Xiao Fan, did not appear to be that lonely.

Somewhere at a distance from the foot of Qing Yun Hill, BiYao and the mysterious black attired lady, YouJi, were standing side by side, looking at the mountain summit hidden beneath the white clouds.

BiYao’s face looked slightly pale, her brows frowning and she appeared to have lost some weight. She also seemed to be in a trance like daze. After staring blankly for about half a day, she spoke slowly, “I wonder how is he now?”

YouJi's black veil moved slightly, she turned and looked at this young lady beside her, who was tormented by love, and said softly, "Everything will be alright, BiYao, don't think so much."

BiYao bit her lips and suddenly asked, "Where is my dad?"

YouJi replied, "ZhongZhu is going to HeYang City today to meet up with that old monster from Wan Du Clan who has arrived recently."

BiYao was surprised and said, "What, 'God of Poison' also came?"

YouJi smirked, said, "Not only him, according to what I had heard privately, these few days, even the section heads from Chang Shen Hall and He Huan Branch also have to come over."

BiYao was even more shocked, and spoke only after a long while, "Why is it like this? I knew that dad had already secretly shifted the main forces from Ghost King sect to Qing Yun Hill surroundings, if these three section heads come, their sects' skilled fighters will also surely come, then is it that our four big....no, basically our Holy Sect main strength are all concentrated here?"

After YouJi's face was hidden behind her black veil, her face expression could not be seen, but from her voice, it was still as smooth and calm, and she gently said, "That's right."

BiYao suddenly lowered her head, after a while, slowly said, "So it means, the main purpose for dad to come here, is not to save Zhang Xiao Fan."

YouJi replied drily, "BiYao, don't brood so much on it, ZhongZhu's words are

worth nine sacred tripods, and you are his only daughter, he will not lie to you. And this time our Holy Sect main branches are willing to meet together, it was all because of your dad who has spare no effort to advocate for it. To wipe away the great shame suffered hundred years ago, the section heads of the four branches stood together under the MingWang throne and swore an oath, to take the advantage when Qing Yun is unprepared and make a surprise attack on them.”

BiYao was silent for a while, said, “If this battle is successful, dad’s reputation within the Holy Sect will naturally increase, and even if he failed, he will also gain a good reputation for trying to erase the seniors’ shame. But...” She suddenly raised her voice, her expression looked agitated and said, “But all these I do not care, and do not wish to care for, I only wish for Zhang Xiao Fan to be well, and not to....”

“BiYao!” YouJi suddenly shouted. BiYao was stunned, looked at her and eventually, kept quiet. She turned her head to look at the white clouds far away, staring blankly.

In a deserted big mansion inside HeYang City, Ghost King and Qing Long unhurriedly stepped in, with someone respectfully guiding them in along the way, straight into the inner parts of the mansion.

The mansion was naturally Wan Du Clan’s stronghold in HeYang City, and on this day too, Wan Du Clan’s Head, the God of Poison, who was the oldest qualified Head among the four main branches in the Evil Faction, had also arrived.

Hundred years ago, in the big battle between Evil Faction and Good Faction on Qing Yun Hill, fierce fighting took place but the Evil Faction eventually still lost. After the fight, the Evil Faction suffered heavy losses and among the four

main branches, three leaders were replaced, and it was also during this time, Ghost King took over the Head position of the Ghost King branch.

But among the branches, only the old monster, God of Poison, of Wan Du Clan, was fortunate to survive, only that in the recent few years, he was not his past style of being arrogant and obtruding, even within the Evil Faction, Wan Du Clan stayed surprisingly low keyed, not to say the ordinary disciples would not even have a chance to see this old monster.

Thinking of this, Qing Long could not help but frowned slightly. The title, God of Poison, had already resounded within the Evil Faction even before hundred years ago. When he was still following the previous Ghost King to conquer the world, this God of Poison was already a capable disciple within Wan Du Clan, and subsequently took over Wan Du Clan's Head position. Within Evil Faction, he vied fiercely with Ghost King sect. Between them, who would know the number of hidden feuds still unsettled?

Unexpectedly, things had changed with time, and now they would work together with this old monster.

Qing Long had also not seen the God of Poison almost near to a hundred years, he was indeed curious, after all these years, how had the God of Poison turned into? If according to the calculation of his age, this old monster would be nearing to almost five hundred years old already.

Thinking of which, he suddenly had a thought, looking at Ghost King who was walking half a body length ahead of him, a slight smile on his lips and his expression relaxed, but however he might, he was unable to guess, what was Ghost King thinking in his heart?

On the way in, they walked past the courtyard and entered the inner main room of the house. The surroundings were quiet and tranquil, and not a human in sight. For a person of high authority and position, it was surprisingly deserted.

Soon, they arrived at the door of an ordinary looking single story house, eight men wearing the same yellowish-brown uniform were standing outside it, and the person who was leading the way, led them to walk towards that house. It seemed like the God of Poison should be in this room.

When they were nearing, the eight men bowed to Ghost King together. It was obvious that Ghost King, as the Head of one of the four main branches in Evil Faction, his position was the highest. However, Ghost King did not carry any haughty or conceited air, he nodded slightly to the men, amiably smiled and entered with Qing Long.

Inside the room, the windows facing East to the West were all opened, the sunlight streamed in, it was bright inside the room. There was none of the sayings which claimed that people of the Evil Faction always stayed in the darkness.

As for the furnishings, it was even more simpler. In the middle of such a big house, there was only a table and a few chairs. There was a reclining chair beside the table, an old man with a head full of hair as white as snow, was lying on it, beside him, a fair face of age around twenty odd young man was sitting beside him, arranging the tea set on the table, the tea fragrance could be smelled from time to time.

Looking at it, it looked like a tranquil picture of grandfather and grandson having a rest, where do you find a single trace of evil!

Ghost King smiled slightly, walked over, that old man heard footsteps, opened his eyes, and looked over at Ghost King, a smile immediately appeared on his face, he said, “ You came?”

Ghost King smiled and replied, “Senior, since we parted at the Holy Temple, we have not met for a long time, how is your health?”

This old man was obviously the renowned evil known throughout the world, God of Poison, his expression seemed to carry a bitter smile and said, “Old, and useless”

After which, he seemed not to want to talk about this anymore, he changed the topic and said, “Ghost King old brother, now that you are already Head of the Ghost King branch, your status is the same as me, if you do not mind, you can call me elder brother, please do not call me titles like senior anymore, I am not worthy of it.”

Ghost King laughed in spite of himself, his expression relaxed, sat down on the other side of the table and said to God of Poison, “Senior, your words are wrong, who would not know that you are someone of noble character and high prestige, regarding the big matter this time, we are still counting on you to take charge of the overall situation!”

God of Poison looked stunned, and immediately shook his head and said, “Won’t do, won’t do.”

Ghost King looked as if he wanted to say more, at this time, the young man at the other side of the table had already prepared two cups of tea, and brought it over, he said, “ZongZhu, Qing Long Holy Envoy, please have tea.”

Ghost King and Qing Long both stretched their hands to take the cups, Ghost King took a few more look at him, and saw that this young man’s features were delicate, only that his face looked slightly pale, but to be able to accompany the God of Poison, obviously his relationship with God of Poison would not be simple.

Ghost King immediately turned and asked God of Poison, “ This is....”

Ghost King smiled and said, “He is my last disciple whom I have take in ten years ago, his name is Qin WuYan, at that time I noticed his aptitude is not bad, so I took him in. WuYan, quickly greet these two seniors, they are our Holy Sect renowned figures, if you could receive their care in the future, it is better than you painstakingly practised for another hundred years.”

Qin WuYan lowered his head slightly, nobody could tell if he was proud or shy from his face expression, even his voice did not change too, it was still calm and smooth, he softly said, “Greetings to ZongZhu, Holy Envoy, I did not know my manners just now, I hope both of you do not mind.”

Ghost King [He he] laughed, shook his hand, Qing Long also smiled and said, “This young brother is able to learn from the God of Poison, he will have boundless prospects in the future!”

God of Poison [He he] laughed and said to both of them, “The child does not know his manners, please do not mind.”

Ghost King shook his hand, smiled and said, “You are too formal”. He paused for a while and said again, “But Senior, today I really come to sincerely invite you to take charge of the situation. Our four main branches are joining hands together, to clean off that big failure at Qing Yun, where our Holy Sect was insulted and humiliated beyond words.”

God of Poison was silent for a while, his expression looked slightly bleak, after a long time he then said, “Old brother, I am already half handicapped, I am really not much use. This time, our four branches conspired together to attack Qing Yun, naturally I cannot be left behind, if not I will be letting both saints, Wisdom Queen and Wisdom King, down, and even more towards Holy Sect’s generation of founders. Just that the leader of this exercise! I think other than you, old brother, a man of great talent and courage, there is simply no one suitable at all!”

Ghost King frowned, shook his head and said, “Senior you overpraised me, among the four branches, my qualifications is the lowest, how can I take on the role? Let’s do it like this! We will wait for Chang Shen Hall’s ‘Yu YangZi’ and HeHuan Branch’s ‘Three seconds Fairy’ to arrive, then we discussed again ba!”

God of Poison was silent for a while and said, “This suggestion is good too, they should be here in a few days time, we will gather again at that time, our Holy Sect’s hundred years of insult and deep humiliation, this time round we must get it back from Qing Yun Sect.”

Ghost King smiled, sat for a while and chatted a few words more, and after that, left with Qing Long. The God of Poison did not force them to stay on and ordered his men to send them off.

After leaving God of Poison's mansion, Ghost King and Qing Long, the two of them, merged into HeYang City's crowd.

Ghost King suddenly sneered and said, "This old monster, is really getting harder and harder to deal with."

These words were said without rhyme or reason but Qing Long seemed to understand what he was referring to, nodded his head and said, "That's right, three hundred years ago when our Ghost King clan with WanDu sect were fighting to death, the old monster was the most malicious and impulsive, he was always the first on the frontline, even hundred years ago, Qing Yun that big battle, it was also him as the Head of WanDu sect, who advocated it strongly. It seemed like that crushing defeat had tone down much of his drive."

Ghost King shook his head and said, "This is not called tone down, this is called capabilities grown. After going through that battle, the old monster seemed to totally gain enlightenment. His temperament changed completely, concealing his strength and bidding his time. These hundred years, other than our Ghost King clan, WanDu sect was the fastest to recover back their strength. Just that he refused this position, it is indeed very troublesome!"

Saying which, Ghost King frowned and said drily, "Forget it, anyway we have to wait for the other two to arrive before we can discuss the important matter, let's wait a few more days! Mhm, right, BiYao? It seems like I didn't see her for the whole day."

Qing Long replied, "I didn't see her too, but YouJi has been accompanying her, shouldn't have any problem, don't worry"

Ghost King shook his head, softly sighed and did not say anymore.

After watching Ghost King and Qing Long's figures disappeared, God of Poison, whose expression all along had been gentle and even carried a bit of kindness, gradually darkened, but for half a day, he did not say anything.

As for the young man beside him, his character was even more odd, even if God of Poison did not speak to him, he took pleasure in what he was doing, patiently preparing the tea on the table, there was no hint of impatience on his expression.

After like ages, God of Poison suddenly heaved a deep sigh and said, "The new is constantly replacing the old!"

That young man called Qin WuYan turned his head over, took a look at God of Poison and said coolly, "O! Is that person's skills powerful?"

God of Poison snorted and said, "His training and skills are naturally high, but even how high his skills will be, we do not fear him, just that this person is too shrewd, you must take precautions in the future!"

Qin WuYan smiled slightly, his tone still calm, and said, "Yes I know, Teacher"

God of Poison looked at him, and exclaimed suddenly, "If only your good-for-nothing senior brothers can have your aptitude, why would I need to wait bitterly for these many years?"

Even when Qin WuYan received praise from God of Poison, his face did not have any conceited expression, he coolly said, "The few senior brothers are all

doing their best to work for you, Teacher”

God of Poison snorted, suddenly stretched his hand to pull off the woollen blanket off his lap, and actually stood up from the chair, his physique was in fact quite tall and big, his back straight. Where did it show that he was sick at all? It looked like all of the actions earlier, were all done to deceive Ghost King and Qing Long.

God of Poison paced back and forth in the middle of the house, Qin WuYan instead was much more quieter than his teacher, the only sound heard was God of Poison’s footsteps.

At this time, suddenly, beside Qin WuYan, a strange sound sounded. It was similar to the ear-piercing sounds made by cicadas in the summer.

God of Poison’s expression changed, he turned to look.

Qin WuYan took out a yellow box from below his seat, one chi (translator’s note: a traditional unit of length) square, the strange sound came from this.

God of Poison walked over, stretched out his hand to gently open the cover, impressively in front of them, on top of the yellow soft silk cloth in the box, lay a magnificent coloured centipede, but the most unusual part was, the centipede’s tail was split into seven.

If Zhang Xiao Fan was to see this thing now, he would be shocked beyond description, because he had seen this thing when he was young, it was one of the world most extremely poisonous ‘Seven tailed centipede’.

Qin WuYan frowned and said, “Ever since we have arrived near Qing Yun Hill, XiaoQi seemed restless, as if it has been agitated.”

God of Poison looked closely at this seven tailed centipede, and took out a small light purple medicine pill from his bosom, placed it inside the box and closed the lid. Very soon, that strange sound that was emitting from the box, gradually lowered down and disappeared.

After Qin WuYan had carefully put away the box with seven tailed centipede in it, God of Poison calmly said, “This seven tailed centipede is one of the rare creatures in the world, there is only one pair left and they have always accompanied each other until death. If they are separated, but within a hundred miles, they can sense each other. These few days that XiaoQi was being restless, must be because of this.”

Qin WuYan looked at God of Poison, suddenly said, “So it means, now that that person, is at Qing Yun Hill?”

God of Poison laughed and said, “That is right, the seven tailed centipede is one of its only kind in the whole world, it cannot be wrong.”

After speaking, he turned his head around, gazed deeply far away. In the far place, that lofty majestic Qing Yun Hill outside HeYang City, soaring through the clouds, its might and power almost unequaled in the world, white clouds swirling around it with the presence of heavenly aura.

“One hundred years already, turn of an eye, it’s another hundred years!” This old man, muttered to himself in a low voice.

Chapter 76: Intention

At Qing Yun Hill Big Bamboo Valley.

Zhang Xiao Fan dully sat in his own room, staring blankly.

It was a bright and sunny afternoon, gentle rays of light streamed in from the room's window and shone upon the green stone floor. Maybe it was also because the air carried a sluggish feel, Da Huang and Xiao Hui in the room, also seemed to be listless.

DaHuang lay beside Zhang Xiao Fan's feet, and buried its head between its two front paws. Its eyes were half closed, its ears were also drooping down and from its head to tail, only its glossy fur tail swung occasionally.

And even the usual energetic monkey, Xiao Hui, was also lying on Da Huang's body at this moment. Using Da Huang's stomach as pillow, its eyes were closed and in a deep sleep. And its body, following Da Huang's stomach's breathing, moved slightly up and down.

This peaceful afternoon, seemed like everything were as before, exactly the same.

Zhang Xiao Fan's eyes were fixed into a stare into the unknown, this was already the third day of his return to Qing Yun Hill.

Suddenly, as if it had sense something, Da Huang, who had been drowsing off, suddenly lifted its head up, both of its eyes opened and even its ears were standing straight up.

Zhang Xiao Fan frowned, and heard slow footsteps outside the door. Soon, a creaking sound was heard and the door was being pushed opened.

The sunlight streamed in and for a moment the lights were blinding. Zhang Xiao Fan only saw a figure standing outside the door, bathing in the sunlight.

Until after his eyes adjusted to the brightness, his face immediately turned pale. Tian BuYi's face was solemn, standing at the door.

In these three days, this is the first time Tian BuYi had came to see him And other than the one who delivered his meals to him, big Senior brother Song Daren, he was the first person. He guessed that the rest of them, due to the strict orders from Tian BuYi, were unable to visit.

By this time, Da Huang had already ran over, his tail wagging vigorously, rubbing itself here and there on Tian BuYi's legs and appeared to be extremely delighted. But the other animal, Xiao Hui, did not seemed to feel the same, instead appeared to have been disrupted from a good dream and looked indignant. It [Zhi Zhi] screeched out twice, but after all it knew that Tian BuYi was not someone it could offend, so it did not dare to go forward and behaved impudently.

After screeching out a few times, Xiao Hui swaggered and leapt back to Zhang Xiao Fan's bed, leaned against the blanket and fell asleep again.

Tian BuYi bended his body, looked at Da Huang who was beside his legs, stretched out his hand and smoothed its head. Da Huang barked softly twice and used its head to rub his palm.

Tian BuYi patted Da Huang's head, stood upright and looked at Zhang Xiao Fan.

Zhang Xiao Fan did not dare to look directly at him, and softly called out, "Teacher."

Tian BuYi looked at him for a while, did not acknowledge and slowly walked nearer. Zhang Xiao Fan subconsciously moved back a step.

But Tian BuYi did not do anything, and only slowly sat down on the chair. Zhang Xiao Fan felt some apprehension, but even more than that, he was at a loss for words and at his wits' end. Actually ever since he had returned, he had expected to face such a situation, even to the extent that he would face interrogation from even more people, he was already mentally prepared.

But, on this warm and quiet afternoon, when the person whom he had been worshipping like God for all these years, Tian BuYi, silently sitting in front of him, he could only bowed his head low, his mind in a blank and unable to utter a single word.

Without knowing how much time had passed before he heard Tian BuYi

slowly said, “Lao Qi.” [Translator’s note: It means number seven]

Zhang Xiao Fan’s body shivered, and almost like a conditional reflex, he replied, “Yes, Teacher.”

“Do you have any words, that you wish to say to me?”

Zhang Xiao Fan slowly lifted his head, looked at Tian BuYi, Tian BuYi expressionlessly looked back at him, he was unable to presume what he was thinking about.

After a long silence, Zhang Xiao Fan slowly shook his head.

Tian BuYi stared at this disciple, his hand which was huddled inside his sleeve slowly curled up into a fist.

“Just now, “ Tian BuYi slowly spoke, as if as only this way, he could hide the feelings in his heart, “This morning QiHao from Long Shou Valley, sent a message. Early tomorrow morning, our Sect Head, Reverend DaoXuan, wants to meet you at TongTian Peak, YuQing Hall.”

Zhang Xiao Fan’s body shook slightly. In the end, he still have to face it.

The cool mountain breeze, gently blew in from the door that was left opened. The wind seemed to carry with it the rustling sounds from the bamboo forest far away. But, the people in the room, instead did not feel anything.

Xiao Hui seemed to fall asleep again, Big Huang too lay down again and did not bother them. Only Tian BuYi, was still staring attentively at this disciple.

Staring deeply, deeply at him

“These few days, did those senior brothers of yours neglect you?”

Zhang Xiao Fan shook his head and said, “No, all of the senior brothers treated...treated me well.”

Tian BuYi did not speak anymore, the room became silent again.

After a long while, Tian BuYi suddenly heaved a long sigh, and looked as if he had made up his mind on something, flung his head back and stood up, without even turning his head, he walked towards the door without a word.

Zhang Xiao Fan stared at that familiar back figure, at a loss.

Just when Tian BuYi was about to step out of the room, he suddenly stopped, but he still did not turn his head. Zhang Xiao Fan as if in a trance, called out, “Teacher...”

“Lao Qi!” Tian BuYi’s voice was still steady, but behind it instead, an indistinct flow of unusual emotions.

“I will ask you for the last time, are you really the spy sent from other sects to pry on our Qing Yun secret skills?”

Zhang Xiao Fan bit his lips, slowly, slowly knelt in front of him, “Teacher, I am not, I have not done anything to let you down!”

He spoke in a low voice to Tian BuYi, also as if at the same time speaking to the depths of his heart, speaking with resolution and finality.

In the sunlight, there seemed to be a sound of gentle soft sigh. When Zhang Xiao Fan lifted his head again, that familiar figure had already disappeared.

Zhang Xiao Fan stared blankly at the door, and after remaining that way for a long time, he then slowly stood up, walked back to his bed and sat down.

The monkey, Xiao Hui, was roused suddenly up by his actions, turned its head over, saw that it was Zhang Xiao Fan, split his lips and smiled. As if after the nap, it had regained its energy, and like energetic as usual, jumped onto him.

Zhang Xiao Fan subconsciously pulled his hand over and hugged Xiao Hui but his gaze still remained on outside the door. After a long while, then he, using only the voice that he himself, or maybe including Xiao Hui, could hear, spoke quietly, “You know right, I promised that person before, until death I will not say, until death I will not say...”

Not knowing whether Xiao Hui understood, but it obviously did not appear to mind, stretched out its hands and intimately scratched Zhang Xiao Fan’s hair.

Zhang Xiao Fan did not move, and let Xiao Hui do what it wanted, he only slowly said, “Only you, Xiao Hui, now only you are by my side...”

Xiao Hui [zi zi] called out twice, hehe laughed, and not knowing whether it really understood. And at a distance away, Big Huang seemed to fall asleep again, in its dream, its tail curled up slightly, and withdrew back under its body.

The sun as usual gently shone down, Du BiShu, who was standing outside the door, could not help but opened his mouth and yawned. But in an instant, the initial slight drowsiness felt disappeared. Tian BuYi was seen slowly walking out from Zhang Xiao Fan's residence.

"Teacher." Du BiShu called out, and at the same time, carefully watched Tian BuYi's expression, hoping to read something from it. However, Tian BuYi's face was expressionless, only nodded his head slightly and walked past him like that, walking towards ShouJing Hall.

Du BiShu respectfully stood aside, until Tian BuYi was far away, and looked at his departing figure. But in his heart instead, he was thinking about Zhang Xiao Fan, and cannot help but heaved a sigh. At big Bamboo Valley, nobody expected that such a thing would happened to this former ordinary little Junior Brother.

At this very moment, even the former usual energetic him, also could not help but felt listless, in his heart, he was even more worried about Zhang Xiao Fan.

Lost in his thoughts, without knowing how much time had passed, until a voice was heard from behind, "Six Senior Brother."

Du BiShu was startled, turned his head over and was stunned, without knowing when, Zhang Xiao Fan had walked out from his room and stood behind him. The monkey, Xiao Hui, lay on his shoulder and was grinning at him. Only Da Huang did not follow them out, most likely it was still asleep.

“Er, little Junior Brother!” Du BiShu frowned and said, “Is anything the matter?”

Zhang Xiao Fan looked at him and slowly said, “Six Senior Brother, I will like to take a walk at the back of the hill.”

Du BiShu heard what he said and was speechless, in his heart he felt awkward. Ever since they had returned to the mountain, although Tian BuYi did not expressly order them to supervise Zhang Xiao Fan, but Shiniang [Translator’s note: Teacher’s wife) had already instructed the rest on the sly.

Just that right now looking at his little Junior Brother, who had always been honest, with his haggard face, Du BiShu, in his heart he was somewhat unwilling. But in any case, he did not dare to disobey his teachers’ intentions, after a long while he then hemmed and hawed and said, “Little Junior Brother, you, you know now...I, I...”

Zhang Xiao Fan silently hung his head, softly said, “Tomorrow Sect Head, Reverend DaoXuan Uncle, wants me to go to TongTian Peak, I just thought to go see the past places once more.”

Du BiShu’s body shook and slightly opened his mouth, suddenly without knowing why, he felt his eyes became warm, right now the youth that was standing in front of him, seemed to turn into that ordinary boy who had just came up the hill many years ago, at the dinner table, the scene where he was betting with him on whom in Teacher’s family would first go into the kitchen.

But Teacher’s command, whatever happens, he did not dare to disobey. Just when he was in this difficult situation, suddenly he heard footsteps, both of them turned their heads, it was instead Tian LingEr, whom had a mixed

emotions expression on her face, walking over.

In these three days, this was Zhang Xiao Fan's first time meeting Tian LingEr, her face was slightly pale, and seemed haggard. It must be that these few days she was also worried. Just that in this sunlight, she was still as beautiful.

Zhang Xiao Fan hung his head.

Tian LingEr walked to where both of them were, and faced Du BiShu, but her sight from the corner of her eyes was always on Zhang Xiao Fan, said, "Six Senior Brother, my dad said already, Xiao Fan he will not do anything, let him go ba!"

Du BiShu was stunned, Zhang Xiao Fan's body also seemed to receive a shock, slowly turned his body towards ShouJing Hall's direction to look, but he could only see that the Hall's entrance was deep inside, no sign of Tian BuYi's figure.

Zhang Xiao Fan slowly bowed once towards ShouJing Hall's direction, spoke in a low voice which seemed to be choked with sobs, said "Thank you Teacher."

Tian LingEr stood aside, she seemed to wish to speak but eventually did not say anything, pressed her lips tightly, turned and walked back.

Looking at her until she was far away, Du BiShu suddenly said, "No wonder this morning little Junior Sister and Long Shou Valley QiHao had a big quarrel."

Zhang Xiao Fan was startled, said, "What?"

Du BiShu said, “QiHao Senior Brother made a trip here in the morning, after speaking with Teacher and Shiniang, little Junior Sister pulled him aside. Unexpectedly not after, seemed like little Junior Sister said something which made QiHao Senior Brother in a difficult situation, then little Junior Sister flared up.” Du BiShu paused for a while, glanced at Zhang Xiao Fan, and continued, “I guessed she must have want QiHao Senior Brother to go to CangSong Teacher Uncle and plea on your behalf, they must have quarrelled because of that.”

Zhang Xiao Fan gave a bitter laugh softly, and also did not know what to reply, shook his head and walked towards the back of the hill.

Du BiShu watched his figure from the back, but when he saw the monkey, Xiao Hui, crouching on his shoulder, playing and messing with his hair from time to time, the image looked rather amusing. Just that when he thought of Zhang Xiao Fan’s fate after tomorrow, he couldn’t help but frowned and sighed deeply.

The forest trail that lead to the back of big Bamboo Valley, Zhang Xiao Fan had not walk on it for a very long time. On his way there, the roadsides were filled with greenery, the birds chirping far away could be heard from time to time.

The oncoming breeze from the valley, blew onto his face, bringing a touch of coolness. Following the crooked small path, it felt like he was back in the past again.

Nothing here had changed at all! Even the far away white clouds, floating in the middle of the big Bamboo Valley mountain, also seemed to look exactly the

same as that year.

Monkey Xiao Hui looked extremely delighted, immediately jumped down from Zhang Xiao Fan's shoulder, [Zhi zhi] calling out, burrowed into the grass at the side of the path, and suddenly climbed up a big tree, swinging here and there at the top.

Zhang Xiao Fan looked at it and could not help but broke out into a slight smile. As he recalled back the scene where where he had met Xiao Hui that year, it was as if the heavyweight in his heart had lifted slightly.

He walked and walked, Xiao Hui was just at the top of his head, scuttling excitedly here and there in the trees tops, but Zhang Xiao Fan's gaze, gradually instead only looked ahead, that stretch of clear, green bamboo forest.

How many memories, solidified here!

In front of the bamboo forest, he stopped his footsteps.

The valley breeze blew over, countless black bamboos danced to the wind, [Hua hua] sounds, as if they were too welcoming an old friend back.

Zhang Xiao Fan took a deep breath, the world at that moment, the air was made up of of fresh, sweet bamboo and freedom that only belonged there.

Then he walked in.

The green bamboo forest, was as dense as before. On the soil ground below

those tall green bamboos, even more numerous bamboo shoots sprouted out from the ground, growing freely everywhere.

Unknowingly, he had walked to the same place where he had practised chopping down the bamboos, just that those thin black bamboos, had become twice as thick now.

The shadows of the bamboos whirled, bamboos moved in waves, all seemed to cluster around him.

The past was like a surge of tide wave, gushed into his heart.

He stared blankly at everything around him, as if he had gone imbecile.

“Zhang Xiao Fan!”

Suddenly, a gentle and slightly surprised shout called out from the depths of the bamboo forest.

Zhang Xiao Fan’s body shook, the sound of the voice was so familiar, but he could never imagined that he would hear this voice at this place. He immediately turned and looked towards the direction of the voice, and his breath stopped. In the sea of bamboos, BiYao with her water green dress which blended seamlessly with the surrounding, dainty smiling and standing there, so very tenderly, so very infatuatedly, looking at himself.

“You, You how did you get here?” After looking fixedly at each other for a very long time like two fools, Zhang Xiao Fan stammered and asked.

BiYao slowly walked over, even her eyes contained her gentle smiling expression, softly said, "I came to see you!"

Zhang Xiao Fan's heart was agitated, subconsciously he bit his lower lips, after a while he then said, "But, what if you are seen by someone else, it is too dangerous for you!"

BiYao shook her head, "I don't care, I only want to take a look at you."

Zhang Xiao Fan's body shook, this was in fact the first time he heard BiYao confessed her feelings this frankly. She seemed to notice Zhang Xiao Fan's surprise, her face became red too, and quickly added, "Your QingYun Sect these hundred over years have always been secure and stable like a mountain, and since long ago have already relaxed your defenses, I came up the mountain secretly and didn't seemed like anyone noticed."

Zhang Xiao Fan silently nodded his head, but suddenly a thought just flashed by, now that there was no one in Good Faction who did not know that BiYao was Evil Faction Ghost King Sect Sect Head's daughter, if right now he was to be discovered having a conversation with her again, then he did not even have to ask what would be the consequences.

BiYao was clever beyond description, she saw at once Zhang Xiao Fan appeared to be worried, her smiling expression gradually turned into dejection, softly said, "If you are worried, I shall leave then."

Zhang Xiao Fan looked at her, although BiYao's face expression contained her happiness but it could not hide those traces of haggardness. He guessed that it must have resulted from being worried about him these past few days.

Suddenly, his heart became warm and unwittingly blurt out, "What can I be worried about, can I be even worse?"

BiYao stunned for a moment and looked at him. Zhang Xiao Fan gave a bitter smile and said, "It is alright, nobody will come here now anyway, why don't you accompany me to chat!"

BiYao's facial expression turned radiant, she nodded her head and said, "Alright."

But after saying this sentence, the two of them gazed at each other but did not know what to say. The ambience suddenly cooled down, with a touch of awkwardness.

After a long while, BiYao scolded him, "Idiot, say something!"

Zhang Xiao Fan scratched his head but his mind was in a blank, he really did not know what to say to this beautiful girl. It happened that from the corner of his eyes, he saw at not too far away, there was a section of black bamboos which were lying on the ground, most likely it had rot over the years and fell over. He walked over and stammered, "You should sit!"

BiYao could not help but giggled, like a flower burst forth, her elegant and exquisiteness unparalleled.

She walked over and was about to sit down when Zhang Xiao Fan suddenly pulled her back and said, "Wait wait."

BiYao was surprised and said, "What happened?"

Zhang Xiao Fan bent over, using his sleeve and wipe hard on the black bamboo, cleaning up an area. He got up, without looking at BiYao, lowered his head and said, "You can sit down now!"

BiYao's smile expression disappeared, her lips trembled, a pair of bright eyes gazing only at Zhang Xiao Fan's figure. After a while, she slowly sat down and at the same time, pulled Zhang Xiao Fan, saying, "You should sit too!"

Zhang Xiao Fan's face turned red, said, "I, I can sit on the floor...."

Unexpectedly BiYao gave a jerk and pulled him over to sit with her on the bamboo. She said with annoyance, "Ask you to sit, you should sit! Why would you want to sit on the floor?"

Zhang Xiao Fan laughed embarrassedly. He caught a whiff of fragrance beside him, faintly drifting over, from his nostrils it entered, and into the depths of his heart. Unable to bear, he turned and looked at her, and saw that BiYao was also looking at him, gazing at him deeply, with unspeakable tenderness.

Never had he noticed, even when they were trapped in Blooddrip Cave under Black Stone Cave, Zhang Xiao Fan had never felt this close to her before. After a long while, he suddenly said, "BiYao."

BiYao smiled and said, "Yes?"

Zhang Xiao Fan gazed at her and asked, "Why are you being so good to me?"

BiYao was stunned for a while, slowly shifted her gaze to the ground in front of her, her face expression also seemed to be befuddled, and said, "Right! Why am I being so good to you?"

Over their heads, the bamboo leaves rustled gently in the valley breeze, it seemed to be gently saying something too.

"My family, and also the past matters, you should know right?" After a long silence, BiYao quietly said.

Zhang Xiao Fan lightly nodded, and said, "Yes."

BiYao unhurriedly said, "Since young, my mother was not with me, father too was busy with the Holy Sect's big matters, he seldom had time for me. Everyone around me, because of my father, always greeted me with smiling faces, and fawned upon me."

Zhang Xiao Fan was silent for a while and said, "Your father is actually very concerned about you."

BiYao nodded her head, said, "Yes. But I did not understand it in the past, until I met you then I understand."

She gazed at Zhang Xiao Fan, quietly said, "Xiao Fan, the days in Blooddrip Cave, I can never forget in this lifetime."

Her voice, at this moment, seemed to be far away, "Unexpectedly in the darkness, even when I was about to die, I could also find someone to depend on."

Zhang Xiao Fan's heart was moved, but he did not know what to say.

A white and as smooth as jade hand stretched over, BiYao gently held his hand, from her soft skin, it emitted a faint gentleness.

She took a handkerchief from her bosom, gently wipe the stains on Zhang Xiao Fan's sleeve, which was used to wipe the bamboo for her.

"Ever since from young until now, countless number of people has tried to please me, sending me rare and priceless treasures, but..." She lifted her head, looked into Zhang Xiao Fan's eyes, softly said, "Even if all of the rare treasures in the world are now placed in front of me, it is not even worthy of this sleeve which you had used to wipe the bamboo for me."

At this moment, all of the sounds in the world, suddenly disappeared.

Only this beautiful girl's gentle eyes, surrounded all of his vision.

How many years after, when you think back the past, do you still remember that year, somebody once, quietly confessed their heartfelt thoughts to you?

That because being young, with some innocent and fanatical words, do you still remember?

Just like being deeply engraved in your heart, an oath that is unwilling to die or give up!

Did you spread open your arms, and hug that beloved into your embrace?

Without knowing when, in that sea of gentle tranquility, he opened his arms, together with that beautiful girl beside him, tightly embraced.

Chapter 77: At a loss

Shadows of bamboos danced, shards of sunlight shone down, landed upon the clearing in the bamboo forest.

Zhang Xiao Fan gazed far into the bamboo forest, quietly said, “Actually, sometimes I find myself so silly, my Senior Sister clearly liked QiHao Senior Brother, instead I still...but, at that time, when I saw her standing in front of Kui Niu, I didn’t know what I was thinking, and just dashed up.”

BiYao leaned on his side, suddenly said, “If I encountered danger too, will you save me like that?”

Zhang Xiao Fan awkwardly laughed, scratched his head, after a while replied, “I, I also don’t know, ” but after pausing for a while and thinking carefully again, said, “Should be ba!” [translator’s note: ‘ba’ after a sentence soften the speaker’s speech. I’m not sure what is the equivalent in English so I literally translated the word]

BiYao smiled, gave him an annoyed stare, withdrew her stare, and looked afar, quietly said, “If instead, you were the one who had met with danger, even if I had to exchange my life for you, I would also gladly do it!”

Zhang Xiao Fan was shocked, turned and looked at her! BiYao looked solemn and did not seem to be joking, he stammered and said, "What did you say?"

BiYao smiled, and looked as if something suddenly came to her mind, said to Zhang Xiao Fan, "Xiao Fan, come with me ba!"

Zhang Xiao Fan frowned and said, "To where?"

BiYao said, "Anywhere, the world is so big, it doesn't matter where we go. You do not wish to enter into our Holy Sect and be an enemy to your sect, then we shall not enter, and travel together to the ends of the world. If not, should you continue to stay in QingYun sect and judging from those old antiques' temperaments, I only fear the worst for you."

Zhang Xiao Fan turned silent, BiYao worriedly looked at him, waiting.

Finally, Zhang Xiao Fan turned to look at her, BiYao was about to say something but saw Zhang Xiao Fan instead was slowly shaking his head.

"Can't, I will not leave QingYun, BiYao."

BiYao's expression immediately turned somber, and said, "Don't tell me you want to stay here and wait for death?"

Zhang Xiao Fan, after remaining silent for a while, said, "BiYao, you don't understand, QingYun is my home, I am raised up by my teacher, teacher's wife, I cannot abandon them."

BiYao angrily said, "That teacher of yours scold and punish you every time, you still say they are good?"

Zhang Xiao Fan stood up straight, smiled lightly and said, "BiYao, I may looked somehow stupid to other people, but on these matters, I can still tell. Although my teacher has always been strict but he treats me really well, I know it, he treats me sincerely." He spoke quietly, "The recent incidents, actually it is all my fault. I was the one who lied to him, therefore whatever punishment that I receive, I deserve it, but I should never betray my sect."

BiYao was stunned for a moment, suddenly sighed and said, "Which part of you is stupid? You are very clever! No wonder my dad always told me, although you look simple and slow but you are actually very intelligent!"

Zhang Xiao Fan was surprised and his face turned red, said, "He, your dad he spoke of me like that?"

BiYao laughed and did not reply, walked up to him and said, "I know your character, and will not force you to leave, but now that you are holding our sect rare treasure, and are also involved with TianYin Temple, it is really very dangerous. Have you decided what to do?"

Zhang Xiao Fan gave a bitter laugh and said, "I will leave it to Heaven!"

BiYao stared at him, softly said, "You better be alright!"

Zhang Xiao Fan laughed, looked up to the sky, said, "You have been here for quite a long time, you better hurry back! Just in case should any incidents happen. We, we if we are fated in the future...then we shall meet again!"

BiYao's body shook, Zhang Xiao Fan somehow also felt agonized in his heart. The journey to TongTian Peak tomorrow, he really did not have any confidence on what would be the outcome eventually.

He turned, and slowly walked towards the boundary of the bamboo forest.

Just when he had walked several zhangs away, he suddenly heard BiYao's voice from the back, "Xiao Fan, I ask you one thing."

Zhang Xiao Fan turned around and asked in surprise, "What?"

BiYao also seemed a bit hesitant, but eventually still continued, "In that forest outside the lake town, you had once looked upon a well on a full moon night, I will like to know, what did you see inside the well?"

Zhang Xiao Fan was taken aback, curiously asked, "Why do you want to know this too?"

BiYao suddenly felt nervous, became annoyed and said, "Just say!"

Zhang Xiao Fan frowned and said, "Just what strange properties did the well have that all of you will be so interested?"

BiYao smiled and did not reply.

Zhang Xiao Fan opened his mouth to speak, but without knowing what he had recalled, his face turned red again, and eventually did not say it. After a while he then said, "I, I until the next time we meet again, I will surely tell you."

BiYao looked surprised, and smiled, after all she had heard Zhang Xiao Fan's intention, that he was not that willing to be manipulated by his teachers, immediately smiled and said, "Alright! You must remember oh!"

Zhang Xiao Fan [He he] laughed, after talking his heart out together with BiYao, his mood had for the moment, brightened up a lot, and he felt much lighter. He stretched out his hand and waved to BiYao, turned and walked out of the bamboo forest.

After a short distance, the monkey Xiao Hui, without knowing which big bamboo top it had jumped down from, landed on Zhang Xiao Fan's shoulder, and even turned back to look at BiYao.

In the depth of the bamboo forest, BiYao, without moving, stared blankly after that gradually disappearing figure.

Lady Jingling=Lady JinLingLupin Bell=He Huan Bell

Uncle Bozo=Wang ErShu

Zhang XiaoFan slowly walked up, the more he climbed, the higher he was. But without knowing why, he felt his heart became heavier and heavier. That place

in front of him, with celestial-air swirling around, the nearer he went, it instead made his heart pounded even faster.

The anxiety from nowhere wrapped around him tightly. And what would be, waiting for him?

In TongTian Valley Crystal Hall, another distant bell chimed, the chime lingered within the mountain valleys....

At the foot of Qing Yun Hill, in a deserted place, there were four people standing side by side, three men and a lady, quietly looking at Qing Yun Hill.

After a long while, the one who was the oldest, God of Poison, suddenly laughed, said, "I cannot believe that while I am still alive, I can actually come back here."

Ghost King, who was standing beside him, smiled coolly and said, "With Senior you taking charge, we can do far more than just returning here, in a while, even if we reach the top of TongTian Valley, it is also not surprising."

God of Poison immediately shook his head, smiled and said, "Ghost King old brother, haven't we discussed already? This time this big matter, Chang Shen Hall Yu YangZi fellow brother will lead, we are just the footwork soldiers only."

Speaking, he turned his head, and spoke to the man standing on the other side, "That is right right! Yu YangZi old brother, he he."

Part of the Evil Faction four big branches, Chang Shen Hall Head Yu YangZi, with both eyebrows reaching into his temples, his face was extremely

handsome, he looked to be in his early thirties, but in fact he was an Evil Faction scholar who had already practiced for several hundred years.

Within the Evil Faction, Chang Shen Hall was a special branch. Because all along, it had always been this group who was responsible for defending the Evil Faction's most holy place in the Wildlands, the Holy Temple. And this branch's main purpose, just like its name, was to achieve immortality. Just that they were ranked among the four main branches of the Evil Faction, whenever they performed their tasks, their methods were usually unscrupulous, completely different from Good Faction's practice of achieving immortality. For that, we would talk about it later.

This time the Evil Faction secretly came to Qing Yun Hill to mount a large-scale offensive, when Yu YangZi arrived, after a few secretive discussions, he was voted as the leader for this Evil Faction's major operation. Inevitably, he felt somehow conceited, immediately laughed and said, "Qing Yun Hill these few hundred years have always bully and oppress our Holy Sect, today we must demand justice from them."

Ghost King laughed and said, "Well said."

After speaking, he turned his head and spoke to the lady who was standing beside, who was also the only female Sect Head among the four big branches, He Huan Branch SanMiao Fairy (Translator's note: Which also mean Three wonderful/special skills), smiled and said, "Later on, we will also want to see Fairy your magical ingenious skills."

SanMiao Fairy came from the most disordered Evil Faction He Huan Branch, her appearance was extremely beautiful, but looking at her, there was not a hint of lascivious air, her face was plain, without any makeup but instead there was an icy frost beauty, much similar to Qing Yun Hill that Little Bamboo Valley

Lu XueQi.

After hearing Ghost King's words, SanMiao Fairy smiled indifferently, said, "Three fellow brothers are all important figures who had seen the world, far exceeding me this small small girl. Just that we all swore an oath in front of Wisdom Queen and Wisdom King, that we must work together in this mission, to wipe away the humiliation suffered by Holy Temple at that time. I still hope that three fellow brothers will put away the past grievances together and not to let down the promise made earlier."

Three of them including Ghost King looked at each other, said together, "Fairy please do not worry, we do not have other ulterior motives."

SanMiao Fairy smiled, and turned to speak to Ghost King, "Ghost King fellow brother, I have been here for several days, why didn't I get to see brother's daughter?"

Ghost King was stunned for a while, said, "You mean BiYao that girl, children love to play, I also do not know where she went, I wonder why Fairy is looking for her?"

SanMiao Fairy said indifferently, "Not particularly anything, just that I recently heard, your precious daughter (Translator's note: honorific terms for person's daughter) gained a treasure, a rare He Huan Bell left by Lady JinLing, is there such matter?"

God of Poison and Yu YangZi both changed countenance slightly. Evidently the name, Lady JinLing, even to them, both who were such heavyweights in Evil Faction, they also could not treat it lightly.

Ghost King's face countenance changed, a subtle gleam of light shone in his eyes, said, "I wonder from where did Fairy get this news?"

SanMiao Fairy stretched out her jade-like hand, lightly arranged her hair, expressionlessly replied, "Naturally I heard it. Ghost King fellow brother, eight hundred years ago Lady JinLing was our He Huan Branch's elder founder. The He Huan Bell that she left behind, is even more of our He Huan Branch's main treasure, this, I guess you should know also right?"

Ghost King did not speak anymore but his hands were clasped behind his back, his bearing upright, absolutely showing no sign of him avoiding the topic. The harmonious atmosphere just now, seemed to become hostile in a flash.

Yu YangZi coughed once, glanced at God of Poison, unexpectedly God of Poison turned his head away and looked instead at the distant Qing Yun Hill peak, obviously refusing to meddle in this. Yu YangZi cursed in his heart, if this had happened in the past, he himself would also wish that these two rivals would fight till their deaths, but now that he was the leader of this operation, he could only walk up and said, "Both, why did you all turn angry while chatting? Both of you are also highly skilled masters, and right now we have an important matter, why not we leave this issue first, after we concluded our business, both of you could continue to settle it privately, how is it?"

SanMiao Fairy looked at him, nodded slightly and shifted her gaze away: Ghost King was expressionless but in his heart, he was sneering: this Yu YangZi was indeed not a decent person, in view of his own position he had to step in but subtly instigated both branches to fight after this event.

But that He Huan Bell was not any treasure, it had always been classified with Ghost King Sect's 'Hidden Dragon Cauldron', Blood Forger Hall's 'Sinister Orb' and WanDu Sect's 'Thousand Poison Return to Clan Bag' as Evil Faction's four

great rare treasures, what's more, a rumor had always been heard in the Evil Faction, that the many strange magical spells in He Huan Sect, required this He Huan Bell as an intermediary for them to realize their full magical potential.

This kind of important treasure, even how stupid Ghost King would be, he would not be willing to give it up. After BiYao found this treasure from Blooddrop Cave in Black Stone Cave, he even specially instructed not to announce it but instead, he did not expect SanMiao Fairy to be that resourceful, that she could actually get hold of this news.

In this short while, Ghost King thought through all of the people around him but his expression still carried a slight smile, said, "What Yu YangZi fellow brother said was true, there is no harm to talk about this after the matter."

Yu YangZi saw that these two people, who had always been arrogant and obstinate, actually listened to him, he could not help but felt complacent.

At this moment, God of Poison suddenly cried out, "Ah! The sun is out."

All of them heard what was said and looked towards Qing Yun Hill together, and true enough, the first sun rays shone brilliantly, slowly rising from the distant Qing Yun Hill peak, spilling sunlight into the world.

That pleasantly warm sunlight, also at the same time, shone upon these four people, pulling long long shadows behind them.

After completing the last flight of stairs, Zhang Xiao Fan finally arrived outside Crystal Hall again. This huge solemn palace building, towering in front of him, grand and imposing, when humans stood in front of it, they seemed like ants in

comparison.

ChangJian said, "Let's go in ba!"

Song Daren and Tian LingEr both nodded their heads, Zhang Xiao Fan was about to take a step out, suddenly his body shook, his eyes looked to the side, at the other corner of the stairs, someone was leaning against the railing and sitting on the ground. His clothes were considered clean but because he was sitting carelessly on the ground, the clothes hem were stained with dust, a pair of eyes looking at Zhang Xiao Fan dazedly, what was his mouth mumbling?

He was the Wang ErShu who had been crazy for many years.

Zhang Xiao Fan's heart ached and was about to walk over but was held back by Song Daren, in a low voice he said, "Little Junior brother, we better go in first! Don't let the various teachers wait too long. As for Wang ErShu, wait till you...wait till you come out and visit him again, it will still not be too late."

Zhang Xiao Fan stopped his steps, his heart felt terrible, but in the end he knew that Song Daren's words were true, he himself right now was a criminal, immediately he nodded, forced a smile to Song Daren. ChangJian, who was standing beside, saw it all, spoke in a low voice, "Both, if there is nothing else, let's go in to greet the various seniors and teachers!"

Song Daren acknowledged and walked forward with Zhang Xiao Fan, Tian LingEr instead frowned and said, "Senior and teachers? Chang Senior brother, don't tell me other sects' seniors also came?"

ChangJian hesitated for a while and replied, "Yes, a few of the holy monks

from TianYin Temple have come, also FenXiang Valley seniors, all have come to us to enquire about Zhang...Zhang Junior brother's situation."

Tian LingEr lost color, her face turned white, Song Daren's brows wrinkled tightly.

Zhang Xiao Fan silently walked up, said, "Chang Senior brother, let's go in ba!"

Chang Jian took a look at him, nodded and said, "Alright, all of you follow me."

After which, he walked in taking the lead, Zhang Xiao Fan took a deep breath, moved his somehow heavy feet and followed in. Behind him, Song Daren and Tian LingEr looked at each other, saw the anxiety and worry in each other's eyes, but at the same time too, helplessness. They could only followed in.

Just when they had just entered into the Crystal Hall, Wang ErShu, who had been sitting at the corner all along, his eyes kept following Zhang Xiao Fan's figure. When he saw Zhang Xiao Fan disappeared into Crystal Hall, without knowing why, he stood up unsteadily, he scratched his head like a child who was confused, and actually followed into the Crystal Hall.

These few years, Wang ErShu had been taken care of by Qing Yun Sect, he had also never gotten well from his madness, he roamed around TiongTian Peak the whole day, and even the Crystal Hall which was sacred to the general Qing Yun disciples, he went in regularly too.

But he had never caused any big trouble, over time, nobody bothered him too.

This time, he too, went in successfully, and disappeared into the Crystal Hall.

Chapter 78: Interrogation

TL:

The firestick actual name (before it was smelted together with the Sinister Orb), have you guys seen it being said in the previous chapters? I couldn't recall so I gave it a new name, Soul Absorbing Stick

Kongsang Mountain's Cave of Fang = Thousand Bats Ancient Cave

Helplessly Zhang Xiao Fan right now looked as if he was being possessed, he slowly lowered his head down, without uttering a single word. Disregarding the rest, SuRu and the rest of the big Bamboo Valley who watched him grew up, all were without exception, speechless and pale. Zhang Xiao Fan had always been quiet and firm, at this critical moment, he seemed not to speak no matter what.

Tian BuYi abruptly stepped forward, but without waiting to see what he would say or do, TianYin Temple in-charge, PuHong Holy Monk, who had remained silent all this while, suddenly opened his eyes and said, "Patron Tian,

let's talk over things, let's not get violent.”

Tian BuYi was stunned, he did not expect that PuHong Venerable would suddenly speak for Zhang Xiao Fan, but PuHong Holy Monk was an esteemed and respected figure, even he as one of Qing Yun Sect branch head, dared not not respected his opinion. He could only expressed [Hng], and sat back.

Reverend DaoXuan coolly took a look at PuHong, frown slightly, seemed to be having some thoughts, after which he said to Zhang Xiao Fan, “Also, the Great Brahman Wisdom True Way in you, exactly from where did you learn it?”

The words once spoken, the crowd began to get nervous. The crux of this, indistinctly would affect the internal relations between the current two big Good Faction sects. This answer, must be earth-shattering!

But Zhang Xiao Fan, was still silently kneeling down, after a long while, did not speak a single word.

Reverend DaoXuan's nostrils flared, coldly said, “You still do not reveal the truth?”

From the beginning till the end, FaXiang, who had been watching Zhang Xiao Fan, suddenly lowered his head and did not look at him again. PuHong and PuKong, who were sitting in front of him, at this moment also looked at each other, in their eyes, there was a faint gleam of light, wondered what were they thinking about?

The surrounding world, a blanket of silence, and instead became a boundaryless enormous invisible wall, trapping himself within, coldly squeezing.

Zhang Xiao Fan slowly felt himself unable to breathe, but, until the end, he still did not speak.

Maybe, even himself, did not know what was he holding on for?

[Pong!]

A loud sound, everyone was startled, Zhang Xiao Fan also raised his head to look. It was Reverend DaoXuan, who had slammed the firestick heavily onto the tea table, stood up suddenly, his brows tightly knitted together, obviously this time he was really infuriated, shouted, “Evil creature! Don’t think that just because you refused to speak, I can do nothing with you!”

Zhang Xiao Fan’s body trembled, the expression on his face was complicated, but in the end he still did not speak.

Reverend DaoXuan was even more enraged, but instead he began to laugh and said, “Good, good, good, you this evil creature, today I will let you...”

“Sect Head please be appeased!”

Suddenly, a shout from within the Qing Yun Sect disciples was heard, at once there was a stir among the Qing Yun Sect, everyone was shocked. Reverend DaoXuan had commanded Qing Yun for nearly a hundred year, nobody had dared to go against him. Unexpectedly there was somebody today who dared to stop him, even Zhang Xiao Fan also turned his head to look.

Within the commotion, Lu XueQi was seen determinedly walking out from the crowd, into the centre, stood beside Zhang Xiao Fan and kneeled down.

Reverend DaoXuan was dumbfounded for a brief period of time, Master Shui Yue was also extremely shocked, stood up and urgently said, “Qi er, are you mad? Quickly come back!”

Lu XueQi looked slightly pale but she kneeled beside Zhang Xiao Fan and did not show any signs of retreating. On that unparalleled beauty face, snow-white teeth gently biting on her pale lower lips, quietly said, “Sect Head Teacher Uncle, Little Bamboo Valley Disciple Lu XueQi has something to say.”

Shui Yue frowned and bellowed, “Qi er, Zhang Xiao Fan is big Bamboo Valley disciple, he has committed a serious offence. Sect Head will make his own final decision, you don’t need to speak your opinion, quick quickly come back!”

The corner of Lu XueQi’s lips seemed to quiver slightly, Zhang Xiao Fan who was beside her, at that moment clearly heard her sudden heavy breathing, obviously in front of the crowd, at this very moment kneeling beside him, that kind of pressure was definitely not trivial.

Just that, in this solemn and impressive hall, under everyone’s unfamiliar stares, this beautiful girl never retreated once.

The mountain breeze outside the Crystal Hall, without knowing when, had blew in.

Brushed up a few strands of her hair, gently floating.

Zhang Xiao Fan gazed at this woman beside him, without saying any word.

“Sect Head Teacher Uncle, please allow disciple to say a few words.”

Reverend DaoXuan took a glance at the people around him, saw that the other sects' fellow friends, one after another, were all looking over, he could only coldly said, “Alright, say it.”

Lu XueQi nodded her head and spoke, “Thank you Sect Head. Sect Head Teacher Uncle, every Elder Teacher Uncle and Junior Teacher Uncle, I do not have deep relations with Zhang Xiao Fan Junior brother, but after the Seven Peaks Tournament, I also left the mountain with him. In Kongsang Mountain Thousand Bats Ancient Cave and East Ocean LiuBo Hill, I witnessed how Zhang Junior brother fought tooth and nail with the Evil Faction minions, he is definitely not an Evil Faction spy. Right now there are outsiders here, maybe Zhang Junior brother have some difficult reasons that he cannot speak, Sect Head Teacher Uncle please think thrice before acting, absolutely must not...”

“Wait!”

Suddenly, a voice interrupted Lu XueQi's words. Everyone looked over, it was that FenXiang Valley old man with compound surname, ShangGuan, who was sitting below the two Holy Monks. Earlier on, Zhang Xiao Fan's attention was concentrated on the two Holy Monks from TianYin Temple and did not notice him. Now that he looked at him, his face was thin-looking, his figure was thin and long, even the words he said, also felt sharp.

“The outsiders that this lady mentioned, most likely is referring to me, and also PuHong fellow brother, PuKong fellow brother as well as fellow brothers in the crowd? Hehe, this kind of matter happened in Qing Yun Sect, you all still

have the nerve to consider yourself as the world's orthodox sect, don't tell me that we can't even be allowed to see an explanation?"

Reverend DaoXuan and the other branches leaders' face expressions, immediately turned ugly, Taoist Cang Song who was sitting beside, coldly said, "ShangGuan Ce fellow brother, today our Sect Head had since made the decision to interrogate this person in front of all of you, so is to give all of you an explanation!"

ShangGuan Ce [Hehe] coldly laughed twice, sinisterly said, "Taoist Cang Song, on your this Qing Yun Sect disciple Zhang Xiao Fan's body, there are too many secretive things, other than having Evil Sect evil object, he even know TianYin Temple's True Way which was untaught to outsiders, and most likely he is also involved with our FenXiang Valley's supreme celestial weapon, Inferno Mirror." Speaking until here, he stopped for a while, his gaze turned towards Reverend DaoXuan, and said, "I first state it here, Inferno Mirror is our FenXiang's treasure, we must definitely find it back!"

Tian BuYi became more incensed as he listened, coldly laughed once and said, "ShangGuan fellow brother, since this treasure is so important, how can your FenXiang Valley not protect it well, anyhow threw it anywhere, and actually link it to my this disciple? So you are saying, those that were keeping watch over the treasure, I'm afraid are also useless then?"

ShangGuan Ce was infuriated, stood up immediately, Tian BuYi also did not back down, [Shua] and stood up too, the whole ambience suddenly changed to being tense and swords were ready to be drawn.

Reverend DaoXuan roared, "Tian Junior brother, what are you doing? Sit down!."

Tian BuYi glared at ShangGuan Ce, but in the end he did not dare to disobey his Sect Head in front of everyone and slowly sat down. Reverend DaoXuan turned to speak to ShangGuan Ce, “ShangGuan fellow brother, we will naturally give you an explanation, please be assured.”

ShangGuan Ce coldly laughed and also sat down.

Shui Yue who was beside, angrily said, “Qi er, you still don’t want to come back!”

Unexpectedly, as someone who had always followed her teacher’s words and extremely obedient, Lu XueQi, seemed a changed person today. She raised her head and spoke to Reverend DaoXuan, “Sect Head Teacher Uncle, no matter what wrong had Zhang Junior brother committed, I beg Sect Head Teacher Uncle to investigate thoroughly, but he is definitely not a spy infiltrated into our Qing Yun Sect!”

She looked at the person in front of her, her expression solemn, as if she did not have a single fear facing the whole world and decidedly said, “Disciple Lu XueQi, is willing to use her life as guarantee!”

Everyone was stunned!

Even Zhang Xiao Fan himself also slightly opened his mouth, stared in shock at this lady kneeling with him, that snow-white skin, icy frost face, suddenly, seemed to also have a faint warmth.

“Disciple Lin JingYu, is also willing to use his life to guarantee for Zhang Xiao

Fan!”

Almost at the same time when Lu XueQi finished her words, Lin JingYu could not bear it any longer, resolutely dashed out and kneeled at the great Hall, without looking at his teacher, Taoist Cang Song, who immediately turned into a color of a pig liver, as if ready to risk everything, loudly said, “Zhang Junior brother risked death for Qing Yun, is absolutely not a spy sent from outside, disciple grew up with him and knew better that there is no such thing, I request Sect head Teacher Uncle to think thrice!”

Reverend DaoXuan at this instant, his face couldn't get any more uglier, but as they received some kind of stimulation, there was a stir among the Qing Yun disciples, in a short moment, FengHui Valley disciple, Long Shou Valley disciple as well as big Bamboo Valley disciple, all at the same time ran out, kneeled down together and said loudly, “Disciple is also willing to use my life to guarantee for Zhang Xiao Fan!”

Everyone turned pale and looked over, the three people were Zeng ShuShu, QiHao and Tian LingEr, other than Tian BuYi couple, Long Shou Valley Head Taoist Cang Song and FengHui Valley Head Zeng ShuChang, all stood up at the same time, extremely shocked.

At that moment in the Great Hall, the situation was chaotic, Reverend DaoXuan was livid in his heart, thinking that don't tell me these disobedient disciples were all intending to rebel today? And happened that right now, many of the Good Faction fellow sects were all here, he could not throw a fit of anger. He, as this Qing Yun Sect Head, had really lost all of his face, immediately the anger rushed up to his chest, but with this sudden situation, what should he do?

Right at this moment, suddenly a light cough was heard from behind, it was his disciple, Su YiCai, who softly said, “Teacher, why don't you go back to take a

rest, and handle this later?”

Reverend DaoXuan immediately was enlightened, heavily [Heng] a sound, [Pong] and hit the table, instantly the chaotic Qing Yun disciples quieten down, and turned to look at him.

Reverend DaoXuan, without speaking a word, strided towards the inside of the Hall. Everyone looked at each other, only Su YiCai smiled and stood up, spoke to the crowd, “En, there was an urgent matter from the back of the Hill and needed my respected teacher to attend to. Would the various honorables please wait a moment.”

ShangGuan Ce’s face was full of mockery, said, “Su nephew, I already heard before that your Qing Yun Sect have many rules, now that I see it, it is in fact extraordinary!”

A flash of anger appeared in Su YiCai’s eyes, but he immediately smiled and said, “Senior is joking.” After speaking, he turned and softly coughed, and walked to Taoist Cang Song Taoist and the rest of the branches Head seats, softly said, “Various Teacher Uncles, why have you still not called them back?”

Zeng ShuCang and the rest then reacted and immediately called back their disciples, admonished them after pulling them aside. Tian LingEr was pulled back by SuRu, but was not scolded. Instead, she was full of grievances, tears swelling in her eyes, calling, “Mother...”

SuRu gave a long long sigh, shook her head, indicating not to speak. Tian LingEr looked towards Tian BuYi, but Tian BuYi’s face was ashen, his brows tightly knitted, did not speak a single word and sat disgruntled on the chair.

Lu XueQi was forcibly pulled out of Crystal Hall by WenMin Senior sister, the surrounding people stares were full of curiosity, until they walked to a deserted corner, WenMin complained in a low voice, Lu XueQi instead bent her head and did not speak.

After a while, Master Shui Yue unhurriedly walked over.

WenMin, after all, loved and protected her junior sister, went to meet her teacher, softly spoke to Shui Yue and tried her best to explain, but Shui Yue's face was imposing, and walked straight to Lu XueQi.

Lu XueQi did not dare to look at her, bent her head low and softly called out, "Teacher."

Shui Yue stared at her, this was her most proudest and most beautiful disciple, after a long while without saying anything, she suddenly sighed, the sound carried a sense of helplessness and an indistinct miserableness and sadness.

Both WenMin and Lu XueQi were shocked at the same time.

Shui Yue shifted her gaze from Lu XueQi, walked to the railings outside Crystal Hall. The heights of the peaks reached up into the sky, white clouds floating, the celestial air was awe-inspiring.

"Qi er, you did something wrong today, you know?"

Lu XueQi lowered her head and softly said, "Yes, Teacher. I made it difficult for you, it's all disciple's fault. But that Zhang Xiao Fan, he definitely will not

be...:"

Shui Yue suddenly turned her head and stared at her, "Why will you use your life to gurantee for him?"

Lu XueQi immediately turned pale, unable to speak a word.

Shui Yue looked at her for a long while, shook her head and sighed softly, "Injustice sin!"

Lu XueQi spoke in a low voice, "Teacher, I, I am not..."

Shui Yue suddenly cut her off, "Do you know when I said you made a mistake, it was not because you embarrassed me?"

Lu XueQi and WenMin were both shocked, WenMin astonishingly said, "Teacher, what are you saying?"

Shui Yue gave a bitter laugh, her gaze once again looked away, it seemed she again slipped into a far away memory, "You these young people, do not know the limits of the Heaven and Earth, showing off only a moment of courage, but instead it will only push that Zhang Xiao Fan onto the death path!"

Lu XueQi's face immediately lost color and cried out, "Teacher?"

Shui Yue's voice gradually became solemn, as if again saw the past affairs buried deep in her memory, "It had been so many years, in a flash it is almost a hundred years over! There was once someone like him, made a big mistake, but

we, we disregarded everything to plead for him, but in the end, still...”

She slowly turned her head around, looked into both Lu XueQi and WenMin’s eyes, softly said, “That person’s situation at that time, although was not the same as Zhang Xiao Fan today, but the circumstances were extremely similar. But that person, was your Sect Head Teacher Uncle’s most hated person!”

Shui Yue said with a deep, and even carried a trace of pain, voice. It was the first time in her life, in front of the disciples, she displayed her hurt feelings.

Chapter 79: Screen Wall

Screen Wall [Translator's note: It is or may not, part of an idiom, which means Trouble from within]

In the hall, Reverend DaoXuan had not returned, but among the crowd, whisperings could be heard faintly.

When Shui Yue Master and disciples, the three of them, walked back in again, they saw that the crowd had separated into two groups at the sides, and Zhang Xiao Fan was still kneeling alone on the floor. Lu XueQi seemed to hesitate for a moment, but after Shui Yue swept her stern glare over to her, she silently walked where Shui Yue was and stood behind her.

After a short while, Reverend DaoXuan unhurriedly walked in from the back quarters, and went to his seat. The hall immediately quietened down.

Reverend DaoXuan did not immediately speak to Zhang XiaoFan, and instead with an apologetic expression, spoke to PuHong Holy Monk who was beside, "PuHong Senior brother, my disciple under my sect was disrespectful, making an embarrassment in front of Senior brother."

PuHong smiled slightly, pressed his palms together and said, “DaoXuan Senior brother what words are these!”

At this moment, Taoist Cang Song walked over, he was holding Zhang Xiao Fan’s that firestick in his hand, placed it at the tea table beside Reverend DaoXuan, DaoXuan frowned slightly, looked at him, his eyes seemed to carry a slight suspicion.

Taoist Cang Song spoke lowly, “Senior brother, just now when you were away, the situation was a bit chaotic, this object is of a big importance, just in case, I kept it away, and am now putting it back here.”

DaoXuan nodded and said, “Junior brother is considerate.”

After which Taoist Cang Song retreated back. Reverend DaoXuan’s attention, again returned back to Zhang XiaoFan. The crowd at once became nervous, knowing that whatever was coming, might be deciding this youth’s destiny.

“Zhang Xiao Fan, I ask you for the last time, do you have anything to say?”

Beads of perspiration appeared on Zhang Xiao Fan’s forehead, the situation in front of him had already reached the climax. Just that he had been in Qing Yun for many years, and knew well the taboo of spying on other sects’ secret way of passing their true way in the Good Faction, if he really said the truth out, he did not know what would be his outcome. But PuZhi Monk, who had passed on for many years, he was afraid not only his reputation would be damaged, even his holy bones burial site, might have to be move out from TianYin Temple’s “Pure Land Rebirth Tower”.

And furthermore, PuChi Monk was one of the Four Great Holy Monks of TianYin Temple, whether or not the crowd would believe him, is even more of a problem?

There he was battling with himself, for a moment he thought of PuChi's voice and face, the next moment he thought of his sect's deep grace and kindness, but to ask him to betray PuChi, it was like forcing him to die, in that short moment, it was clear that he was unable to come to a conclusion.

But, all of the people in the great hall, would not be giving him any more time.

DaoXuan saw that Zhang Xiao Fan's expression showed conflicts after listening to his words. Although sweat appeared on his forehead but he still in the end, did not speak a single word. And thinking back on how his disciples had pleaded for him just now, in the depths of his heart, suddenly an unknown fire which had been asleep for many years, raged and burned up.

It was like a hundred years ago, that white figure, was also kneeling like this in Crystal Hall, in front of the three Qing Buddha statues, in front of all the various teachers and elders, even when everyone in the same sect pleaded bitterly for him, still that arrogant, that considered himself unexcelled in the world, disdainfully looking at the world.

Sitting at the rear, Shui Yue, looking at Reverend DaoXuan's expression from afar, her body trembled, a trace of sadness flashed over in her eyes, she slowly lowered her head.

[Pong!]

A loud sound, everyone was shocked!

Reverend DaoXuan seemed to have lost his patience, abruptly stood up, pointed his finger at Zhang Xiao Fan and bellowed, “Evil creature! Years ago I took pity on you because of your circumstances then and took you into Qing Yun Sect. Unexpectedly it seems like I had nurtured a tiger to invite calamity!”

Zhang Xiao Fan’s body trembled, he raised his head and opened his mouth, as if he wanted to say something.

But Reverend DaoXuan’s face was as cold as ice, he frostily said, “If today we do not destroy you this evil creature, how can my Qing Yun Sect give an explanation to all of the Good Faction? All right, let me grant you this...”

The crowd paled, Tian BuYi abruptly stood up, those in the crowd, Lu XueQi, Tian LingEr, Lin JingYu etc had all turned deathly pale, even TianYin Temple PuHong Holy Monk, who was sitting beside, also seemed like he could not bear to, spoke quietly to DaoXuan, “DaoXuan Senior brother, maybe this should be considered again...”

DaoXuan [heng] a sound, coldly replied, “This evil creature had Evil Faction evil object, and also violated our Good Faction big taboo, his sins are too grave, “ while speaking, he picked up the firestick on top of the tea table, “Today I will let you die under your Evil Faction evil object...”

In Zhang Xiao Fan’s head, a sound of [Weng] was heard, his mind was like a blank sheet of paper, all colors seemed to disappeared in front of his eyes, he only vacantly saw DaoXuan raised his arm, Teacher Tian BuYi’s face was ashen, and looked like he was about to say something, and the Qing Yun disciples around them, were in a complete mess.

In the great hall, it seemed like someone's blood would soon flow for 5 steps [Translator's note: an idiom meaning blood will be spilled].

"Ya!"

Suddenly, a loud shout, startled the whole hall, not one in the crowd did not turn pale. In the confusion, it turned out to be that DaoXuan's body was shaking violently, he hollered, threw out the firestick, like his hand had been scalded.

That firestick streak across the air like a shadow, dropped on to the floor, [Dang dang dang] rebounded a few times, and actually rolled till in front of Zhang Xiao Fan.

Also at this moment, everyone saw that on top of the firestick, a shadow flew up, and in a short while, paused in the mid air, making [Zhi zhi] sounds.

That was, as big as a palm, a strange centipede, magnificent coloured, with seven splits in its tail. Right now it vibrated and flew up, shaking its head and wagging its tail, looking extremely arrogant.

Zhang Xiao Fan was confounded, his whole body seemed to suddenly tremble slightly, his gaze was transfixed on to that strange animal in the mid air, that thing deeply branded into his memory: "Seven tailed centipede!"

In that instant, time seemed to flow back on a surge of raging current, brought him back to many years ago that black night, that PuChi and mysterious black-attired man's duel, and at the same time losing everything he had in that sanguinary night!

His whole body shook, the smell of blood, wafted out from the depths of his heart, boundless, and encircled him all around. He stretched out his hand, and grabbed the firestick tightly in his hand in one go!

But at this moment, nobody noticed Zhang Xiao Fan's strange look at all, everyone's attention and gazes, were all on Reverend DaoXuan.

Qing Yun Sect various senior leaders, their knowledge and experience, were incomparable to ordinary people. In a flash, they surrounded Reverend DaoXuan, especially distancing themselves away from that seven tailed centipede. Until then, when everyone looked over to see Reverend DaoXuan, all had without exception, turned pale.

Reverend DaoXuan's right hand was shaking, there was a wound in his middle finger, obviously wounded by that seven tailed centipede, and in that short time, the blood that was dripping out was already black. And even more alarming, from the wound in the finger, a ghastly black air, could be seen rapidly attacking up.

Seven tailed centipede was known as the world's most poisonous poison, and even like Reverend DaoXuan, a master who had superior attainments, was too trapped by it.

Reverend DaoXuan in a short while, felt faint with blurred vision and his chest felt suffocated, but his attainments was high beyond imagination, far surpassing that PuChi Monk at that time, immediately he forced his state of mind to focus, his left hand pointing like a knife, tapped several places in succession on his already numbed left hand, drawing a talisman in the air and straight away suppressed that stream of black air from attacking up.

Right now Taoist Cang Song rushed up to him, supported his body tightly, once he saw Reverend DaoXuan's wound, turned and roared at Zhang Xiao Fan, "Zhang Xiao Fan, you this evil creature, you actually dared to stab Head Sect in the back!"

The crowd was appalled, Zhang Xiao Fan hoarsely said, "No, not me..."

Reverend DaoXuan, who was clustered around by the crowd, looked better at this moment, but that seven tailed centipede was so venomous, even on his face, black air could be seen indistinctly, weak but it did not disperse. But even so, he was still fully conscious, after breathing deeply, he said, "Quickly capture this evil creature, interrogate him thoroughly."

Taoist Cang Song turned his head and said, "Senior brother don't worry, with me here."

Reverend DaoXuan panted deeply but he was at least half relieved, nodded his head, turned to look at him and was saying, "Then...."

All of a sudden he stopped speaking, Taoist Cang Song's face in front of him, suddenly from an anxious appearance, turned into an extremely malevolent expression. Also almost at the same time, Reverend DaoXuan felt a coldness in his abdomen, instantly a severe pain followed, his body trembled violently, originally his entire body's vitality essence which was directed to suppress the venom, suddenly dispersed.

“Ah!”

Reverend DaoXuan howled loudly, his left hand cut straight down, Taoist Cang Song's left hand immediately went up to meet, both palms collided, Taoist Cang Song's body shook greatly and flew out, landed in front of Crystal Hall's entrance. After a short while, a trail of blood flowed down from the corner of his mouth, but all these while, he was still coldly smiling.

Above his right hand, horizontally holding a short sword, glittering crystal like water, one look and you would know it was not an ordinary item. And right now, on the sword, numerous blood trails, fresh red blood, from the tip of the sword, drip by drip slowly flowed down, dripping onto the green tiles in the great hall.

The crowd that was in chaos just, in an instant, quieten down, like a deathly silence.

Reverend DaoXuan's dark green Taoist robe abdomen area, had instantly already turned into a dark color, his entire face expression had also turned extremely pale, however, the shocked expression on his face now, far surpassed the pain in his body.

“You, what are you doing?” His hoarse voice, directed to Taoist Cang Song who was standing outside the great hall entrance, speaking out everyone's thoughts. Right now, even Long Shou Valley disciple, QiHao, Lin JingYu etc, also could not seemed to believe their own eyes, every one of them with jaws opened, looking at that person who once held the most authority on Qing Yun Hill.

“Me?” Taoist Cang Song seemed to change into another person suddenly,

laughed savagely loudly, “I am assassinating you! Don’t tell me you can’t tell?” Speaking which, he signaled using his hands, the seven tailed centipede which was in mid air, immediately flew towards him, and vanished into his arm sleeve.

QiHao could not bear it any longer, his voice contained confusion and and fright, loudly said, “Teacher, you, are you mad?”

Taoist Cang Song took a look at him, after which his gaze also fell upon Lin JingYu who had the same expression, and also many more Long Shou Valley disciples, even the other Qing Yun Sect branches disciples, all used the same expression of looking at a mad man and disbelief to look at him.

“Ha ha ha, mad? Yes! I have become mad a long time ago!” Taoist Cang Song looked up at the sky and laughed loudly, his behaviour also seemed to carry a bit of madness, “As early as one hundred years ago, also at this Crystal Hall, when I saw Wan Jian Yi, Wan Senior brother’s fate, I have already turned mad!”

“Teacher!” Long Shou Valley QiHao and Lin JingYu’s voices by now were already tearful, but behind them, Qing Yun Sect various elder leaders surrounding Reverend DaoXuan, their bodies instead suddenly stiffen!

Wan Jian Yi, as if this name carried nightmare, carrying a thick shadow, pressing onto Qing Yun Sect’s atmosphere.

The corner of Reverend DaoXuan’s eye twitched, in these hundred years, the name that nobody dared to mention in front of him, it seemed to agitate him strongly too. Xiao YiCai supported his body, but out of a sudden felt that Reverend DaoXuan’s injured body suddenly shook violently, even through that layer of clothes, he could felt that, the flame that burned suddenly in his reverend teacher’s body, was actually this scorching!

Taoist Cang Song stood there with a madman demeanour, it was as if the resentment that was buried over all these years was finally released, in this short period of time, no one actually stepped forward to catch this assailant who had injured Qing Yun Sect most revered Sect Head.

He pointed at Reverend DaoXuan, and also pointed behind the crowd, that three Qing Buddha statues in the shadows, loudly said, “You, You all, “ he pointed towards Tian BuYi, ShuiYue, Zeng ShuChang, Shang ZhengLiang etc Qing Yun branch heads, “All of you upon your own consciences say, this sect head position, who should be the one sitting on it? Was it Wan Senior brother, or him?”

Nobody answered, the younger disciples were lost on what to do, but Tian BuYi etc were all ashen, saying nothing.

In the great hall, only Taoist Cang Song’s mad-like voice reverberated, “Why, you all are not speaking? Is it because you have a guilty conscience? Ha ha ha, yes! Yes! In fact who do not know exactly what should be done? But right now, who is the one sitting at this position?”

ShuiYue’s face was pale, looked at Cang Song who had become a totally different person from his usual self, unhurriedly said, “Cang Song Senior brother, the things had already been over for a hundred over years, why do you still persist on it like this?”

“Pei!” Taoist Cang Song right now totally disregarded his own status, viciously [pei] out a sound, a look of disdain on his face, sneered and replied, “Hundred over years? Yes! I have bear it for a hundred over years, until today then I had the opportunity to uphold the injustice for Wan Senior brother. That time in

Qing Yun Sect, the barbarian ways, you, you, you!”

His finger pointed one by one, even pointed Tian BuYi, Zeng ShuChang, Shang ZhengLiang, sneered and said, “For these hundred years, all of you must have been comfortable sitting on the branch head position, do you still remember that time Wan Senior brother disregard everything to save our lives? Do you still remember who had selflessly shared with us on how to practice the heart of Tao in those times, allowing us to greatly improve in our Tao attainment? And also you!”

He suddenly pointed at ShuiYue, coldly said, “Just now you actually said I am persistent? Hehe, hehe, who did not know at that time you had unrequited love for Wan Senior brother secretly, and later on he saved you loved you, didn’t expect that day you actually watched him die, and instead today you still ridicule me!”

ShuiYue’s face turned all white!

“And also you, Tian BuYi!” as if he was trying to vent all of his anger in his heart, Taoist Cang Song cackled and pointed at Tian BuYi, loudly said, “You say it yourself, how Wan Senior brother treated you, and how did you repay him?”

Tian BuYi’s face was ashen, both hands tightly balled up into fists, his wife SuRu, who was standing beside, her face was equally pale, but the two of them, never spoke a single word, allowing Taoist Cang Song to cackle loudly and accuse him.

“You at that time was just an ordinary wooden disciple under Big Bamboo Valley, even your teacher and senior brothers also looked down on you. But after Wan Senior brother met you, he had the foresight to notice that you had

great potentials, devoted his attention to groom you, he not only told you his own methods of attainment, even did his utmost to recommend you into the Wildlands five-member journey, only from then on you were able to make it to Qing Yun's influential figures, only then you are able to sit on this position today. What I have said, is it right?"

Tian BuYi breathed deeply, his expression mingled with a few degrees of agony, after a long while he unhurriedly said, "I have a great debt of gratitude towards Wan Senior brother, even if my body is smashed to pieces and my bones are grounded to powder, I still am unable to repay!"

Once those words were out, not only Big Bamboo Valley disciples, even the other branches including Tian Yin Temple, FenXiang Valley people, who were all alarmed at the internal commotion in Qing Yun, their expressions also changed. Obviously even Tian BuYi acknowledged like this, it could be seen that the Wan Senior brother mentioned by Taoist Cang Song, indeed had much secrets.

Taoist Cang Song [Hehe] sneered, said, "Good, good, good, you finally also admitted, luckily you still have a bit of conscience, and how did you repay him, say it!"

Tian BuYi slowly lowered his head, clenched his teeth, even his body seemed to be trembling slightly.

Taoist Cang Song cackled and said, "Alright, you don't want to say it, I say it for you. You this shameless person, to think Wan Senior brother valued you this much, that day after returning to Qing Yun Hill, you obviously knew Wan Senior brother liked Little Bamboo Valley SuRu, Su Junior sister, instead you stole his love away, was there such a thing?"

Tian BuYi abruptly raised his head, but once he met Taoist Cang Song 's almost crazy stare, that scorching flame also seemed to burn, but without knowing why, somewhere he felt that, there seemed to be a white figure standing behind Taoist Cang Song, suddenly he was unable to speak and slowly lowered his head down again.

He never spoke, SuRu who was beside him suddenly stepped out, loudly said, "Cang Song Senior brother, if you have grievances, direct it to me! That time Wan Senior brother was indeed interested in me, but from the beginning till the end, I only had respect and admiration for him. His great kindness to us both husband and wife, was as weighty as a mountain, but to be together with BuYi, was my own intention, it cannot be said as snatching me away. And also at that time, Wan Senior brother, in front of us, had personally wished us both happiness."

Taoist Cang Song scoffed and said, "Wan Senior brother's character was an extremely proud one, after being betrayed by the two of you, how could he be like the common people, continued to pester around you? He had always rather he was the one hurt, and not let others see."

Speaking till here, he seemed unwilling to continue, he looked towards the hurt and panting Reverend DaoXuan, his eyes full of ceaseless hatred, said, "Wan Senior brother was like a brother, a father to me, single handedly cultivated me, even in the Wildlands he disregarded his live to save me, my life, had long given up to him! I only regretted that hundred years ago, even after I tried my best, I was still unable to save him, from then onwards, I tell myself, no matter what, I must seek revenge for him!"

His words, until the last few sentences, he shouted himself hoarse, as if to his own heart, and as if also to that pair of eyes in the underworld.

Su YiCai paled, but even more to his surprise, was the body that he was supporting, suddenly pushed him away.

Qing Yun Head Sect Reverend, supreme leader of the world's Good Faction for a hundred years, Reverend DaoXuan's wound was still bleeding and that black air seemed to thicken, by his own strength suddenly, he walked out slowly, step by step.

His grandeur, in a split second overwhelmed everyone, that dark green robe swirled and flew without the wind presence, both of his hands could be seen indistinctly, deeply clenched into fists, even the nails were embedded into his flesh.

He looked at the party in front of him, straightened his body, facing Taoist Cang Song, and even more as if he was facing that invisible white figure, spoke loudly and smiled, "Good good good, didn't expect that the court case at that time, actually made you this perturbed. You can come over and try, see if I, this senior brother, whether I am indeed fit to be this Sect Head!"

He looked over at Cang Song from the side of his eye, suddenly both hands unclenched and his palm stretched out, from his right hand's wound, drops of black blood squirted and flowed out and the black air on his face, also gradually weakened. Just that he looked even more pale but his voice instead became piercing, with a look of disdain, "You think you are fit to?"

Taoist Cang Song suddenly gave a big laugh, said, "Yes, you are great, during those times in Qing Yun Sect, it had always been Wan Senior brother and you being the two peerless twins, I am not your match but someone will take care of you."

Reverend DaoXuan's expression was solemn, coldly asked, "Who is it?"

In the great hall, the crowd held their breath, Qing Yun Sect disciples looked at each other, and looking at the internal conflict from the sidelines, Tian Yin Temple, FenXiang Valley people etc, all looked awkward too.

Taoist Cang Song did not cease laughing, and at this moment, suddenly from a distant place outside Crystal Hall, a deep voice was heard, "DaoXuan old friend, a hundred years not seen, your demeanour is still the same as the past, congratulations!"

The voice was like thunder, rumbling over, in a short while, killing shouts were heard everywhere outside of TongTian Peak, chaos ensued in front of the mountain, in the midst of the commotion, someone actually shouted loudly from afar, "Sorcerers from Evil Faction are attacking up the mountain!"

"What?"

Qing Yun Sect members, all without exception, turned pale, Reverend DaoXuan instead sucked in a breath of cool air, pointing at Taoist Cang Song, almost could not believe himself and said, "You, you actually dare to betray your sect, collude with Evil Faction!"

Taoist Cang Song cackled and said, "That's right, I colluded with the Evil Faction, so what! From what I see, Qing Yun Sect hide dirt and conceal corruption, not even comparable to Evil Faction! For the sake of seeking revenge for Wan Senior brother, even if I have to go to hell I also do not care, what's more colluding with Evil Faction?"

SuRu's face was white, softly said, "Madness, madness, he is really mad!"

Tian BuYi heard it, his face was grim, he knew that for the past few years, Taoist Cang Song's power and authority was extremely powerful in Qing Yun, even the daily defence matters were also handled by him. And today Evil Faction attacked in force, it was until they almost reached Crystal Hall then they were discovered, the situation was really extremely bad.

He, in a blink of an eye, in the commotion instead, saw that his junior disciple Zhang Xiao Fan holding his firestick, still standing there. Taking advantage that nobody was paying attention, he pulled him to stand behind himself, but he noticed immediately, that there was something wrong with his own junior disciple.

Zhang Xiao Fan both eyes were faintly reddish and staring unwavering at Taoist Cang Song's figure, his mouth seemed to be mumbling something, "It's him, it's him, it must be him..."

Chapter 80: Scheme within scheme

“Who is there?”

At the same time, loud shouts from Qing Yun disciples outside Crystal Hall’s entrance were heard but after that, only a few sounds of [Shua] were heard. It seemed like someone highly skilled had flew in and soon after [Peng peng] sounds were heard, several Qing Yun disciples fell and tumbled in.

Outside the door, four shadows materialized in a flash, it was the Evil Faction’s four great sect leaders.

Yu YangZi and God of Poison stood in the middle, Ghost King and SanMiao Fairy flanked the both of them, the four of them took a look into this great hall and unhurriedly walked in.

The oldest, God of Poison, using his mouth, made sounds of [Ze ze], smiled and said, “Old friend DaoXuan, hundred of years not seen, are you still well?”

Reverend DaoXuan’s body trembled, his nostrils shrank, and coldly said, “God of Poison!”

God of Poison gave a big laugh and said, "It is me this old fool. A hundred years ago I was defeated under your sword at the foot of Qing Yun Mountain, today again I see that your elegant demeanour is the same as before, it is a relief that I did not win!"

Reverend DaoXuan's gaze looked over each of the four person, at the same time, several Evil Faction men walked in successively from the Crystal Hall's entrance. Looking at those men's bearing and stance, not one of them would be easy to deal with. Most likely the core of Evil Faction's strength over these hundred years were all here. Among those that the crowd had seen, Ghost King Sect's Qing Long, YouJi, Wan Du Clan's Bai DuZhi etc were all there, and for the rest, very likely they were also the four great branches highly skilled men.

And at somewhere far, cries of battle were getting louder, howls of desperations were also heard from time to time. The used-to-be paradise-like on earth Qing Yun Mountain, right now were being enveloped by the smell of blood, as if it was in hell.

Reverend DaoXuan took a deep breath, with much difficulty he managed to calm his state of mind. Today the trouble started from within, furthermore the external enemy came right into it, one would know without asking, that this was the most dangerous moment for the past hundred years in Qing Yun Sect. And as the Qing Yun thousand-years-old great sect's reverend Head, he definitely would not allow this inheritance to be destroyed at his own hands.

At that moment, one of the Buddha's name was suddenly heard, without knowing when, PuHong Master had came to stand beside Reverend DaoXuan, with a light smile in his face, he said, "DaoXuan Senior brother, since ancient times evil never triumphed over the virtuous, my Tian Yin Temple this vein, has always fought with Qing Yun Sect against the evil spirits and evil ways, if there is

any assignment, please feel free to instruct.”

DaoXuan was delighted, also at the same time, those people from FenXiang Valley, with ShangGuan elder as their representative, stepped out and stood behind Reverend DaoXuan and PuHong Master.

The four great leaders from Evil Faction countenance slightly changed, God of Poison looked at PuHong, in a deep voice asked, “Which Tian Yin Temple’s Holy Monk is this Master?”

PuHong smiled slightly and said, “This venerable patron is really forgetful, hundred years ago at Good and Evil Faction big battle, we too had the fate to face each other before, how can you instead forgot about this old monk, this old monk is Tian Yin Temple PuHong, beside me is my junior brother, PuKong.”

Tian Yin Temple Four Great Holy Monks were famous beyond words, with the two of them, it amounted to several high skilled fighters from Qing Yun Sect, what’s even more with FenXiang Valley highly skilled fighters beside?

God of Poison turned his head over, knitted his brow at the pale-faced Taoist Cang Song, said, “How did these people came to be here?”

Taoist Cang Song replied fiercely, “These bald donkeys and FenXiang Valley fellows all came suddenly to Qing Yun Mountain this morning, there was no advance notice, I was caught unaware and so was unable to notify.”

PuHong met the glances of FenXiang Valley ShangGuan elder, and both laughed out aloud, FenXiang Valley ShangGuan Ce gave a big laugh and said, “This is what they say evil will not triumph over the virtuous, Heaven’s net has

wide meshes, today definitely will let you these presumptuous evil demons, the whole lot of you to be executed on this Qing Yun Mountain!”

“Heihei” a cold sneer, standing beside God of Poison, the one whom was recommended by the majority of the Evil Sect to be the leader of this exercise, Yu YangZi, with an arrogant expression, sneered and said, “Hundred years ago, my Holy Sect seniors too used only our own sect’s strength and fought against your three big sects, how can it be that today we will fear all of you!”

“Well said!” sounds of cheers immediately shouted, mostly came from the group of people standing behind the four great leaders, even Ghost King who was standing beside, also clapped and laughed.

“Today will let all of you see, whether we are the ones to be executed or is that you are the ones to suffer death!”

This sentence, he said it with absolute savageness, looking disdainfully at everyone, not one of the Good Faction people did not change countenance, their expressions revealing abhorrence, especially the last word, “death”, Ghost King specifically emphasized on it, with the intention of sarcasm.

Reverend DaoXuan coldly laughed, was about to say something, but Evil Faction’s Yu YangZi seemed to be the most impatient, waved his hand and at once, different colored streams of light floated out of all of the Evil Faction’s highly skilled fighters’ hands, obviously they were going to fight immediately.

In Good Faction, Qing Yun, Tian Yin Temple members immediately focused their defence, knowing that in front of them would be the most deathly Evil and Good Faction big battle for the past hundred year, PuHong chanted in a low voice, “Amitabha Buddha, Sadhu, Sad...”

Unexpectedly he had not finished his words, something unexpected happened, when everyone's attention was on the Evil Faction in front of them, suddenly several streams of light floated out at the same time, in them there were even two with sharp beams, hitting directly onto PuHong's defenceless back!

[Boom]

In that instant, Good Faction was like a pot that had exploded, it was a complete mess, shrill cries and howls immediately cried out at the same time. PuHong Master saw darkness in front of him, he felt two great energy forcibly pounded onto his back, an immeasurable force smashed in, another instead turned into a sharp slim needle, stabbed straight through.

PuHong Master staggered, [Pu] spurted out a spray of blood. What kind of figure is he [Translator's note: a rhetorical statement] , at once he knew that there were still traitors among the Good Faction, his entire divine "Great Brahman Wisdom True Way", without hesitation travelled around his whole body, forcibly stopped that enormous assault, at the same time without turning his head, flung one of his sleeves backwards.

[Peng Peng] two muffled sounds were heard, two cries of surprise sounded from the people behind, obviously they suffered some harm, that great energy suddenly dispersed, but the other like-poisonous needle stream of energy, instead turned into something with form, eventually pierced through that unable-to-defend-in-time Great Brahman Wisdom body shield, and drilled into his body.

Within a short while, Qing Yun Tian BuYi and the rest already rushed over, one

after another they attacked but once the assailants attacked, they immediately flew up and over to Evil Faction group of people.

Taking the lead, surprisingly was FenXiang Valley ShangGuan Ce, and the others that were assailing the rest, were all FenXiang Valley people.

In the Good Faction, including PuHong who was assailed, PuKong and the rest of the Tian Yin Temple members, were all dumbfounded. Reverend DaoXuan, after a long while, then tried to calm down his mind, pointing at ShangGuan Ce and said, “You, what are you doing? Don’t tell me FenXiang Valley have also sought refuge with Evil Faction?”

ShangGuan Ce stood beside Evil Faction four great leaders and Taoist Cang Song, his gaze met with theirs at the same time, suddenly [Haha] laughed out loud, their demeanor extremely savaged, filled with complacency.

Ghost King laughed heartily and spoke to Reverend DaoXuan, “Who said they were FenXiang Valley people...”

Reverend DaoXuan was about to speak, suddenly lost his voice, slowly turned his head and stared at Taoist Cang Song, his face paled, “Good, good, you did well, it was indeed crossing the sea by a trick!” [Translator’s note: An idiom which means using deception to achieve one’s aim]

Taoist Cang Song [Hehe] a cold sneer, looking extremely pleased with himself, laughed and said, “This is all thanks to Ghost King Sect Head who is wise and full of stratagems, once he heard that today Tian Yin Temple bald donkeys suddenly came without invitation, and would ruin my big plans, he immediately thought of sending highly skilled fighters to disguise as FenXiang Valley disciples, picked a few that do not usually roam on earth and leave it to me to present them,

Hehe, it was indeed success at one go!”

Reverend DaoXuan’s body swayed, glanced over, this sneak attack by Evil Faction, most of their targets were concentrated on Tian Yin Temple monks, nine out of ten were badly injured. Especially their Head, PuHong Master, his face as white as sheet, as of now, he could no longer stand. Under his disciple, FaXiang’s assistance, he slowly sat down, his back was badly mangled. As for the others, they themselves were no better, even within Qing Yun, five or six elders were also hurt.

Reverend DaoXuan’s inside seethed and churned, his heart also gradually sank down, smiled bitterly and said, “Excellent, excellent, to think I have lived in vain for these many years, I actually did not think that FenXiang Valley ShangGuan Ce fellow brother has always been guarding ‘Inferno Altar’ and never stepped out of FenXiang Valley, and actually did not suspect you!”

Ghost King looked at him, smiled and shook his head, said, “You didn’t not think of this, I guess you didn’t expect that your Taoist Cang Song junior brother betrayed you?”

Another bitter laugh from Reverend DaoXuan.

Crystal Hall, sank into silence. The Good Faction members looked at each other, at this moment, whoever could also see that Evil Faction had already gained a huge advantage. Although there were still not a few senior experts over at Qing Yun side, but there were even more at Evil Faction side. Among the Tian Yin Temple monks, looking over right now, those that could fight were estimated to be less than half, and only PuKong and FaXiang escaped being hurt because of their vigilance.

Especially PuKong, it seemed like he had changed into a totally different person right now. He held a golden alms bowl in his palm, emanating golden rays of lights everywhere, looking much like a fiend. In front of him, a bloody mess of flesh. One of the Evil Faction highly skilled fighter had tried to secretly attack him but was unsuccessful and instead was smashed into pulp by PuKong magical weapon 'Buddha Golden Alms'.

But the most important thing was, the two masters who had been known as the world's Good Faction Mount Tai and North Star - Reverend DaoXuan and PuHong Master, were seriously injured at the same time, looking at them right now, PuHong Master was as white as sheet, although Reverend DaoXuan was slightly better but no matter how one tried to see, it seemed like an arrow at the end of its flight.

Is it that the world's Good Faction, really coming to its fated end?

This question, equivalent to the heaviest stone, weighed heavily on the Good Faction minds.

On the contrary, not one of the Evil Faction was not jubilant, for hundred over years Evil Faction had been chased off from Central Plains and stranded in Wildlands, today they could let out all of their resentment in one shot, how not to be high-spirited?

Yu YangZi felt that this time round that he took charge, Holy sect was able to deal with the incomparable formidable Good Faction two massive schools in one fell swoop, in his future days within the Holy sect, his status would definitely be placed above the rest, maybe from today onwards, he would be able to bring up Chang Shen Hall to what eight hundred years ago Elder Blackheart's Blood Forger Hall scale.

Once he thought of this, Yu YangZi became more conceited, smiling arrogantly and speaking to Reverend DaoXuan, “Dao Xuan old thief, quickly hand over your sect’s treasure ‘Zhu Xian Ancient Sword’ and submit to our Holy Sect, I will spare all of your lives! Hahaha...”

Several highly skilled fighters standing behind him laughed together with him, it seemed like those hundred years of grievances, could only be released off today!

And at a distance away, the never-ending cries of Qing Yun disciples from fighting at close combat on TongTian Peak, seemed to cast a tragic foreshadow on the destiny that Qing Yun Sect would face today.

On Reverend DaoXuan’s face, a unswerving determination appeared on his pale expression, scoffing at Yu YangZi, he coldly replied, “Even if today my Qing Yun Sect is ruined by all of you, don’t expect us to bend our knees and submit.”

After which, he retreated a few steps and returned to the Qing Yun Sect group. Tian BuYi, Shang ZhengLiang and the rest of the branches leaders at the same time surrounded him. His favourite disciple, Su YiCai, supported his body, spoke in an urgent low voice, “Teacher, your body...”

Reverend DaoXuan snorted, impatiently said, “Right now disaster is as close as to the eye, Tian Junior brother, Zeng Junior brother, TianYun Junior brother, all of you to defend here for a while, ShuiYue Junior sister, you to lead a few of the 2nd generation disciples and take Tian Yin Temple fellow friends away first, they were injured because of us, we cannot let them suffer further injuries.”

The ones who were instructed immediately acknowledged, Tian BuYi said, "Sect Head Senior brother, leave here to us, you are severely injured, quickly go, as long as the green hills last, another day again..."

He suddenly stopped and did not continue, but everyone knew the meaning of his words, Zeng ShuChang and the other leaders nodded their heads at the same time, but Reverend DaoXuan gave a miserable laugh, said, "Our ancestor's work, don't tell me you all actually asked me to give it up and disregard it? I, DaoXuan, rather die than be a sinner forever!"

Tian BuYi and the rest kept quiet, DaoXuan took a look at the already restless Evil Faction people, and suddenly seemed to make up his mind on something, spoke lowly, "Since things have already reached to this stage, I have to violate our founders' commandment, and use that as the final kill!"

The others, including most of the elders, were all stunned.

DaoXuan took a deep breath, said, "There is not much time, I will go and invite Zhu Xian Ancient Sword, all of you..." he looked around then urgently said, "Regardless of how you all think of me, but with things now, all of you need to be very careful!"

Tian BuYi and the rest were visibly moved, and was about to speak when suddenly wild laughs were heard, lights from magical weapons flashed, the Evil Faction group had finally started.

In an instant, the Crystal Hall which was originally solemn and dignified, magical weapons danced, strange lights swept everywhere, loud crashes and rumbles constantly erupted.

In the chaos, taking advantage of Qing Yun elders defending the wild attacks from Evil Faction skilled fighters, ShuiYue led the young disciples and brought the various Masters from Tian Yin Temple who were injured, into the back halls, Reverend DaoXuan too, walked to the back but his footsteps showed that he was staggering.

Tian BuYi saw that while he was battling, and felt anxious. Sweeping his gaze, he used his scarlet ablazed celestial sword to force the Evil Faction enemy in front of him to retreat, in a flash appeared beside the pale-faced QiHao, Lin JingYu, whom were fighting together with the other elders, and urgently said, "We don't need you here, go and escort Sect Head Reverend now!"

QiHao, Lin JingYu's bodies shook, but looking at Tian BuYi's stern expression, they did not dare to disobey. Also, with the sudden betrayal of Long Shou Valley Head, Taoist Cang Song, to the Long Shou Valley disciples, it was a bolt from the blue, they had already lost their directions, right now they quickly acknowledged and followed after Reverend DaoXuan.

Looking at their back figures, SuRu who was battling at the side, frowned. After a while, she too found an opportunity to break away and sneaked up to Song Daren and Tian LingEr, quietly said, "Your Taoist Cang Song Teacher Uncle suddenly betrayed us, we do not know if the disciples under him can be trusted, you too should go after your Sect Head Reverend!"

Song Daren and Tian LingEr were shocked, but after which they understood and immediately followed. SuRu was about to turn back when suddenly out of the corner of her eye, in this heaven and earth turning upside down big battle, Zhang Xiao Fan, the little disciple whom were the center of everyone's attention a while ago, right now was standing alone and being ignored, strangely staring ahead of the Evil Faction, not moving at all.

She frowned, actually her thoughts were the same as Tian BuYi, never did she believe that this little disciple would be a spy from Evil Faction, and concerned that Zhang Xiao Fan's skill level was too low, immediately flashed over to his side and gently tapped on his shoulder.

Zhang Xiao Fan's body shook, turned his head around to look, SuRu's heart suddenly went cold, Zhang Xiao Fan's eyes were all bloodshot, although he still looked alert but without knowing why, a strange demonic aura was felt.

But as the situation was too urgent now, SuRu was unable to deliberate much, spoke, "Xiao Fan, here is too dangerous, you should too follow your big senior brother and LingEr senior sister."

Zhang Xiao Fan paused for a while, but under his Teacher wife's gaze, who had always loved and protected him since young, finally nodded his head and ran into the back halls.

SuRu felt relieved and following which, she dived into the battle, joining the increasingly fierce fight!

Within the loud rumbles, the sounds of various magical weapons clashing fiercely, Zhang Xiao Fan ran into the back hall, and caught up to Song Daren and Tian LingEr, and soon caught up to QiHao and Lin JingYu, the few of them surrounded Reverend DaoXuan, Reverend DaoXuan took a look at them and nodded his head slightly, but when his gaze fell upon Zhang Xiao Fan, his gaze subconsciously stopped and moved away.

Not knowing what Zhang Xiao Fan was feeling but the firestick that he was holding in his hand, green light was seen faintly rippling through, his head felt

dizzy from time to time, and waves of murderous energy like burst of fierce spirits, shot up into his head and he couldn't help but to think of the smell of blood.

Just that, right now, everyone had something weighing heavily on their minds, absolutely nobody noticed Zhang Xiao Fan's strange look. After a while, Lu XueQi and WenMin from Little Bamboo Valley also appeared in front of the group.

Lu XueQi took a glance at Zhang Xiao Fan, and spoke to Reverend DaoXuan, "It was Teacher who instructed WenMin Senior sister and me to come over!"

Reverend DaoXuan sighed and shook his head slightly, but without saying anything, continued to move forward.

Without waiting for them to go far, they could hear booms and rumble sounds as loud as thunder behind them, a few streams of light as thick as a pillar broke through Crystal Hall's roof and shot towards the sky, carrying a few cries, who would know who had lost their lives?

The group countenance changed, without asking, all of them knew right now how viciously had the fighting in Crystal Hall turned into and couldn't help but worry for their respective branches seniors. Reverend DaoXuan stared deeply towards that direction, his expression tight, suddenly flung his robe and walked on.

The young disciples followed behind him, looking at the figure of someone whom they had always revered like God, right now his posture was still as before, upright and tall, but on his dark green robe, that startling stain of fresh blood which had turned black, and even that sword thrust wound left behind by

Cang Song's assassination, were all clearly seen.

How could Reverend DaoXuan, after suffering these severe injuries, was still able to bear it?

The lot of them went past the hall, among the young disciples, none of them were the lead disciple, which meant none of them came here before. Following Reverend DaoXuan passed the hall and garden, slowly, the clamour noises from Crystal Hall started to disappear, after they had passed Crystal Hall back hall, they instead walked towards TongTian Peak rear hill.

Reverend DaoXuan took the lead, the rest of them followed closely behind, staying alert and observing the surroundings, although most of the Evil Faction members were all attacking the front of the hill, but who knows if there would be anyone led in by Taoist Cang Song to the rear of the hill.

Zhang Xiao Fan walked behind the group, both of his eyes were faintly red, no expression on his face but in the depth of his heart, it was instead like terrifying waves, shocked by Qing Yun Sect's calamity and at the same time, struggling with his past vengeance. In his memory, although he did not personally seen the killer who had massacred Grasstemple Village villagers, but whenever he recalled that scene, he would think of that vicious mysterious black-attired man.

And looking at it today, it was most likely Taoist Cang Song!

Although there were two orphans from Grasstemple Village, but only Zhang Xiao Fan had seen that black-attired man battling with PuZhi, and since he had confirmed it today, immediately the aged-long hatred surfaced, and that firestick in his hand, which was smelted with the world's two most lethal

weapons, Sinister Orb and Soul Absorbing stick, were triggered by his owner's hatred and at once, the deeply buried evil currents surfaced, and instead influenced Zhang Xiao Fan more.

If this happened on normal days, even without Reverend DaoXuan's skills, Tian BuYi would have long discovered something strange with Zhang Xiao Fan, but right now who would have the mind to care about him. Just that nobody knew, this little small disciple of Qing Yun, was actually in an extreme agitated state, the critical moment between the Heaven and man's war. If he was not careful, he would be tainted by the evil ruthless energy of Sinister Orb and Soul Absorbing stick, lost and beyond redemption!

As expected, the truth proved Tian BuYi, ShuiYue and the rest's concerns as valid. Although the small road at TongTian Peak rear hill was secluded, but within a short while of walking, several Evil Faction disciples suddenly rushed out from both sides, QiHao and the rest immediately went up to defend.

Revered DaoXuan only took a glance, disregarded the scene and walked straight ahead. The attack on Qing Yun, most indeed was Evil Faction's elites, even the ones hiding here, were not lowly skilled too, QiHao, Lu XueQi and the rest were unable to subdue them in a hurry.

Song Daren and the others continued to protect Reverend DaoXuan, leaving QiHao and Lu XueQi to handle the enemies, right now there was actually a question in everyone's mind — why did Reverend DaoXue not use flight, could it be that his injuries were so severe until to that degree?

Just that right now nobody dared to ask him. After a short while, a crash was hearded, several more Evil Faction disciples dashed out from both sides, Song Daren and WenMin, Tian LingEr blocked them, Zhang Xiao Fan and Lin JingYu also went forward.

Song Daren impatiently said, “Three of us is enough, quickly go protect Head Sect Reverend!”

Lin JingYu gritted his teeth, pulled Zhang Xiao Fan and ran forward, and caught up again with Reverend DaoXuan. This time round, surprisingly they did not encounter Evil Faction disciples, Reverend DaoXuan led them on a secluded small road in the rear hill for a distance, and stopped at a junction of three roads.

Lin JingYu and Zhang Xiao Fan also stopped, Zhang Xiao Fan did not speak a word while Lin JingYu raised his head and looked at Reverend DaoXuan.

Reverend DaoXuan turned back to look, and suddenly froze, his face expression changed. It seemed to be destined, these two person, were the same two orphans from the Grasstemple Village at that time.

“After this, will be our Qing Yun Sect Holy ground, ‘Illusory Moon Cave’. I am going in, you all will wait here and do not let any of the Evil Faction get in! The other road leads to ‘Founders Ancestral Hall’, you all...”

Lin JingYu with a look of determination, nodded his head seriously, loudly replied, “Sect Head please don’t worry!”

Reverend DaoXuan looked at him but his gaze also fell upon the ‘Dragon Slayer Sword’ in his hand. The Dragon Slayer Sword’s Jade Green Ball was roaming around in this quiet and peaceful hill scenery, as if it was thirsting for something?

This young man, full of eagerness and determination, indistinctly...Reverend DaoXuan suddenly turned around, gazed towards the road that led to Founders Ancestral Hall, without saying another word, looked towards the other road and walked on.

Lin JingYu watched until Reverend DaoXuan disappeared from the small road, then turned around, his eyebrows frowning deeply, he was unable to calm his state of mind, even his breathing became heavier. But it was understandable, Qing Yun had suddenly encountered a big calamity, and the one whom he had always regard as a father figure, Taoist Cang Song, suddenly betrayed them, how could it not caused him to feel that his world was spinning around.

Zhang Xiao Fan slowly raised his head, looking towards the foot of the hill, Crystal Hall's direction, but he could only see the dense forest, even the corner of the Hall's roof could not be seen; instead on the other road, leading to Founders Ancestral Hall, behind the forest, there was an indistinct house outline, bell tolls were also heard faintly.

From the extreme tensed battle to this extreme secluded place, both of them could not adjust their feeling momentarily, Lin JingYu panted heavily, breathed deeply and slowly slowed down his own breathing.

Suddenly, ahead of them, a dragon's fury cry was heard. Although the distance was great but the sound waves were like terrifying waves that crashed over, the earth seemed to shaken. Both of them were startled, Lin JingYu was the first to recover, happily said, "Its Senior Spirit!"

Zhang Xiao Fan also recognised the cry, it was indeed Water Unicorn's cries of fury, it was obvious that the thousand year spirit beast that had protected Qing Yun Hill, was finally awakened and attacked.

But it was indeed unimaginable, that Qing Yun intense battle situation could be rumbling to what extent!

Both of them had their own thoughts while waiting for Reverend DaoXuan, but their quiet moments were short-lived, footsteps were suddenly heard, both of them were alarmed, secretly wishing that it would be the rest of them arriving, if not...

Unexpectedly Heaven seemed to be against Qing Yun, after a short while, five Evil Faction disciples appeared, and their leader, was the one who had plotted against PuHong Master, the fake ShangGuan Ce. Looking at them here, he immediately started to grin hideously and dashed forward, and among the group, there were a few who looked behind them, looking around.

Lin Zhang both of them, lost countenance, with Lin JingYu quick reflexes, one look and he knew they were not mediocre fighters, not to say he himself could handle them but whether the five of them would combine their strengths to fight, was the issue. But the Illusory Moon Cave that Reverend DaoXuan went in, in whatever circumstances, they could not let them in. In the anxious moment, he hardened his heart and made a decision, spoke in a low voice to Zhang Xiao Fan, "Xiao Fan, I will lead them to the other side, you stay here and guard well!"

Zhang Xiao Fan was stunned, and had not recovered his senses where Lin JingYu had already dashed out, the Dragon Slayer Sword turned into a jade green ray, swept towards that five black-attired men, the momentum magnificently displayed.

The fake ShangGuan Ce and the rest were shocked, their expression

immediately turned solemn, they did not expect that this small junior Qing Yun disciple's skills was so high. They immediately surrounded him, leaving the fake ShangGuan Ce alone directing the fight, at the same time observing Zhang Xiao Fan's movement.

Lin JingYu fought them together, it was indeed that these Evil Faction disciples' skills were not mediocre, three among them were only slightly weaker than him, but only one of them, was well-matched in strength, right now the four of them surrounded and attacked him, he was immediately at a disadvantage.

Lin JingYu frowned deeply, he did not wish to continue fighting and immediately extricated himself and retreated towards the other path. That fake ShangGuan Ce hesitated for a slight moment but then soon led three of the fighters to chase after him, leaving only one black-attired man with Zhang Xiao Fan standing at the same spot.

That black-attired men sneered, looked at Zhang Xiao Fan, but this young man seemed to hear something and slowly looked up.

Appearing before him, was a pair full of unknown violent evil bloodshot eyes!

Qing Yun's tranquil forest, cries of startled birds were suddenly heard, a burst of commotion.

Far away, Water Unicorn's cries of fury were heard faintly, reverberated within Heaven and Earth!

Chapter 81: Founders Ancestral Hall

There were two important places at the back of Qing Yun Hill, one of it was Qing Yun's most revered sacred 'Illusory Moon Cave'. Thousand years ago, the ingenious founder, Qing Ye, locked himself in right there and achieved enlightenment, and from then Qing Yun Sect dominated over the world, leading the heroes.

And after Qing Ye founder, Illusory Moon Cave became Qing Yun Sect's most sacred ground, over the past thousand years, only the Sect Head was allowed to enter.

And the other place, was Founders Ancestral Hall.

As per its name, the Founders Ancestral Hall was naturally a place to enshrine Qing Yun Sect's successive generations of forefathers, from the initiator of Qing Yun Sect, Qing YunZi, until Qing Ye founder, and again until the successive generations of forefathers, all had a memorial tablet in that room. Incense was burned continuously everyday. And on each important occasions, Qing Yun Sect would always, led by their Sect Head, solemnly offered their prayers to their ancestors there, it was also considered one of the important places in Qing Yun Sect.

But, other than the occasions for commemorating their ancestors, the place was usually cold and lifeless. When Lin JingYu drew the four Evil Faction disciples away to this place, what he saw was on a huge empty ground, a majestic grand temple with four upturned eaves towered aloft on it, with glazed roof tile, antique sign and red columns. As if within this tranquility, it was telling its past history.

Whiffs of translucent smoke, from the dense and slightly dim temple, floated out from time to time. Looking in from the outside, blobs of candlelight were seen, an altar lamp wavering slightly, hanging in the mid-air. However, other than a elderly, wearing dull plain-coloured clothes, silently sweeping in front of the temple, not a single person was seen.

Just then, sounds of hurried footsteps were heard, that elderly slowly raised his head and looked over.

Lin JingYu felt a pang of regret, he only first thought of drawing the Evil Faction men away from Illusory Moon Cave, instead he misled them to Founders Ancestral Hall. Here, enshrined the generations of forefathers, if this place was to be destroyed by the Evil Faction men, even if he were to die ten thousand times, he would not be able to absolve himself from the blame!

Once he had this thought, Lin JingYu immediately stopped in his track, lifting the Dragon Slayer sword horizontally in front of his body, he turned to face the incoming fake ShangGuan Ce and the rest of them.

Just then, a bird suddenly flew out from the forest a distance away, followed by a tumult of noises.

Lin JingYu was startled, noticing that the noises came from where Zhang Xiao

Fan was, he couldn't help but felt worried. But because he knew he would be facing a deadly enemy soon, he forced his state of mind to calm down, focused his concentration and prepared his defence. In his mind, he decided that even if he was to lose his life this day, he would not allow those Evil Faction thieves to even put a foot into the Founders Ancestral Hall.

The Dragon Slayer Sword seemed to have its own spiritual energy, bluish green light radiated, contrasting with its owner's face, reflecting unswerving determination.

That elderly who was sweeping in front of Founders Ancestral Hall, saw the Dragon Slayer Sword in Lin JingYu's hand, his body suddenly shook.

On the other side, the four Evil Faction men looked at each other and laughed out, these men's positions in Evil Faction were obviously not low, one look and they knew that this place was one of Qing Yun Sect's important location, seemed like this time they would definitely be duly rewarded.

The fake ShangGuan Ce laughed conceitedly and said, "Kid, I can see that your aptitude is not bad, now that Qing Yun Sect has nowhere to go, why don't you join our sect, I will guarantee that you will progress rapidly in the future!"

"Pei!" Lin JingYu felt a surge of disgust, snorted and did not even bothered.

The fake ShangGuan Ce, instead, did not felt angry, [Hehe] he coldly laughed and said, "Good, since you are looking for death, I will fulfill your wish!" After saying, he signalled with his eyes, the rest of the three black attired men immediately attacked.

Lin JingYu gritted his teeth, the Dragon Slayer Sword's bluish green light heaved and rippled, staying horizontally in front of his body. The magical weapons that the three black attired men used, one was a yellow flying sword, another was a heavy powerful long beard and the last was the most odd and horrible, a sword made of several human white bones, its Yin energy extremely dense.

Lin JingYu, one against three, gritted his teeth and fought bitterly, the Dragon Slayer Sword's green light swept vertically and horizontally, defending its original position, surprisingly it held its ground but it was still at a disadvantage.

Lin JingYu entered Qing Yun Sect in his youth, his aptitude was excellent, Taoist Cang Song extremely favoured him, not only he took great care to coach him, he even imparted the famous Dragon Slayer Sword to him. Not sure if it was because on this youth, he saw the image of that person he had once revered, on him.

And Lin JingYu too, did not let Taoist Cang Song's painstaking efforts down, in a short span of a few years, based on his own exceptional aptitude, together with that deeply ingrained belief and hope to seek revenge for his parents, his Taoist skills excelled leaps and bounds, after several years he was already an outstanding talent in the young generation of disciples.

Just that even though how hard he worked, his skillset was still limited by time and impossible to improved that dramatically. Right now facing the three black attired Evil Faction disciples, that long beard weapon smashing unceasingly directly in front of him, the flying sword slyly attacking from the side; and even more worrisome was that white bone sword, its Yin energy cold and dense, under that Evil Faction man's manipulation, it would suddenly materialize and vanished. Each time he blocked it, the Yin energy would assailed him and he couldn't help but to take in a breath of the cold air, causing his body to shivers involuntarily.

They fought like this for several rounds, even though Lin JingYu defended with all of his strength, the Dragon Slayer Sword's bluish green light rays were gradually being suppressed down by the three black attired men. It seemed like his defeat was inevitable and eventually he succumbed and took a step back.

The fake ShangGuan Ce, who was standing behind, gave a cold laugh.

Once he stepped back, he could not stop retreating, that boosted the three black attired men's morales and their three magical weapons attacked at the same time. Lin JingYu sweated profusely, he kept being pushed back and was unable to stand still as he wished to.

Suddenly, that mysterious white bone sword disappeared. Lin JingYu who, one moment was blocking the incoming long beard's attack and another to parry the flying sword which was assailing from the side, suddenly felt pain in his lower legs and collapsed. That white bone sword, without knowing when, had bore into the ground and moved stealthily to slash out a huge wound on his right leg, fresh blood unceasingly dripping down.

Lin JingYu howled loudly, the Dragon Slayer Sword chopped down from mid-air, this celestial divine weapon hit upon the white bone sword, a slight [Pipa] sound was heard, at once the white bone sword's owner fell out and an hairline crack could be seen appearing faintly on that sword.

The Evil Faction man, who was using the white bone sword, felt a moment of heart pain, quickly took back the white bone sword to look at it carefully. But at this moment, the other two weapons had also arrived, piercingly cold wind sounds could be heard, Lin JingYu, trapped in a deathtrap, used his last burst of strength, steered the Dragon Slayer Sword horizontally to the top of his head.

[Rumble] A loud sound, strange lights were seen flicking crazily, sparks flying in all directions, nobody knew where the burst of energy came from and the Dragon Slayer Sword forcibly blocked off those two magical weapons but Lin JingYu saw only darkness. In this moment of lights and sparks, he was distracted and that fake ShangGuan Ce, who was standing at a distance just then, suddenly appeared in front of him, grinning hideously.

Lin JingYu's face blanched in terror but before he had the time to react, he felt a pain close to his heart, a stream of extremely sharp energy drilled in, in a flash, pierced through all of his body shields.

[Ah!]

Lin JingYu cried out. His entire body flew out, fresh blood spewing from his mouth, he could not even hold on to his Dragon Slayer Sword, the sword spinned in mid-air and finally a sound of [Shua], pierced into the ground, just right before the elderly sweeper.

Bluish green light circulated around and gradually dimmed down.

Lin JingYu had always been stubborn, he lowered his head to look at his wound and saw instead a mass of blood and flesh, the actual wound was only the size of a fingertip. But right then a sharp stream of energy rushed straight into his internal body, like a thin needle without any restraint ravaging around, causing extreme agony on his vital channels. However, he wanted to push himself up to fight the enemy again, unexpectedly his legs gave way and he was unable to stand up!

He panted heavily, the group of fake ShangGuan Ce and the rest instead

laughed loudly, looking extremely haughty.

“Kid, how is it? I have only used about 50 percent of my power and I can reduce you to this state, you better quickly surrender!”

Lin JingYu’s face muscles twitched, showing his agony but the adversity that was right in front of him made him extremely worried. Once his thoughts landed on the Ancestral Founder Hall behind him, without knowing himself where did the energy came from, he slowly struggled to stand up.

The Evil Faction and the rest did not stop him and continued to watch him like one was watching the fun from a monkey show.

That pain from his heart seemed like it was going to rush up into his head, Lin JingYu had not even stood properly when he felt another wave of dizziness, he turned his head around and panted noisily, staggered across to the Dragon Slayer Sword in front of the elderly sweeper, while panting he said, “Elderly, it is dangerous here, you should quickly, quickly, quickly go...”

That elderly appeared to be someone who had been maintaining the Founder Ancestral Hall daily, his face withered, the wrinkles on his face were like knife slashes. But strangely, when Lin JingYu was fighting with the Evil Faction, he was quietly standing and watching at the side, he did not run away and did not speak either.

Right now he looked at Lin JingYu’s chest and suddenly indifferently said, “Part from people Awl’! [Translator’s note: The name is really weird but I can’t find any suitable translation for it] You are Evil Faction Chang Shen Hall’s assassin Zhou Yin right?”

That four Evil Faction men's smiles stifled, the fake ShangGuan Ce's countenance suddenly became cold and said, "I did not expect there are still experts here. You are right, I am Zhou Yin, who are you sire?"

That withered elderly instead, did not reply him and muttered to himself, "Part from people Awl is a rare treasure of the Evil Faction, its might extremely strong, but in you, this kind of low being, hands, it instead become a weapon for attacking others on the sly, it really insulted this rare piece of treasure!"

Zhou Yin was enraged but for now, he could not figure out this mysterious elderly's identity, although he looked faltering but the degree of his bolstering was startling, he could not help but felt unsettled, he angrily said, "Who exactly are you sire?"

That elderly sighed and said, "Who am I? Hehe even I myself have forgotten who I am..." After speaking, he looked extremely sorrowful, his tone extremely bleak, then he turned his head over, facing Lin JingYu who was staring blankly, "Child."

Lin JingYu was startled, quickly replied, "Yes, Se, Senior."

That elderly appraised him and seemed to let out a faint smile, said, "Which branch are you from?"

Without knowing why, Lin JingYu felt an unspoken degree of respect for this elderly, lowered his voice and replied, "Disciple is under Taoist Cang Song Long Shou Valley branch..."

Speaking halfway, he suddenly thought of Taoist Cang Song, who had

betrayed Qing Yun, at once an indescribable feeling rushed up to his heart, his heart ached and he was unable to continued.

That elderly nodded his head, spoke softly, "It's Cang Song ah! He indeed have foresight in picking disciple, hehe."

While speaking, he tottering stretched his hand out, grabbed the Dragon Slayer Sword that was pierced into the ground in front of him.

Lin JingYu looked at his slow-moving action and suddenly felt tensed, deep inside him, it seemed as if he was anticipating something and unconsciously held his breath.

That pair of withered and aged palms, not knowing how many seasons of snowstorm it had weathered. When he again touched the hard and cold sword hilt, and then, he held it tight!

In Founders Ancestral Hall, a faint bell tolled suddenly.

[Qiang lang.....]

Unexpectedly, the Dragon Slayer Sword which had remained dim, abruptly shone with green light, the brilliant rays shone like the blazing sun in the horizon, dazzling and glaring! That elderly unhurriedly drew the Dragon Slayer Sword out, with every inch it was out, the Dragon Slayer Sword seemed to vibrate with agitation, dragons singing unceasingly. The sound that shook till

the souls of everyone, reverberated among the nine heavens.

The elderly stood up straight, placed the Dragon Slayer Sword, which was glowing with magnificent greenish blue rays, in front of him, gently caressing it. That callus aged hand, was as gentle as it was caressing its own beloved daughter.

The Dragon Slayer Sword continued to whistle, even standing a distance away, Lin JingYu and the Evil Faction crowd, sensed that the Dragon Slayer Sword seemed to be alive with a soul of its own.

Lin JingYu stared blankly at that Dragon Slayer Sword, which he almost could not recognize, radiating unparalleled resplendent glow in that elderly's hand. And that withered elderly's appearance, after grabbing that sword hilt, also seemed to change, the unseen grandeur surged and spilled over, looking as if the legendary ancient sword deity had appeared.

"Child, watch carefully, Dragon Slayer Sword is not to be used like that!" The elderly, standing in the surging and turbulent jade-green light waves, indifferently said.

He had just finished his words, when jade-green light burst forth in a split second, the entire ground was shrouded in that green light in an instant, the light covering the sky and earth. With a sharp whistling sound, the Dragon Slayer Sword, like a flash of electricity, shot out from the elderly's hand.

After witnessing the elderly's imposing manner, the Evil Faction group was already prepared, immediately a sound of command was heard, they steered their magical weapons up to attack at the same time, only Zhou Yin stood at the back, frowning but did not make any attack.

The three of them seemed to use the same methods of attack on which they used on Lin JingYu, the long beard attacking directly, the flying sword flew up, the white bone sword attacking stealthily. Unexpectedly that elderly did not even bother about the yellow flying sword and white bone sword, the Dragon Slayer Sword turned into a enormous light beacon, charged over with the force of toppling the mountain and overturning the seas. The Evil Faction disciple, who was controlling the long beard weapon, turned pale and quickly steered the long beard to ward off the blows but to hear only a loud and clear sound, the Dragon Slayer Sword, like cutting an ice snow, had sliced the long beard into half, and without any moment of hesitation, chopped down from his head.

[Ssi...]

Under Lin JingYu's dumbstruck stare, under everyone's fearful stares, that Evil Faction person, from his head till toes, was sliced into half, blood sprayed everywhere like rain. And almost without stopping, in the blood-stained sky, the green rays, almost demon-looking,, rolled back and charged towards the other two persons.

The flying sword and white bone sword, which were originally attacking the elderly, right now were frightened out of their wits and how would they have the courage to attack, immediately turned back to flee, at the same time recalled their weapons. However, the Dragon Slayer Sword's powerful rays covered the sky, in an instant reached and right before everyone's eyes, collided with them.

Almost without any cries of surprise, the green rays swallowed up the two of them, sounds of shattering suddenly exploded, who knew what had exactly happened to the two persons?

Lin JingYu was dripping cold sweat, his conscious seemed to have been robbed!

Standing at the furthest, Zhou Yin's countenance changed greatly, he knew that the elderly was actually a fearful master and he was no match for him, immediately he turned and flew off.

Unexpectedly, that green rays were like the roar of a mountain and howling of the sea, mixed with dark red blood color, flashed past like electric rays, charged after.

Zhou Yin's skills was indeed higher than the rest, all of a sudden his hands shook and a concealed black air flashed by, the green rays, which had filled up the sky, actually paused in front of him.

And the next moment, Zhou Yin suddenly turned pale, hoarsely exclaimed, "It's you! You are Wan...."

He had not finished his words when that immeasurable green rays, suppressed that struggling black air and struck down from the head, chopped onto Zhou Yin's chest.

Zhou Yin cried out once miserably, his entire being flung out far away, by the looks of it, he would not be able to survive.

In a short while, the four Evil Faction people who were strutting around just now, were all dead.

The immeasurable green jade rays, like a big whale sucking up water, was

sucked back into the Dragon Slayer Sword, and flew back to the elderly's hand.

Lin JingYu opened his mouth slightly but couldn't speak a word.

That elderly shook his head slightly, seemed to be sighing to himself on something, after which looked deeply at the Dragon Slayer Sword in his hand and tossed it to Lin JingYu.

Lin JingYu subconsciously caught it and heard that elderly turned back to walk into Founders Ancestral Hall, while muttering in his breath, "Dragon Slayer Sword, casted by collecting tens of thousands of green crystal from the extreme harsh Southern border, destroyed countless of the wicked and evil. When using this sword, you must march forward courageously, using attack as the main style, even if your skills are not enough, you too must have the determination to kill the whole lot of the formidable enemy, if not you will not be able to unleash the divine energy, you must remember!"

Lin JingYu was stunned but seeing that the elderly was about to enter the Founders Ancestral Hall, he suddenly woke up to reality, and urgently said, "Senior, today the Evil Faction attacked Qing Yun in forces, I earnestly request that you must give...."

That elderly's body suddenly paused but he did not turn over, only indifferently said, "Qing Yun Sect highly skilled experts are numerous, Head Sect DaoXuan Reverend is even more the world's extraordinary rare talented master, with him, what is there to fear?"

Lin JingYu stepped forward, sorrowfully said, "But, but Sect Head Reverend has already been grievously hurt!"

That elderly was obviously shocked, abruptly turned his head over and said, “Who was it that could have hurt DaoXuan?”

Lin JingYu suddenly became silent, of course he knew who the culprit was, but to say out Taoist Cang Song at this moment, without knowing why, he felt a wave of sadness, as if he was to say it out, it seemed like he would be severing something with that person, and for that moment he did not speak a single word!

That elderly continued on to ask, “What about DaoXuan! How is he now?”

Lin JingYu said, “Sect Head Revered sustained serious injury, but without knowing what was it for, he entered into Illusory Moon Cave.”

“Illusory Moon Cave!” That elderly’s expression at once calmed down, after a long while while facing Lin JingYu but at the same time, seemed to be facing himself, sighed slightly and said, “Qing Yun Sect a thousand years enormous sect, what do you fear?”

After speaking, the elderly once more unhurriedly turned back. Lin JingYu turned pale and exclaimed, “Elderly senior, will you watch Qing Yun in danger and yet not save it?”

That elderly smiled forlornly and said, “Young man, Qing Yun Sect was established and handed down for almost two thousand years long, the internal strength within, how can you know! You just don’t have to worry.”

Lin JingYu did not understand and was about to plead earnestly again when suddenly the Dragon Slayer Sword which had been staying quietly in his hand all

this while, turned extremely warm, as if it had been stimulated, and the green rays again, shone out.

Lin JingYu stared at the Dragon Slayer Sword in his hand, seemed to sense something and turned his head to look towards the direction of the Illusory Moon Cave. In-between the valleys, a stream of grand light burst towards the sky, and the Dragon Slayer Sword in his hand, also seemed to be softly calling out in that direction.

“It has emerged, finally coming out into the world!”

Without knowing when that elderly had also turned to look towards that direction, his face was full of conflicting and confusing expression, whispered, “Child, your luck is good, very soon you will be able to see that legendary ancient sword ‘Zhu Xian’!”

End of Chapter

Chapter 82: Zhu Xian the Ancient Sword

That brilliant light shining from Illusory Moon Cave, became more and more dazzling and accompanying it, a faint low strange whistling.

The withered elderly standing in front of Founders Ancestral Hall, stared spellbound at that glorious dazzling brightness, until Lin JingYu who could not contain his astonishment, turned to ask him, “Elderly senior, is that our Qing Yun Sect’s most valuable treasure — Zhu Xian the Ancient Sword?”

The elder silently nodded, suddenly looked away and appeared as if he did not wish to be concerned with anything, whispered, “Once Zhu Xian is out, in addition on this Qing Yun Hill and with DaoXuan’s attained skills, there is absolutely no one on earth who can defeat him. Go ba!” saying which, his body had already half submerged into the shadows of the Founders Ancestral Hall.

Lin JingYu suddenly felt a sense of reluctance, called out, “Senior!”

That elderly paused, seemed to have thought of something and suddenly said, “If someday you would want to, seek for DaoXuan privately and tell him that that servant in Founders Ancestral Hall have been bored for hundred over years and now will like you to visit regularly to chat, and see if he will agree?”

Lin JingYu was stunned for a moment, puzzledly asked, "What?"

But that elderly did not reply and vanished into the darkness.

Lin JingYu was dumbfounded for a while and after which, he turned around to look, just within this short time, that column of light seemed to become even more brighter and almost hard to look at. Also at the same time, he was worried about Zhang Xiao Fan and immediately ran out.

After running a few paces he arrived shortly at the place he was previously at. Lin JingYu looked towards the scene and immediately sucked in a breath of cold air. At that split road, 2 people were still standing there, Zhang Xiao Fan was still there but the other person was instead, Small Bamboo Valley Lu XueQi. But what made him took a deep breath was, the surrounding area around the empty ground, stains of blood were everywhere, even on the nearby trees' leaves, were all sprayed with blood, as if it was in hell.

And that black-attired man who was confronting Zhang Xiao Fan awhile ago, not knowing since when had been dead on the ground, the corpse was pale and withered, as if all of his body fresh blood had been sucked out dry.

A bad premonition floated up into Lin JingYu's heart, he immediately ran towards Zhang Xiao Fan, shouting loudly, "Xiao Fan, are you alright?"

From the moment that Lin JingYu appeared until now, Zhang Xiao Fan never turned to look at him, and instead continued to stand facing Lu XueQi but these two persons whose relationship had always been delicate, Lu XueQi suddenly instead drew out her TianYa celestial sword and focused all of her attention on Zhang Xiao Fan.

Lin JingYu had always regarded Zhang Xiao Fan as his own brother, now that Lu XueQi seemed to have the intention to harm Zhang Xiao Fan, he angrily shouted, “Lu Senior sister, what are you doing?”

And using his body to shield Zhang Xiao Fan, he stood in front of him and faced Lu XueQi.

Lu XueQi’s expression was originally looking complicated, with a mix of anger, surprise and unwillingness and her eyes conveyed her distress. And when Lin JingYu suddenly stood between them, she was taken aback and hoarsely said, “You...”

A bloody hand, also at the same time, touched on Lin JingYu’s shoulder, soaking a patch of red on his white robe. The fresh blood from that hand gave off a bloody scent and invaded Lin JingYu’s nose.

Lin JingYu was shocked, whipped his body around and exclaimed, “Xiao Fan, are you alright?”

Appearing in front of him, was a gaze with faint dark red light, glittered with a few traces of pain. Zhang Xiao Fan’s expression was wooden, his lips quivered and finally that red light weakened and he spoke softly, “I am alright.”

Only then Lin JingYu breathed a sigh of relief and said, “Hm, Sect Head Reverend can be coming out soon, we should get ready to escort him back to the fight!”

Zhang Xiao Fan nodded, remained silent and only tightened his grip around the firestick.

Lu XueQi, who was watching him from the side, only slowly sheathed TianYa after a long while without speaking a single word. Lin JingYu looked at her puzzledly and was about to ask what had actually happened but at this moment, from the direction of the Illusory Moon Cave, the faint whistle which had been reverberating, suddenly intensified and increased its pitch, moving the Heavens and Earth. That brilliant light became even more magnificent.

Within the light halo, a figure slowly rose up. Reverend DaoXuan bathed in the light rays, his right hand, from the palm to the shoulder, was surrounded by a mass of bright white hot light and no one could see exactly what he was holding.

And just awhile ago, his body which had received heavy injuries till the extent he was unable to make flight, now seemed not to be disabled. It seemed like once this Zhu Xian Ancient Sword was out, even his body's essence was fully recharged.

Reverend DaoXuan's long dark green robe, fluttered within the light beam, even his complexion, reflected paler by that white light in his hand. He did not even notice Lin JingYu, Zhang Xiao Fan and the rest below him and took off directly towards Crystal Hall.

Lin JingYu and the rest were bedazzled, this Zhu Xian Ancient Sword had not even been wielded, its might was already so overwhelming, if it was used, how powerful would it be?

After staring for a long time, the three of them came back to their senses and sprinted towards the front of the hill.

After they had left a while, a slender figure unhurriedly walked out from deep inside the forest, gazing at that gradually distancing Zhang Xiao Fan's back figure, a face full of complicated feelings, without saying a single word.

It was BiYao.

From the time that Reverend DaoXuan left until now, in the front part of Qing Yun Hill, the Good and Evil Faction big battle, with Crystal Hall as their base, had already turned devastating.

Recalling back hundred of years ago, also at the foot of Qing Yun Hill, at that time the Good Faction's three great sects; Qing Yun Hill, Tian Yin Temple, FenXiang Valley at the same time fought against Evil Faction and had won in one fell swoop. But this day, there was no one from FenXiang Valley and Tian Yin Temple's skilled masters including their in-charge Holy Monk PuHong, was instead injured by one of the Evil Faction disciples who had impersonated FenXiang Valley disciples and now other than PuKong, FaXiang and a few, almost the rest were Qing Yun Sect themselves holding up on their own.

But then, Qing Yun Sect, passed down as a two-thousand years old famous great sect, finally revealed its deep heritage today. Tian BuYi, Shang ZhengLiang, Zeng ShuChang etc as the head branches, they needed not be mentioned but in the rest of the 7 branches, there were several white-haired elders attacking together and on top of that with Tian Yin Temple PuKong, FaXiang, although the skilled experts from Evil Faction did their utmost to attack and also had the upper hand but still were unable to defeat them.

In this battle, almost several, considered as at present, top notch cultivated experts, were fighting here. In spite of the fact that Crystal Hall, which had been reinforced and built with celestial cultivated powers, eventually too was unable to withstand the countless flying everywhere, running unhindered collisions

from the magical weapons and its enormous roof finally collapsed with a loud crash, a cloud of dust filling the air.

The crowd was shocked and one after another took to the air, continued their fight from the ground to the air and as the fighting space expanded, it instead became even better for them to flex their skills.

But looking at the sky full of flashing lights, lights from several battling groups also lighting up the sky, sharp rays glittered and at times looking like meteor whizzing passed! The summit of Qing Yun mountain, looked as if it was submerged in numerous resplendent magical weapons' rays.

The Evil Faction members' numerous kinds of strange and odd magical weapons were all brought out and used but instead on Good Faction side, although most of the elders were using celestial swords but in these elders' hands, whom had practised Tai Chi Xuan Qing Way until Shang Qing Realm, those streams of fine light weaved endlessly and transforming at will, if not for the fact that there were too many Evil Faction experts, they might not be at disadvantage.

Although Tian BuYi and the rest were still able to hold back the Evil Faction, those ordinary Qing Yun disciples at the foot of the hill were in imminent danger. This time that the Evil Faction attacked in huge forces, they had already made through preparations, especially Ghost King who had made specific arrangements and knew for sure that because Zhang Xiao Fan possessed a rare treasure and knew Tian Yin Temple unorthodoxy learnt True Way, Qing Yun Sect's skilled masters would surely gathered at Crystal Hall. Therefore, when they decided to attack Qing Yun, using Taoist Cang Song's information, had their experts infiltrated in and launched the attack in surprise. And as expected, it achieved great success, the Qing Yun disciples were all disoriented and numerous were dead or injured.

Just that Ghost King never expected one thing, that was Qing Yun Sect's spiritual beast guardian, the Water Unicorn.

The Water Unicorn, ever since a thousand years ago after Qing Ye founder master had passed on, had always roamed carefree at Jade Pool and never really shown its might. Even for that Good and Evil Faction battle a hundred years ago at the foot of Qing Yun Hill, it did not went down to participate so this generation of Qing Yun Sect, including Taoist Cang Song, never knew how powerful the Water Unicorn could be?

But after being woken up by the battle between Evil Faction and Qing Yun disciples, the Water Unicorn as the resident spiritual beast of the mountain, naturally showed its rage. This sudden event almost changed the balance of the battle.

Book 3, Chapter 82: Zhu Xian the Ancient Sword - part 2

The Water Unicorn stood in the Jade Pool with its turbulent waves, the entire pool spinned and swirled around this great beast. A water column, with the width of several men forming a circle, conjured up beside the Water Unicorn. Within the column, countless trapped resentful souls that had been swallowed up by the Water Unicorn could be seen in it. Controlled by the spiritual beast's power, it split in in four directions and attacked the Evil Faction disciples.

Initially the Evil Faction disciples did not regard this strange beast as a threat and started to besiege it. Unexpectedly the water column burst upon contact. The Water Unicorn's might was really queer and unparalleled, in an instant seven or eight were crushed by that water column, another seven or eight were

trapped and killed by the resentful spirits in the water. The Evil Faction disciples were frightened out of their wits and escaped in all directions. The Qing Yun disciples instead, felt their morale lifted.

After a while, the four great Evil Faction leaders, who were still in the Crystal Hall, were alerted to the situation. They first sent several experts down but in the end even SanMiao Fairy and God of Poison also followed down one after another. Only then the situation was stabilized and the Water Unicorn was gradually being contained.

SanMiao Fairy and God of Poison were both the first grade leaders of the four great branches, their status were by no means insignificant and naturally their skills far exceeded the other highly skilled experts. After they both came down, SanMiao Fairy used a soft strange silk which was almost indiscernible to the naked eye and danced dainty as if she was weaving an invisible web. The Water Unicorn directed the water columns to attack several times, with ferocious and unmatched might, but instead was blocked off by this delicate and almost invisible web, reduced into nothing.

As for God of Poison, after watching the intense fight between the Water Unicorn and SanMiao Fairy for a while, nodded his head and took out a half chi dagger with clear light circulating around it. Clutching it in his right hand, his left hand holding a jade bottle and he pulled out the stopper. Wondered what was the thing that was inside?

After a while, it seemed like the God of Poison had hasten the chant as that small dagger suddenly shone brilliantly, swallowing and spitting sharp rays out. The God of Poison gently waved and immediately, like cutting a tofu, sliced through a water column that was nearest to him. After which he swiftly raised his left hand and a blue-looking like powder was seen in the air which landed onto the place where the water column had rise.

The Water Unicorn seemed to sense something amiss, turned back and roared. A loud sound was heard from the pool and an even more enormous water column sprang up from the same place, targeted towards the God of Poison. The God of Poison did not even flinch once and after a while as expected, the Water Unicorn suddenly howled loudly. The water column that was attacking God of Poison, dispersed with a loud bang and landed back at the pool. The surrounding pool of water had already turned into a deep dark blue color.

Just like that, the God of Poison, using one hand to cut and the other hand to scatter poison, extinguished almost half of the water column raised by the Water Unicorn in just a short while. And SanMiao Fairy stood on the other side expressionlessly, using HeHuan Sect's secret technique 'Lingering Silk' to tightly trapped the water column sent by the Water Unicorn.

Right now whoever that was able to see, would right away knew that under the besieged attacks from these two big Evil Faction experts, the Water Unicorn had lost without question.

From high above, YuYang Zi and Ghost King stood side by side and looked down, after they saw that the situation had calmed down, Yu YangZi looking conceited, said, "With the two leaders combining their strength, no matter how powerful this beast will be, it will not matter!"

Ghost King smiled slightly and then looked up into the sky, observing that with their people besieging, even though Qing Yun Sect was still stubbornly resisting but one could not fight against the heavy odds and already it had become a strenuous effort. Smiling satisfactory, he said, "YuYang fellow brother, with the accomplishment made today, your reputation in the Holy Sect in the upcoming future will be matchless to none."

YuYang Zi turned and took a look at him, his mood extremely elated, gave a Ha Ha big laugh.

Ghost King sneered in his heart but his smile still remained on his face, said, "As so, to prevent unforeseen trouble from long delay, why don't we combine efforts and make all these Qing Yun fellows..."

YuYang Zi, in a high-spirited and vigorous mood, replied, "Good, I will attack together with you!"

Ghost King nodded and smiled, said, "Fellow brother first!"

YuYang Zi He He laughed, leaped up and spreaded his arms, a silver light flashed passed and a strange mirror with white and black sides appeared in his hand.

Ghost King, behind him, suddenly turned solemn, deep down in his eyes a cold glint flashed, his body moved, as if he was about to do something but at this moment, a deep strange cry was heard from the distance horizon.

Suddenly, the entire Qing Yun mountain range, the huge peaks that had reached into the sky and towered for thousands years, seemed to vibrate slightly!

Suddenly, the celestial magical swords in everyone's hand had also started to turn warm and hummed softly towards that magnificent grand light.

TongTian Peak, reaching through the clouds into the sky, and the sky which had always been clear and bright, gradually, darken.

Only that beam of dazzling light in the horizon, like an unrestrained electric voltage that had thrown off its shackles, soared above the nine heavens and flew over.

Exploded in an instant!

The unparalleled magnificent glory shone upon the earth and the human figure immersed in the deep of that glory, held the sword towards the sky.

Everyone held their breath, staring at the sky dumbfoundedly and at this celestial moment, the Water Unicorn in the Jade Pool howled wildly but did not attack God of Poison and SanMiao Fairy again. On the contrary, all of the water columns combined together with a loud bang and became an unimaginable enormous water curtain, propping the Water Unicorn straight up to the sky, flying into the light!

In the Heaven above, a celestial beast's shout reverberated unceasingly.

Standing beside Ghost King and YuYang Zi and silently watching the battle scene, Taoist Cang Song, had turned pale after that beam of light appeared and now that he saw the Water Unicorn flying up to the sky after a loud bang, his body wavered and he hoarsely cried, "Zhu Xian!"

Ghost King and YuYang Zi turned pale at the same time, Ghost King exclaimed, "Didn't you say that only those that had practised Tai Chi Xuan Qing Way until Tai Qing Realm level then will be able to control Zhu Xian the ancient sword,

then will be able to use ‘Zhu Xian Sword Formation’?”

Taoist Cang Song laughed bitterly and said, “That’s right but I never imagine DaoXuan he....”

Right now, everyone had stopped fighting and Tian BuYi and the rest had came back to the ground. Everyone in Qing Yun Sect was visibly moved.

This legendary ancient sword, once in Qing Yun Sect Qing Ye founder’s hand, intimidated the world and unexpectedly today at Qing Yun Sect’s most dangerous moment, again appeared in the Sect Head Reverend DaoXuan’s hand.

In the mid-air, the Water Unicorn flew until it was below DaoXuan’s body, roared softly and dipped its beast head slightly, as if it was also showing an unspoken fear and respect towards this ancient sword.

DaoXuan was immersed totally in the light and slowly landed onto the spiritual beast Water Unicorn’s crown.

Breathe, deeply!

Grasping the sword, towards the sky!

In the vault of heaven, in the flood of light rays, suddenly an echo of a strange incantation chant was heard, as if the celestial gods and buddhas were singing softly, as if the evil demons in the nine nether world were grinning hideously. An unknown fear drowned everyone at Qing Yun peak.

Suddenly, around the back of TongTian Peak, towards the direction of the Illusory Moon Cave direction, a stream of purple energy started billowing. It directly illuminated the Water Unicorn and DaoXuan who was on his head. After a while, from the far distances everywhere, six strange resplendent lights flew out from the unknown locations in the other Qing Yun Hill's six mountain peaks. Classified as: Yellow, blue-green, red, green, orange and blue six colors shrouded together and the last seventh strange light, converged into the already dazzling ancient sword, Zhu Xian, in DaoXuan's hand.

Heaven and Earth changed color, loud crack of thunder!

A loud thunder sound exploded in mid-air and a fierce gale blew, not a single person did not change expression. The sand and stones on TongTian Peak were blew away, dust flying everywhere and the seven strange lights continued to shine. On top of the resplendent dazzling ancient sword Zhu Xian, a radiating sword shape made of seven colors energy formed. It kept increasing in size and at the same time from this main sword, it constantly cloned out different energy colored swords. More and more and in an instant, covered the sky and turned the entire TongTian Peak into a moving multi-colored scene, the view was beyond spectacular.

Taoist Cang Song trembled slightly and in a low voice he moaned, "Zhu Xian Sword Formation, Zhu Xian Sword Formation..."

By then the God of Poison and SanMiao Fairy had flew back, Taoist Cang Song, with his pale face, said, "This formation was created by Qing Yun Sect creator, Qing YunZi, and enhanced using hundred of years of blood and sweat by that Qing Ye founder. Using Zhu Xian the Ancient Sword to stimulate it, you cannot imagine the might of it. We, we better retreat?"

Ghost King's expression changed but YuYang Zi had already turn angry and said, "Nonsense, even how powerful is he, he is still one man and one sword, so what?"

Taoist Cang Song laughed bitterly and shook his head, urgently turned his head to talk to God of Poison, "Sect Leader, this Zhu Xian Sword Formation is activated using a mysterious incantation and it was originally already extremely powerful. In the beginning era when our Qing Yun Sect formed, we depended on this formation protection to just barely survive. Later on when Qing Ye founder entered our sect, with his gifted in-born talent, he combined Qing Yun Hill seven mountain peaks' thousand years of unorthodox and complex spiritual energy and on top of it, used since ancient time the first rare Zhu Xian's supreme sword spirit and cast it as the medium until it has an exceptional power to open up the Heaven and break the Earth, we absolutely must not use force to overcome it!"

God of Poison turned pale but to let go the ducks which were almost at hand just basing on this never-seen-before Zhu Xiang Sword Formation, no matter what, he could not make this decision immediately.

Needless to say, YuYang Zi standing by the side, had an expression of loath, only Ghost King stomped his feet and decided there and then, "This formation's strength is too powerful, we cannot use force to win, let's go!"

YuYang Zi, God of Poison and SanMiao Fairy were all shocked and were about to debate but

at this moment of hesitation, that dazzling Zhu Xian Sword Formation in the mid-air had already started to change.

That multi-colored energy sword on top of the ancient sword Zhu Xian,

obviously it was now the main sword of this formation. Right now it had turned into an astronomical size, lying in the middle of the vaults of heaven, even the enormous beast, Water Unicorn, seemed incomparable to it. As for the single-colored energy swords that filled up the sky, they were packed tightly and densely, as if like clouds, sparking fear to those that saw it.

This queer scene was rarely seen in eternity but instead there was nothing to make one excited, only impressions of harsh and coldness.

Reverend DaoXuan on top of the Water Unicorn, his body wavered slightly. At the same time he chanted the incantation, waved the ancient sword Zhu Xian in his right hand and his left hand finger made an incantation spell hand resembling a sword, pointed below and slashed down!

“Si....”

Above the ancient sword Zhu Xian, the lights flickered once and after a while, the numerous energy swords floating in the mid-air charged down with an extremely rapid force, towards the Evil Faction group of people.

The swords fell like rain, the harsh Heaven and Earth!

Countless of Evil Faction disciples raised their weapons to defend but the energy swords were like unbeatable and stabbed down without mercy. The moment your strength weaken, you would be beaten severely into the earth, fresh blood sprayed everywhere.

On TongTian Peak, wails like ghost and howls like wolves were heard immediately, horrible shrieks unceasingly, numerous broken limbs and pieces of

flesh splattered, blood and flesh intersected each other in the air, the air were full of blood stench and rains full of blood, as if it was in hell. Looking at such scene, even Qing Yun Sect and Tian Yin Temple disciples' expressions changed slightly, Tian Yin Temple FaXiang bend his head down slightly and chanted softly.

Evil Faction's four great leaders' expression changed greatly, in a blink of an eye the people around them, because of this unbelievable strange formation, almost everyone got injured. They look helplessly at this Zhu Xian Sword Formation which deployed swords out like rainfall and that multi-colored main sword in the sky continued to clone even more single-colored energy swords. The area occupied by the swords kept increasing, almost enveloping the entire TongTian Peak!

Ghost King waved to block off an energy sword that had rained down, only to feel a great shock to his body. The lethal spiritual energy contained in this energy sword seemed to be immense and it seemed to be what Taoist Cang Song had said, with Qing Yun Hill seven mountains peaks' Heaven and Earth spiritual energy, it was really not what a human strength could fight. And furthermore, this was just one single-colored sword, if it was an attack from that fearful seven-colored main sword, everyone might be killed without a burial site.

Among the four great leaders, Ghost King had always been full of stratagems, now that danger was close at hand, Ghost King being quick-witted, suddenly noticed that Reverend DaoXuan's body kept wavering in the mid air, evidently showing the strain it took on him, and quickly shouted, "Everyone, DaoXuan that old thief is badly hurt and lack the strength to fully control this formation, let us combine our strength immediately to attack one area!"

At first the Evil Faction people were in a chaos, almost all depended on their own ability to defend against this lives-consuming sword rain raining down from

mid air. Unexpectedly hearing the cry from Ghost King, they did not even have to consider, with Ghost King as the lead, almost all of the Evil Faction highly skilled experts on TongTian Peak flew up and charged towards the less densely packed single-coloured swords area on the eastern side.

On the way up, horrible shrieks continued, the energy swords were taking lives like evil demons grinning hideously in the mid air, sweeping up stalks of horrible and bright-colored beautiful blood flower in the vaults of heaven. Qing Yun Sect and Tian Yin Temple disciples were all staring blankly and had forgotten to stop the Evil Faction people. But even if they thought of it they could not rush to use force as in this shower of swords, if they move thoughtlessly, they might be the first to be hurt.

Finally, after throwing down nearly a hundred bodies, several Evil Faction experts dashed out from the east side including the four great leaders and Taoist Cang Song. Although everyone of them was wounded but they eventually still escaped.

The sky full of sword rain, finally slowly weaken, slowly stopped.

Numerous scattered blood flowers, landed slowly and turned into a startling bloody scene, shrouding TongTian Peak into a sea of red.

The energy swords in the sky gradually disappeared, Reverend DaoXuan, following the Water Unicorn landed unhurriedly. Tian BuYi and the rest at that moment then realized and immediately went up to greet him but just when they received Reverend DaoXuan, without waiting for them to say a word, Reverend DaoXuan's body tilted and fell into Tian BuYi's bosom, losing conscious.

Chapter 83: Past Sin

Everyone was thrown into a state of confusion and they quickly supported Reverend DaoXuan into the Crystal Hall. But right now inside the Crystal Hall, the place had already fell into disrepair, the original grand and proud architecture had collapsed by half, broken stones and woods were everywhere.

Tian BuYi and the rest waited while the younger disciples hastily cleared an area, dragged a chair from the side and let Reverend DaoXuan sat on it. The surrounding elder leaders, whatever magical elixir or special medicine that they had, they could not wait to take it all out and let DaoXuan had it all.

After a while, DaoXuan's body moved, gave a long moan and slowly woke up.

Tian BuYi and the rest saw that Reverend DaoXuan's complexion was so pale to the point where there was really no color and especially the wound in his abdomen, the blood which had clotted, without knowing when, had expanded several sizes bigger and almost dyed the entire lower front of his robe black. Everyone could not help but had worried expressions.

Reverend DaoXuan obviously had severely injured his vitality, after gaining conscious, he could not even speak. Tian BuYi quickly gave him three of his painstaking-refined big yellow pill to him. After a while, the medication took

effect and Reverend DaoXuan began to look slightly better.

By then, the senior disciples had also gathered over, Lin JingYu, Zhang Xiao Fan, Lu XueQi and the rest had also rushed over. When they saw that Sect Head Reverend's injuries were so severe, their faces turned pale.

After a while, Song Daren, QiHao and the rest also rushed back.

Reverend DaoXuan recovered more of his strength, opened his eyes and saw that Tian BuYi and the rest were all looking at him with concerned and worried expressions, he forced a smile and said, "I can still hold on, don't worry."

Tian BuYi and the rest only then felt relieved, among them, someone recalled seeing the legendary ancient sword Zhu Xian but noticed that it was not in Reverend DaoXuan's hands nor was it seen anywhere. And outside Crystal Hall, the spiritual beast Water Unicorn also did not return back to Jade Pool and instead lay there. The ancient sword Zhu Xian was also not seen anywhere near it.

Reverend DaoXuan unhurriedly looked around his surroundings, his countenance slightly changed when he noticed that the Qing Yun Sect disciples standing around him, almost more than half were not there, he exclaimed, "Just now after I left, here, here how was the casualties?"

Standing nearest to him, Tian BuYi, hesitated for a while and spoke quietly, "Sect Head senior brother, you better take care of your ..."

DaoXuan cut him off, "Quickly say it!"

Tian BuYi paused a while, turned around to look at the surroundings, as if he needed to confirm again and then quietly informed DaoXuan on the casualties.

In this battle, Qing Yun Sect truly suffered heavy casualties. Under the Evil Faction besiege, among the twenty-five elders, fourteen were killed, four or five were heavily injured and for the seven branches leaders, other than Sect Head Reverend DaoXuan and the traitor Long Shou Valley Taoist Cang Song, Morning Sun Valley leader Shang ZhengLiang and Sunset Valley leader Taoist Tian Yun were killed, leaving Tian BuYi and Return of the Wind Valley leader Zeng ShuChang, they were too, exhausted mentally and covered with wounds. Only Small Bamboo Valley Shui Yue Master, because she had to escort Tian Yin Temple PuHong and the rest, was quite unharmed.

Reverend DaoXuan's body wavered, nearly unable to hold up again. The strength that Qing Yun Sect had been proud of in the past, in this battle, seemed to be nearly exhausted.

Tian BuYi, with grief and indignation on his face, spoke quietly, "Sect Head senior brother, such terrible blood debt, we must seek revenge, just that now your health is more important, you absolutely must not be too grieved."

DaoXuan heaved a sigh, closed his eyes and said, "I, DaoXuan, have let down Qing Yun Sect generations of forefathers!"

His voice bleak with an unspoken pain, the crowd which heard it was silent for a moment.

Just that, on top of the ruins beside them, a piece of wood suddenly dropped down with thump and a head stretched out from the corner of the ruins. Everyone was shocked and looking carefully, they were all stunned. The person

was that Wang Uncle who had been mad for many years. Without knowing when he had ran into this Crystal Hall, and where he had hid during the earth-shaking big battle, right now he crawled out just like that. He was covered with dust which turned his hair grey and his face brown but his expression showed that he was not really afraid and grinning foolishly.

Zhang Xiao Fan and Lin JingYu who were standing beside, walked over at the same time. After all, they did not just have a simple relationship with Wang Uncle. Lin JingYu pulled him over and checked him, other than a few scratches on his body, he was unharmed. This spot of fortune was indeed better than the numerous Qing Yun disciples who had skills a hundred times higher than him.

Both of them breathed long sighs of relief and looked at each other, their eyes both conveyed a meaning of such fortune. Zhang Xiao Fan's mood by now had slightly returned to normal, as if that wave of fierce evil current, with the departure of Taoist Cang Song and especially that close-quarter fight with the Evil Faction black-attired man at the back of the hill, had gradually cooled down.

Thinking about this, he seemed to have thought of something, and involuntarily he turned to look at the other side. Lu XueQi who had just witnessed his unusual savage appearance, right now her expression was as still as water, standing there quietly, not sure what was she thinking about?

The Evil Faction crowd risked their lives to create an escape route of blood, broke out of Reverend DaoXuan's stimulated Zhu Xian Sword Formation and escaped down TongTian Peak.

At the foot of Qing Yun Hill, Ghost King was the first to calm down, repeatedly shouted and stopped the flustered crowd. The four great leaders did their headcounts on their people and after a while Ghost King, God of Poison, YuYang Zi and SanMiao Fairy came together and looked at each other without words.

Qing Yun Sect suffered heavy losses, the Evil Faction did not have it better.

Ever since the great defeat that the Evil Faction suffered hundred years ago, these few years without exception, the Evil Faction disciples exerted themselves to make Evil Faction prosperous. Even to this day, the combined strength of the Evil Faction four great branches had already exceeded any of the Good Faction three great sects. Unexpectedly at the battle today, disregarding Reverend DaoXuan's act of activating Zhu Xian Sword Formation in the later part, the initial part in Crystal Hall, there were already several who perished together with Qing Yun Sect elders and afterwards there were even a dozen or more who died under Zhu Xian Sword Formation. All four of the great sects lost many of their disciples and suffered heavy losses.

Right now Taoist Cang Song, because of his special status, had also came to stand with them.

YuYang Zi's character was haughty and angried on the casualties suffered by his sect, coldly stared at him, turned and walked away, not giving him any face at all.

Taoist Cang Song's expression slightly changed but on the contrary, it was Ghost King who shrewd and deep with at least good self-cultivation, actually laughed and said, "Taoist Cang Song, your Qing Yun Sect might is indeed unfathomable. This Zhu Xian Sword Formation has even the ability that ghost and Gods will not be able to foresee, awesome, awesome!"

Taoist Cang Song shook his head and told Ghost King, "Ghost King sect leader, I'm afraid you still don't know, just now that Zhu Xian Sword Formation, it only display half of its might."

“What?” SanMiao Fairy standing beside exclaimed, Taoist Cang Song took a look at her and suddenly his mind was swept away. He saw only that beautiful girl’s frostlike skin, at that great battle before, he only saw her vicious attacks with expressionless face but right now looking at her, he suddenly discovered that under that frost expression, there was even more traces of feminine charms, seducing one’s soul, and for a moment he stood staring at her.

“Ke ke!”

God of Poison standing beside, coughed twice. Taoist Cang Song after all had practised for many years, immediately he came to his senses and realized that this SanMiao Fairy as HeHuan Sect’s leader, would have bewitching skills without revealing any traces. She absolutely must not be compared to ordinary gorgeous women.

He dared not looked at SanMiao Fairy longer than he should and only said, “Although I have never seen the full display of Zhu Xian Sword Formation but Qing Yun Sect ancient records had ever recorded that when Qing Ye founder was at his peak, with Evil Faction....em, with Holy Sect fight, he used Zhu Xian Sword Formation. Other than the enormous seven-colored main sword lying horizontally in the vaults of heaven, the other six-colored energy swords, each neatly positioned in according to the location of the six valley peaks and their perimeter extremely wide, surrounding the entire Qing Yun seven giant peaks and the swords that rained down were even more powerful. Not the ones that we barely could block off today!”

Ghost King remained silent for a while, heaved a long sigh and said, “This Qing Ye founder of yours, is really terrific!”

God of Poison frowned and said, "So it can also be said, Zhu Xian Sword Formation's might is so great, we are not able to break it even in this lifetime?"

Ghost King shook his head, a smile instead showed up on his face and said, "I don't think so."

God of Poison and the rest together turned to look at him, and said, "Why, Ghost King fellow brother, do you have any opinion?"

Ghost King indifferently said, "Looking at the battle today, on one hand although DaoXuan could control the Zhu Xian Ancient Sword and activated Zhu Xian Sword Formation but it was obvious that he was doing it with an effort and Zhu Xian Sword Formation's power was reduced. Second, this Zhu Xian Sword Formation power is so great, it will consume a huge amount of vitality essence and spiritual powers, how can it be taken lightly? I'm certain DaoXuan right now, his old wounds will have a relapse and even if he is not dead, he is only half dead!"

"That's right!" This echo was instead not shouted by God of Poison and the rest but by YuYang Zi who had walked back, hearing those words he could not help but to speak out.

God of Poison glanced at Ghost King, his countenance suddenly changed and said, "Ghost King fellow brother, can it be that you are thinking..."

Ghost King interrupted and said, "That's right, I am thinking of going back to Qing Yun! At this very moment, this is Qing Yun Sect's, ever since from Qing Ye era, once in a thousand years, weakest moment. If we do not take this opportunity to get rid of our hearts' worry then when can we? Beside, Qing Yun Sect will never expect that after we escaped from the death trap, we will dare

to attack back, with this unexpectedness, it will be a total victory!”

The surrounding Evil Faction people, suddenly became speechless and their expressions changed. Even God of Poison, this refuse-to-die fool who had been through countless of life scenarios, was also stunned by Ghost King’s words.

Ghost King looked around and excitedly said, “Today is the excellent opportunity to wipe off our Holy Sect hundred years of galling shame, everyone has sworn a solemn oath in front of Wisdom Queen and Wisdom King with me, why not put in all of our best effort and fight?”

The Evil Faction people all looked at each other. These people obviously were not cowardly and weak but just a few moments ago, they had just escaped with their lives from Qing Yun Hill and now in an instant they had to go up and fight again. This courage and resourcefulness from Ghost King or should it be said as simply disregarding life and death, was really hard for people to accept.

After a long while, unexpectedly nobody spoke up.

Ghost King’s expression gradually turned ugly, finally he shook his head, sighed and said, “Such a good opportunity, you all...ai!” after saying, he heaved a long sigh, looking extremely discouraged and slowly walked back to his own sect people.

Qing Long, YouJi and the rest came up to meet him, Qing Long was about to say something but Ghost King laughed slightly bitterly and spoke in a low voice, “Not qualified to discuss strategic planning with, not qualified to discuss strategic planning with! “

Saying which, he sighed and said, “Forget it, we talk about it next time. We will stop here today, let’s go back....em, where is BiYao?”

Once the words were out, Qing Long and YouJi both trembled. YouJi had her face covered with black veil, her expression could not be seen but hearing her voice, it was obvious she was shocked. She exclaimed, “When we were at the Crystal Hall, we were fighting with Qing Yun Sect and BiYao told us both that she would go first to find you, don’t tell me...”

Ghost King’s countenance greatly changed, he urgently said, “I did not see her ever since I went up.”

Qing Long exclaimed out, “Don’t tell me she is still at Qing Yun Hill?”

On Ghost King’s forehead, beads of sweats instantly appeared. He immediately decided and said resolutely, “Yao er is my own flesh and blood, I will absolutely not abandon her and leave. I will go up to Qing Yun Hill now.”

Qing Long urgently said, “Leader, you absolutely must not, this, this, this really is...”

Book 3, Chapter 83: Past Sin - Part 2

Ghost King’s eyes flashed, in an instant thousands of thoughts went through his mind. He suddenly turned around and said loudly to God of Poison and the rest of the Evil Faction members, “Everyone, I have already made up my mind. In order to wipe off our Holy Sect’s hundred years of humiliation, I, Ghost King, will rather have my body smashed to pieces and my bones ground to powder

and not let down Wisdom Queen and Wisdom King. Right now in Qing Yun Sect, most are either dead or injured and furthermore Sect Head DaoXuan old thief is severely injured and near to his death, he definitely will not be able to activate the Zhu Xian Sword Formation. I, Ghost King, will now charge up, if I can succeed, it will be the blessing of Wisdom Queen and Wisdom King; if I am outnumbered, then let me die at Qing Yun Peak, someday in the nether world, when I pay my respect to Wisdom Queen and Wisdom King, I have nothing to be ashamed of!”

Saying which, Ghost King, without another look at the crowd, took the lead and soared up, and sure enough took off towards the direction of Qing Yun Hill. Qing Long and YouJi looked at each other and immediately followed closely behind. Following which, Ghost King Sect disciples even more without a word, followed after, leaving the dumbstruck God of Poison and the rest of the Evil Faction main crowd and troops, standing there looking as dumb as a wooden chicken.

After a long while, God of Poison and the rest regained their senses but they had not even spoke, clamour noises started to build up from the Evil Faction members behind them. God of Poison and the rest groaned inwardly in their hearts, turned their heads around and saw that across the different branches disciples, most already had indignation shown on their faces.

On Qing Yun TongTian Peak, at this moment it was shrouded under a heavy mood, a group people crowded around DaoXuan, quietly consoling something.

Lin JingYu and Zhang Xiao Fan stood aside and helped Wang ErShu to rearrange his attire and dusted off the dirt on his clothes. Wang ErShu seemed to have some recognition on the both of them and he stood there motionless and allowed them to do what they want, his eyes only looked at the Water Unicorn who was outside, hehe grinning foolishly.

Zhang Xiao Fan looked at him, his heart felt pained and could not help but to think back the past and gave a long sigh. Lin JingYu heard it, his his feelings were stirred too and he felt the same, he stretched his hand and patted Zhang Xiao Fan's shoulder.

Both of them looked at each other, both could see the grief in each other's eyes, for a moment they did not speak.

Right then, PuHong Master and the rest who had been sent to safety by Shui Yue Master, were also fetched back by Shui Yue. Looking at PuHong Master's complexion, he looked much better as compared to his pale face earlier on. Seemed like although Zhou Yin's Part from people Awl was powerful but comparing to PuHong Master's Great Braham Wisdom, it was much inferior.

During that period of time, PuHong Master had already progressively forced the strange vigour penetrating Part from people Awl out of his body by a big half. But even though it was so, PuHong Master still looked very weak, someone standing beside quickly pulled a chair over, with the support of FaXiang and PuKong, PuHong Master sat beside Reverend DaoXuan.

PuHong Master took a few gasp of breath and looked around at his surroundings. However when he only saw the rivers of blood, dead people and the battered hall, he gave a long sigh and put his palms together saying, "Amitabha!"

Reverend DaoXuan looked at PuHong Master and nodded his head slightly, gave a bitter laugh and said, "How are your wounds Master?"

PuHong Master shook his head and said, "This old monk still won't die yet but

instead Reverend DaoXuan should take good care of yourself!”

Reverend DaoXuan shook his head and sighed, looked far away and suddenly his glance landed on Zhang Xiao Fan who was standing outside. He seemed to think of something, turned and said to Tian BuYi, “Tian junior brother, ask that disciple of yours, Zhang Xiao Fan, to come over.”

Tian BuYi’s expression changed but he did not dare to disobey and could only turned and said, “Lao Qi, you come over, Reverend DaoXuan have something to say to you.”

For a moment the crowd was shocked, especially the Big Bamboo disciples. Zhang Xiao Fan was even more shocked but it was hard to disobey a teacher’s command so he had to brace himself and walked over.

After a while, everyone cleared an area and Zhang Xiao Fan, by himself, stood in front of Reverend DaoXuan and spoke in a low voice, “Sect Head.”

Reverend DaoXuan looked at him for a long while and quietly said, “Until now, you are still not willing to divulge your secrets?”

Zhang Xiao Fan trembled and felt that in an instant, everyone’s stares had concentrated onto himself, there were concerned stares, disdain stares but instead even more stares of doubts!

Reverend DaoXuan sighed again, unhurriedly said, “Zhang Xiao Fan, ever since you joined our Qing Yun Sect, have Qing Yun Sect ever mistreated you?”

Zhang Xiao Fan immediately shook his head, said, “Reverend DaoXuan, no,

there is no such matter. Teacher and Teacher's wife treat me very well..." when he spoke the words, Tian BuYi's body obviously shook for a moment, his face showing an extremely complex expression.

"But, " Zhang Xiao Fan's face contorted in extreme agony, two different kinds of thoughts battering each other endlessly inside his head and said, "But, disciple really have my difficulties, I, I cannot..."

"Speak!"

Suddenly a loud roar, like a thunder, shocked the entire place and shocked everyone. Zhang Xiao Fan unconsciously stepped back and when he took a look at the person, he was immediately frightened.

Giving such a loud roar, this person was not from Qing Yun Sect but instead was one of the four great Holy Monks of Tian Yin Temple, PuKong. PuKong, among Tian Yin Temple four great Holy Monks, was the most junior but his character was the most intense. During his youth in subduing demons and evil spirits, just by his Buddhism rare treasure "Buddha Golden Alms" in his hand, countless of evils were killed by it. Later on as he got older and as his ability to comprehend the meaning of Buddhism gradually increased, he then started to live in seclusion within Tian Yin Temple.

Today Qing Yun blood battle, PuKong threw off his prohibitions against taking life and used his mysterious Buddhism attained skills to fight the bloody battle with the Evil Faction. Right now on his monk robe, with blood stains everywhere, he did not look like a Buddhist holy monk at all and instead he totally looked like an evil spirit from Hell, no wonder Zhang Xiao Fan and the rest had a scare.

Initially Tian Yin Temple Sect's expedition to Qing Yun Hill had the punitive intention. The "Great Brahm Wisdom" which was never passed down to outsiders, was actually learnt by a little junior disciple of Qing Yun Hill, how could this be? And currently PuKong saw Zhang Xiao Fan heming and hawing in his speech, he was extremely incensed. On top of it, today he had broke his prohibition, he felt an indescribable feeling of distraught and could not help but made the Buddhism lion roar out!

Zhang Xiao Fan, after being shouted by his deafening thunder-like voice, froze for a while and still had not regained his sense. Standing together with Lin JingYu at the back, all the while grinning foolishly at the Water Unicorn, Wang ErShu, was startled instead and turned his head to look over.

A devil looking-like monk, with his body covered with blood, furiously staring at Zhang Xiao Fan and looking like an evil spirit that wanted to eat someone up!

In the Crystal Hall, in an instant it turned silent.

"Ah——"

Suddenly, a heart-wrenching miserable cry was heard, the scream coming from this battered Crystal Hall.

Wang ErShu had no color on his face, his whole face was as white as a sheet and his whole body was trembling, he shakily pointed at PuKong, shrieking, "Ghost! Ghost! Ghost! Ghost ah..."

The voice was so sad and shrill, although it was broad daylight now but in the great hall, everyone felt a chill in the air at the same time.

Even PuKong who was just in a rage, was instead shocked by Wang ErShu, became panic and with an unexplainable haste to try and defend himself, saying, “What, what did you say, why am I a ghost?”

But Wang ErShu behaved as if he was possessed, his whole body trembled violently, Lin JingYu who was beside, tried his best to calm him down but it did not seem to work. Wang ErShu then slowly shrank back and did not dare to look at PuKong again, his eyes closed tightly, obviously he was extremely terrified and he could not stop repeating, “Ghost! Ghost! it was he who killed somebody—don’t kill me, don’t kill me, me, me, ah! ahahahahahah....”

Suddenly, a haze silently enveloped the whole place, Zhang Xiao Fan and Lin JingYu both froze at the same time, especially Zhang Xiao Fan, somewhere deep inside his eyes, again a red light seemed to indistinctly emerge.

Stared at by everyone, PuKong, utterly discomfited, angrily said, “I do not know this person at all, what are all of you looking at?”

Lin JingYu slowly relaxed the hand that had been grabbing Wang ErShu, walked to Zhang Xiao Fan, without even looking at him, one would know that Zhang Xiao Fan was now exactly like him, using every ounce of strength to control himself but that heavy panting had already revealed the agitation in their hearts!

“Why, did, he, say, it, was, you?” Lin JingYu, every single word, slowly asked. His expression looked as scary as Zhang Xiao Fan but the difference was although his eyes were full of hatred but at the same time it still carried a sense of clear-headed.

PuKong furiously replied, "How will I know? He is only a mad man!"

Zhang Xiao Fan and Lin JingYu both changed countenance at the same time, most of the Qing Yun disciples casted sidelong glances and frowned their brows. But just at this moment, a Buddha name was heard, sitting behind PuKong, PuHong Master suddenly spoke, his voice carried grief and he quietly said, "Amitabha, the evil sin was sown, thus the evil fruit was bore. It's a sin, it's a sin!"

Once the words were spoken, instantly there absolute silence in the entire place, PuKong's body was like wood, after a long while he then slowly turned to face PuHong Master, in a rough voice he asked, "Senior brother, what did you say?"

PuHong Master's face was white, not knowing if it was due to his body's injuries or because he was guilty, his eyes were both closed and after a long while, he spoke in a low voice, "FaXiang."

Ever since Wang ErShu suddenly acted up, FaXiang had looked terrible and pale, his body shook and he said, "Disciple is here."

PuHong Master unhurriedly said, "Don't need to hide anymore, reveal to them ba! That year junior brother did wrong, today we must not again frame this Zhang patron."

A loud crash went off in Zhang Xiao Fan's head, indistinctly a voice was screaming and seemed to be grabbing and pulling at his heart.

FaXiang slowly walked up, looked at the countless dumbfounded faces and at

Lin JingYu and Zhang Xiao Fan, finally he stopped at Zhang Xiao Fan.

“That year, the one that killed all of the Grasstemple villagers at the foot of Qing Yun Hill, it was indeed done by one of our Tian Yin Temple’s disciples!”

“What!”

Instantly, numerous appalled, shocked, refused to believe, angry voices seemed to burst out, exploded inside Qing Yun Hill Crystal Hall, even Reverend DaoXuan, Tian BuYi these type of cultivated and enlightened masters, also could not help but to change countenance and Lin JingYu, had even drew out his Dragon Slayer Sword, rippling jade light.

Only Zhang Xiao Fan’s heart, suddenly started to sink for a very long period of time, so deep, so heavy, and after that, what surfaced was the ever familiar cold feeling, that heavily blood-scented vicious current, enveloped him!

Chapter 84: Blood curse

The accusing voices at last, gradually toned down. FaXiang did not even care about the others and not even a glance to the murderous-looking Dragon Slayer Sword in the livid Lin JingYu's hand, his eyes only looked at Zhang Xiao Fan, concerned and at the same time, rue.

After waiting for everyone to quieten down, FaXiang then unhurriedly continued.

“That murderer, was my third Teacher uncle, ranked as one of the four great Holy Monks, PuZhi Master.”

Once the words were out, again another flurry of commotion, everyone was completely shocked.

Zhang Xiao Fan's body, wavered once, and wavered again, he could not feel anything. It seemed like the entire sky had all crashed down, and himself, was only a very ridiculous very lamentable person ah...

That deeply engraved sadness on the recesses of his soul, right now it seemed to have evolved into an evil spirit, viciously biting on his heart!

After grief, what do you still have left?

The firestick slowly started to light up, green light drifted out slightly, mixed with pale golden light but all of these were unable to hide that layer of cold red blood light. The evil energy, never had it been such intense, as if the bloody scent which for the past thousand years had concentrated inside Blood-Sucking Orb and Soul-Absorbing, accompanied with that fury roar of despair from the countless resentful spirits and deceased souls, poured into his chest!

And in that chaos, FaXiang's voice in front of him continued to speak on clearly, "That year PuZhi Teacher Uncle came to Qing Yun, met with Sect Head DaoXuan and tried to persuade him to combine and practise both houses of Buddhism true ways together, maybe it could contribute and break the mystery of immortality, unexpectedly it was politely rejected by Sect Head Reverend."

DaoXuan was startled for a moment, then nodded his head and said, "That's right, there was such thing."

FaXiang continued on, "That day PuZhi Teacher Uncle left the mountain in disappointment and walked aimlessly into Grasstemple village. He saw that it was late and spent the night in one of the dilapidated temple inside the village. It was also that night..."

His voice suddenly paused, the great hall was silent and not a sound was heard, only Zhang Xiao Fan's breathing which were becoming heavier was heard.

FaXiaong arranged his emotions, focused his state of mind but his stare was always on Zhang Xiao Fan, said, "It was that night, PuZhi Teacher Uncle

suddenly discovered a black-attired man had intruded into Grasstemple village and was about to kidnap this Lin JingYu junior brother.”

Lin JingYu was startled, everyone turned to look at him at the same time, FaXiang continued to say, “PuZhi Teacher Uncle immediately came to his rescue but unexpectedly that black-attired man had ulterior motive, he appeared to have come to kidnap but in fact he wanted to deal with PuZhi Teacher Uncle, intending to take the Evil Faction evil object Blood-Sucking Orb hidden on PuZhi Teacher Uncle!”

The crowd was in uproar.

FaXiang continued, “The Blood-Sucking Orb was accidentally discovered by PuZhi Teacher Uncle many years ago at a big marsh in the west. In order not to allow it to further harm the living, he used Buddhism true way to seal the orb and used Tian Yin Temple’s important treasure “Jade Rosary” to further suppress it. But nobody knew how the black-attired man came to know of it and he first hid the extremely poisonous seven-tailed centipede on Lin junior brother and caused it to bite PuZhi Teacher Uncle.”

Tian BuYi was astounded and said, “Seven-tailed centipede, don’t tell me it was Cang Song...”

This time, it was Lin JingYu’s turn to turn even paler.

FaXiang paused and then continued, “After that PuZhi Teacher Uncle, under the venom poisoning, fought life and death with that person and eventually suffered heavy injuries from that person’s display of Qing Yun Sect “Celestial Sword Drive Thunder True Formula”, and almost died: But he too in the end, used the “Great Brahman Wisdom” to retaliate and injured him severely,

causing the black-attired man to flee. And during this intense fight, Zhang Xiao Fan junior brother had also arrived at the temple.”

Qing Yun Sect disciples right now could not look more uncomfortable. FaXiang continued, “Then after, PuZhi Teacher Uncle knew he was going to die but his life ambition was still unfulfilled, so he could not take it down. Just at that moment, he suddenly conceived a, a ... a wild fantasy idea, which was to pass down Tian Yin Temple supreme Great Brahman Wisdom true way to a disciple and let this very young youth entered into Qing Yun and learn Qing Yun true ways. The two houses of Buddhism true ways that was never linked before, could then be cultivated at the same time on a person and his life ambition could be achieved.”

DaoXuan Reverend sneered and said, “PuZhi was indeed remarkable, great vision and far-sighted, but why did he not pass down to a better potential Lin JingYu and yet chose this Zhang Xiao Fan?”

FaXiang paused for a moment and said, “PuZhi Teacher Uncle thought that Lin JingYu’s aptitude was too good. If he entered Qing Yun Sect, he would definitely receive attention from both his teachers and seniors and was afraid he might be seen through easily, so...”

Qing Yun Sect members looked at each other, Tian BuYi shook his head and said, “Remarkable, remarkable...”

FaXiang said again, “As such, PuZhi Teacher Uncle was also sincerely fond of Zhang junior brother’s simple and honest heart, so he passed down what had never been passed to outsiders for a thousand years, the Great Brahman Wisdom to Zhang junior brother. After that he was afraid that if the Blood-Sucking Orb was still on his body and in case the black-attired man turned back, it might fall into evil hands and thus handed the orb to Zhang junior brother to

let him find a desolate cliff and to throw down. But just that, “ When he spoke until here, FaXiang could not help but to sigh and said, “Unexpectedly Zhang junior brother was most likely nostalgic about the old ties and kept this evil orb with him.”

In the great hall, it was then everyone resolved one of their doubts, that the Blood-Sucking Orb’s origin was like this and how the Great Brahman Wisdom true way on Zhang Xiao Fan came like that.

By now, FaXiang’s face revealed a pained expression and he unhurriedly said, “If it was to remain that way, PuZhi Teacher Uncle was only acting recklessly. But nobody expected at that moment, something actually happened... Originally, PuZhi Teacher Uncle with his compassionate feeling for mankind, even if he were to suffer the torment of the Blood-Sucking Orb, he still wanted to use his own Buddhism cultivated skills to control this evil object. Unexpectedly after a long period of time, the evil energy of the Blood-Sucking Orb silently seeped deep into PuZhi Teacher Uncle’s soul. On normal days, PuZhi Teacher Uncle had his Buddhism power to protect his body so he was totally unaware but on that day when he was near to his death and had just left Zhang junior brother and the rest, walked into the village centre and suddenly thought, even though he had passed the Buddhism true way to Zhang junior brother but he might not be able to join Qing Yun successfully!”

FaXiang’s face showed his agonizing pain, even his voice was trembling slightly, said, “That moment, PuZhi Teacher Uncle’s Buddhism power was greatly weaken and was invaded by the evil energy. As if he was possessed, he actually conceived, conceived the thought to kill all of the villagers in Grasstemple village so that Qing Yun Sect, considering their orphan status, would surely take on those two children, therefore, therefore...”

“Ah!” Lin JingYu roared hysterically, finally unable to restrain himself, the Dragon Slayer Sword and his body chopped towards FaXiang, DaoXuan urgently

said, “Quick, quick hold him back!”

Without waiting for his words to finish, Tian BuYi and the rest had already stopped him. Lin JingYu’s cheeks were streaming with tears, crying bitterly and even under Tian BuYi and the rest restraints, he was still struggling, hoarsely shouting, “I want to kill all of you, kill all of you ...”

Tian Yin Temple PuHong, PuKong as head, all of the monks bent their heads, with expressions of shame, softly chanting unceasingly.

DaoXuan was silent for like half a day, as if even he also needed a huge amount of mental effort in order to digest this unfathomable truth, after a while, he suddenly said to FaXiang, “Just now you said PuZhi was near his death, then this truth, how did you all know?”

FaXiang remained silent for a short while, said, “PuZhi Teacher Uncle once made an acquaintance with an extraordinary person and received a pill of strange medicine, ‘Three days must die pill’. After eating the pill, no matter how grave your injury was, within three days it could evoke your entire body’s potential energy and preserve your life but after three days, even if your injuries recovered, you still must die. PuZhi Teacher Uncle took this strange pill and finally reached Tian Yin Temple within three days and told the events’ details to my honorable teacher PuHong Master. I was serving my teacher at that time and heard the story. PuZhi Teacher Uncle by then had already turned clear-headed and deeply regretted the heinous evil sin that he had sown. He couldn’t wait to die a thousand times to compensate at least a very small percentage and eventually passed away crying in a seated posture!”

FaXiang looked deeply at Zhang Xiao Fan and slowly said, “This was what happened. All of these things, were our Tian Yin Temple PuZhi Teacher Uncle’s fault and had nothing to do with Zhang Xiao Fan junior brother. Requesting

Qing Yun Sect Teacher Uncles, all of you absolutely must not blame him!"

Reverend DaoXuan sighed slightly, heaved a long breath and was about to say something when all of a sudden, in the quiet great hall, a quiet sound of sad laughter suddenly rang out.

"Blame? Who wants to blame me?"

This laughter was unfamiliar and cold, carrying with it an immeasurable hatred. Zhang Xiao Fan, who had kept his head down all these while with heavy breathings, slowly, slowly raised his head.

That pair of completely red eyes, looking-like blood and with it, a coldness that caused one's hair to stand, stared at FaXiang.

FaXiang frowned tightly and spoke in a low voice, "Zhang junior brother, you, you must take care of your body, what had passed let it pass! The future days are still long..."

"You! Go! Die!"

All of a sudden, Zhang Xiao Fan through his gritted teeth, spitted out these three words. Not one in the crowd did not turn pale, right now Zhang Xiao Fan seemed to have changed into a totally different person, his entire being emitting murderous aura and his face muscles were contorted, looking extremely savage.

From far, Wang ErShu suddenly exclaimed again, "Ghost! Ghost! Another ghost came!"

And this time, his finger, was pointing at Zhang Xiao Fan.

Everyone turned pale, PuHong Master, disregarding his body's injuries, stood up abruptly. The firestick in Zhang Xiao Fan's right hand suddenly shone with brilliant light, the Blood-Sucking Orb looked-like it was being revived again, green light shone everywhere, mixed with Soul-Absorbing stick's black energy, shrouded Zhang Xiao Fan within it. Even his face was gradually becoming blurred.

FaXiang hoarsely exclaimed, "Zhang junior brother, quickly throw away that evil stick, you have already been invaded by that evil energy..."

"Hahahahaha..."

Zhang Xiao Fan turned and laughed bitterly at the sky, his voice sad and shrill, "What correct path? What good justice? You all have been lying to me. For my whole life, I have struggle to persist, even if I was to be subjected to death, I wanted to keep his secret for him, but, what am I ..."

He stretched opened both of his arms, facing the sky and uttered a long, mournful cry, "What am I ah——"

This miserable voice, reverberated between Heaven and Earth, captivating everyone and eliciting tears.

The people in the hall, not one did not change countenance, FaXiang flew up and urgently said, "Zhang junior brother, quickly give up this thing, if not you are going to sink into the Evil way and be lost forever..."

Zhang Xiao Fan held his head high and faced the sky, as if he did not notice at all that FaXiang was charging over, everyone held their breath as FaXiang almost grab the firestick but unexpectedly in the mid-air a delicate sound was heard and a surprise attack by a stream of white light shot over horizontally. FaXiang was unable to defend against this surprise attack, a muffled groan was heard in midair and he flew back.

Everyone was surprised and saw a green figure flashed. BiYao appeared in front of Zhang Xiao Fan, facing the numerous Good Faction skilled fighters but her expression was stern with no fear.

Her eyes were slightly red, evidently she had grieved for Zhang Xiao Fan. Not even caring about the rest, she turned and grabbed Zhang Xiao Fan's hand, urgently said, "Xiao Fan, come with me, these people are beasts in human forms, they are all trying to harm you!"

Zhang Xiao Fan dazely acknowledged but when facing this girl, without knowing why, at this Heaven and Earth lonesome moment, the only place where he could trust, without conscious volition he grabbed tight of that warm hand and followed her!

But in this full of Good Faction experts hall, how could they allow them to be so impudent, especially after a while, many of them recognized BiYao as Evil Faction Ghost King Sect Leader's only daughter, immediately the pot exploded.

Today Qing Yun Sect had numerous casualties and it was all due to the Evil Faction, creating a huge debt of blood with the Evil Faction, never to end until death. Right now there were people already blocking the exit and there were even people shouting and asking, starting to doubt if Zhang Xiao Fan really had

relations with the Evil Faction?

Lu XueQi, QiHao and the rest turned pale, Tian LingEr and the rest tried their utmost to explain that Zhang Xiao Fan had just battled with the Evil Faction but this voice was so weak, in an instant it was drowned out by waves of raging voices.

After a while, the Good Faction in the great hall had surrounded both the young man and woman in the middle.

Zhang Xiao Fan stared with blood-red eyes, his body trembling slightly, laughing bitterly nonstop. He only felt that the scenes showing repeatedly in his mind were all tragic bloody scenes but it also seemed to be just a blank space, his entire life's belief, faith were all destroyed today.

BiYao was instead much calmer than him, grabbing tightly onto Zhang Xiao Fan's hand and stood with him, whispered, "Xiao Fan, don't be afraid, even if we are to die, I will be with you!"

Zhang Xiao Fan suddenly was shocked and his head seemed to clear for a moment.

But just at this moment a loud voice shouted over, "Who dares to harm my daughter?"

Shua a sound, Qing Long, YouJi and the rest of the Ghost King Sect members appeared one after another and surrounded both Zhang Xiao Fan and BiYao in the middle.

Ghost King looked at his surroundings, right now with only Ghost King Sect's branch strength, it was indeed a gap against Qing Yun Sect and Tian Yin Temple these two branches but he seemed unperturbed, clasped his hands behind his back, looked around complacently, turned and smiled to BiYao, "Yao er, take Xiao Fan and leave first."

BiYao nodded and was able to leave but the action of ignoring the Good Faction members, how could they indulge and also right now Zhang Xiao Fan's status was especially special, Qing Yun Sect, Tian Yin Temple these two great sects, would not let this person leave no matter what.

Reverend DaoXuan angrily commanded, "Stop them!"

Once his command was out, the Good Faction skilled experts who already could not tolerate immediately surrounded them, in an instant the fights started again in this battered Crystal Hall but the situation now was totally reversed, Good Faction had become the one besieging the Ghost King Sect.

Without much effort, Ghost King Sect was already losing ground, BiYao was still tightly holding onto Zhang Xiao Fan's hand, looking around worriedly but Ghost King was instead, still smiling and looking at the situation with composed expression.

The pressure from the surrounding Good Faction men were getting stronger, the several members of Ghost King Sect had already been cornered into a small circle and the situation was looking precarious, unexpectedly at this moment, sharp whistlings were heard from outside the Crystal Hall, strange rays of light flashed and the next moment miserable cries were heard incessantly.

The Good Faction were shocked and after a while, they saw figures dancing in

the air, it was God of Poison, YuYang Zi and SanMiao Fairy leading the rest of the Evil Faction three great sects over to support.

The Evil Faction skilled experts joined the battle one after another and the situation immediately reversed. God of Poison unhurriedly walked over and stood there, beside Ghost King who was looking at them with an expression of gratified, his eyes looking at the battle in front of him and with a smile on his face but his lips moved and he spoke quietly, “Old brother, you are indeed ruthless!”

Ghost King smiled slightly and said, “Old senior, regardless of everything, is willing to risk great danger for our Holy Sect, someday your name will surely pass down through all ages, for Holy Sect future generations to eulogize.”

God of Poison gave a bitter laugh, threw him a stare and cursed quietly, “Utter rubbish!”

With this big group of Evil Faction forces arrival, Qing Yun Sect strength were originally greatly diminished, Tian BuYi and the rest although were holding up with difficulty but one could not fight against the odds and were immediately pushed back, the situation turning dangerous by the minute.

Reverend DaoXuan witnessed the whole scene, his eyes looked as if it was going to shoot out flames. Within one day, the Qing Yun Hill which were sacred and inviolable, were being abused by these Evil Faction by their killings, it was Qing Yun Sect ever since their founding, the greatest shame and humiliation.

But the important thing was instead the situation below and in this period of time, he had made some resolution again and raised his arm.

The Evil Faction leaders of the four great sects by now had not entered the battle, their sights were all centered onto Reverend DaoXuan, one look and they knew that this old thief wanted to risk his own life again and activated Zhu Xian Sword Formation, how could they let him do what he wanted to, immediately the four figures like an electric power shot out, they unanimously leapt over to Reverend DaoXuan.

And at this moment, as if it had received some commands, the spiritual beast Water Unicorn which had been lying outside the Crystal Hall, suddenly gave a terrifying roar and charged in, its demeanor extremely ferocious. This type of ancient huge beast, in fact would definitely not be under any cultivated master. The sound of the incoming attack was swift and fierce, it would not be a joking matter if one was to be hit, Ghost King and the rest were blocked by it and in a flash, the Water Unicorn had already rushed over to Reverend DaoXuan's side.

It lay beside Reverend DaoXuan, opened its gigantic mouth and spat out an object, Reverend DaoXuan stretched his hand over to take it.

The Evil Faction crowd were greatly shocked, looked over and saw that it was really a long sword but right now there was no colour on it at all and seemed to be cast from some strange rare stone, the sword hilt and body were merged together and it looked like it was some ordinary-looking stone sword. And indistinctly on the sword body, veined patterns were everywhere and also seemed to be slightly worn-out, there was even a faint crack on the sword body.

So the Zhu Xian Ancient Sword looked like this and lying inside the Water Unicorn's mouth, this was something nobody thought of.

After a while, when the ancient sword Zhu Xian was in Reverend DaoXuan's hand, a strange thing suddenly happened, in an instant from the ancient

sword's body, an unimaginable blazing white light floated up, only within a short period of time it had completely enveloped the entire huge Crystal Hall, the crowd was appalled and one after another they stopped fighting.

But in that light, Reverend DaoXuan's body was seen wavering a few times.

Ghost King and the rest had already experienced it and without needing to say anything, they immediately pounced up. Tian BuYi and the rest shouted in anger but it was already too late to assist. Unexpectedly although Reverend DaoXuan's body was weak, his left and right leaning onto the Water Unicorn's body, his right hand that was holding onto the ancient sword Zhu Xian slashed down in front of him and in an instant the white light was like an enormous wave, toppling the mountain and overturning the seas, gushed over. God of Poison and the rest retaliated with their power at the same time, both powers collided and a loud boom was heard.

The Crystal Hall that was already broken by half, right now even the surviving crumbling walls also collapsed with an explosive sound, dust flew up everywhere. Ghost King and the rest unconsciously stepped back and their faces' expressions changed. The power of the Zhu Xian ancient sword was really unimaginable.

But despite that, Reverend DaoXuan shrouded within the Zhu Xian light rays, Pu a sound spurted out a mouthful of fresh blood but he disregarded all else and forced himself to float up to the Water Unicorn's body. The Water Unicorn gave a loud roar, bared its fangs and brandished its claws, and flew up towards the sky.

In between Heaven and Earth, suddenly it was left with only that Zhu Xian brilliant light, glimmering with resplendent light rays, flourishing increasingly. Accompanied with waves of hym and incantation chants, that extremely

magnificent seven-coloured energy sword, again appeared in the sky and incessantly cloning single-colored energy swords, the lights brilliant and colours vibrant.

Not one in the Evil Faction did not change countenance, God of Poison resolutely stamped his feet and impatiently said, “This formation might is really too powerful, we cannot use force to overcome the enemy, we will retreat first.”

Ghost King although he saw Reverend DaoXuan looking like he was on the verge of collapsing but he could not understand that even though this person was obviously severely injured, how could he still stimulated this kind of extremely essence-consuming earth-shocking formation? Just that once the formation had started, its might was no trivial matter and he after all, dared not used his Evil Faction disciples’ lives to gamble. He heaved a long sigh, flew up and signaled to his disciples to retreat.

Book 3, Chapter 84: Blood curse - Part 2

———

Inflatuation=Forbidding Blood Curse

(Inflatuation incantation mentioned in Part 5, Chapter 1 Sadness from mooy/Shuang Shang)

———

BiYao pulled Zhang Xiao Fan and was about to take flight when suddenly a figure flashed in front of her, it was Lu XueQi blocking in front of her and that TianYa celestial sword in her hand, blue lights were flashing. Lu XueQi coldly said, “Zhang junior brother is from our Qing Yun Sect, quickly release him!”

How could BiYao be willing to let go, she angrily replied, "Leave him here to be killed by all of you? Why don't you all kill me first!"

After speaking, without speaking more, Heartbroken Rare Flower flew out and attacked.

Right now Zhu Xian Sword Formation had already enveloped TongTian Peak, the sky had gradually darkened. Someone from Ghost King Sect saw that BiYao was fighting with Lu XueQi and immediately returned to help, the Good Faction also started to join in and once again the battle started.

Inside, Zhang Xiao Fan felt agony and he felt a wave of brutal cold-blooded thought screaming and shouting violently in his head, a feeling of destruction that wanted to massacre countless of human lives which felt terrible but yet captivating at the same time, flooded his mind.

The firestick seemed to follow its master's thoughts, red, green, gold three colored light rays took turns to flow but very obviously that red light was becoming stronger.

FaXiang was watching from the side and felt alarmed. Ever since he saw Zhang Xiao Fan at Kongsang Mountain, because of that secret, he had viewed Zhang Xiao Fan in a new light and right now whatever happened, he did not wish for Zhang Xiao Fan to sink into the Evil Faction, in a flash he leapt towards Zhang Xiao Fan to grab that firestick.

BiYao panicked but was tangled with Lu XueQi and the rest, she could only urgently cried out, "Xiao Fan, watch out!"

Unexpectedly Zhang Xiao Fan seemed not to have heard and allowed FaXiang to grab the firestick. FaXiang was delighted but in the next moment expression on his face changed greatly, he felt the firestick's ferocious vicious current gushed over like tidewater and Zhang Xiao Fan, who had always been simple and honest, in front of him, he suddenly revealed a hideous grin, like an evil spirit grinning hideously.

"Ah!" FaXiang cried out loudly, he was hit heavily on his chest with a blow from Zhang Xiao Fan using his firestick, sprayed out a mouthful of fresh blood and was thrown back.

Zhang Xiao Fan let out a long howl towards the sky, his eyes bright red. He jumped into the battle and made his way to BiYao. The firestick glowed brilliantly with red light, it seemed to be rejoicing, together with its owner laughing wildly and diving towards death and fresh blood.

Lu XueQi and the rest, one after another, tried to avoid, no matter what, they could not use their full strength against Zhang Xiao Fan. But the Zhang Xiao Fan right now seemed to have already sank into craziness, his eyes filled with immeasurable hatred, every stroke of his was fatal, in a short while he had already forced the crowd back.

BiYao was extremely delighted, she pulled Zhang Xiao Fan and said, "Let's go!"

Their bodies soared up and flew towards the exit.

And at that time in the horizon, the number of energy swords were like mountains and seas and Zhu Xian Sword Formation had already started

attacking the Evil Faction. And this time, Reverend DaoXuan seemed to give all out, not only the rain of swords fell down sharply, that enormous seven-colored main sword in the sky was also manipulated by that invisible incantation, carrying with it the power to split the Heaven and break the Earth, charged down rumbling.

This sword formation main sword's might, how could it be taken lightly, one sword attacked down, in an instant within an area of several zhang, blood and flesh flew everywhere, close to ten people were killed without even the time to scream and even the extent of the remnant force, YuYang Zi was unable to avoid in time and his left hand was cut off. Immediately he cried out miserably, like a bolt of electricity, his figure escaped in a flash.

And at the same time, Reverend DaoXuan who was in the air, was also spent. His body tilted and almost fell from the Water Unicorn, after much difficulty he managed to hold on. He looked down, in just a short period time, almost half of the Evil Faction people had fled but there were still a few at TongTian Peak and the last person in it was Zhang Xiao Fan, BiYao was pulling him and leaving in a haste.

When DaoXuan was in the mid-air, he had already seen Zhang Xiao Fan sank into the evil way, when he was fighting with FaXiang, Lu XueQi and the rest, his attacks were ruthless and heartless, moreover his demeanour right now was deranged, clearly he absolutely could not be reason with.

But in this person, both Qing Yun Sect and Tian Yin Temple two great true ways skills were in him, and furthermore in his hand, an extraordinary evil object. If they let a tiger return to the mountain, he might in the future, turned into a deadly evil, far surpassing an ordinary Evil Faction person.

DaoXuan sighed quietly in his heart but he had made up his mind in that short

moment. Even if in the future he would be talked about by all the people in the world, he still would not leave this exceptional time-bomb behind.

There and then Reverend DaoXuan gathered his remaining spiritual power, instantly all of the coloured energy swords in the sky shone brilliantly at the same time, especially that seven-coloured sword formation main sword, expanded suddenly by a big half. With a loud sound, it shook the Heaven and Earth, like an ancient God mad with rage from afar charging down, directly towards Zhang Xiao Fan!

“Ah!” Not to mention the people in Evil Faction turning pale, even the Good Faction, Tian Yin Temple and Qing Yun Sect members, not one did not change countenance, Tian BuYi and SuRu’s faces were white, Tian LingEr cried out in fear and fainted.

And at one side, Lu XueQi clutched her TianYa celestial sword tightly, her face white, even the TianYa sword in her hand was trembling slightly.

That shocking enormous sword struck down from the top, it had not even reached the ground where ge ge deafening sounds were heard. The ground of one zhang circumference around Zhang Xiao Fan cracked completely, violent winds screamed and shrouded him within, it was already an inevitable death scene.

Zhang Xiao Fan with his red eyes wide opened, his body trapped by that invisible sword energy and unable to escape. Unable to hold back the grief, indignation and bitterness in his heart, he could only look on helplessly at that terrible huge sword in the sky, rapidly descending with immeasurable murderous intent, opened his mouth and bellowed crazily.

“Ah ah ah ah ah ah ah ah ah....”

The cry shook the surrounding open grounds , Heaven and Earth changed colour, only that Zhu Xian strange sword, like a cold-blooded object used to exterminate the entire Heaven’s deities and buddhas, still coming straight at him mercilessly. It looked like Zhang Xiao Fan would soon become a deceased soul under the sword, with his body smashed to pieces and bones grounded to powder.

Suddenly, the world seemed to quiet down, even that Zhu Xian Sword Formation’s earth-shocking force stopped breathing for that moment.....

That once familiar gentle, fair and clear hand over the years appeared beside Zhang Xiao Fan, with faint, clear bell sounds, pushed him aside.

As if it had slept deeply for a millennium, ten thousand years, at that moment a voice quietly spoke, for one’s beloved lover, softly sang:

Spirits of the nine nether worlds, various celestial deities and demons, with my blood and body, offer as sacrifice.....

She stood in the raging storm, her slightly red eyes looking at Zhang Xiao Fan but instead on her fair and clear face, there seemed to be a faint smile.

That wind blew her light green dress, fluttering and dancing, like the world’s most poignant scene.

Zhang Xiao Fan’s heart sank down.

Suddenly, he opened his mouth and roared madly but was forced back by the violent storm; he leapt up and pounced towards BiYao like he was mad but was flicked back by that mysterious energy, red-coloured tears flowed out of the blood-red eyes, dripped past his cheeks.

That woman in the storm, spread opened both of her arms, facing the sky full of pouring swords, facing the enormous sword that had ravished the entire Heaven and Earth's might.

.....Three lives seven generations, forever in hell, only for love, never regret even in death.....

The violent winds suddenly changed direction and became an immense vortex encircling BiYao, that graceful and beautiful girl was pushed up by that violent winds up into mid-air, to face that seven-colours rotating enormous sword.

She at that moment, was the only illumination between Heaven and Earth!

After a moment.....

Countless blood-coloured vapours in a flash exploded out from her body, congealed into sparkling, crystal-like red jade and forming a blood wall in front of her body, at the same time above the fair and clear face, nine streams of indiscernible faint mist floated out and merged into that blood wall.

That blood wall instantly bubbled, like a passionate infatuation fire blazing ceaselessly and carrying with it all of its passion and despair to burn, exploded out incomparable magnificent radiance glory, going up against the sky!

Against that Zhu Xian main sword, collided with a loud bang!

The magnificent glory was so dazzling, nobody could open their eyes.

Indescribable deafening sound shook the entire horizon vault of heavens, the unstoppable Zhu Xian sword was thrown back and the numerous energy swords in the sky were thrown into disorder. And at TongTian Peak, the peak quaked violently, stones flew up everywhere and on the mountain, numerous enormous cracks appeared as if it was being cut, like the end of the world had arrived.

Indistinctly, a slender melancholy figure slowly fell down from mid-air.

Between Heaven and Earth, suddenly it turned silent, only a voice, heart-wrenchingly screaming crazily.

“No

Endless darkness shrouded the entire world, he was shivering in the darkness, not daring to move, not daring to face, not daring to wake up!

But, eventually he still woke up!

Trembling hand, slowly tightening and releasing again, slowly, opened his eyes, as if like this, also needed all of his courage.

A ordinary stone room simply furnished and plain. He got off the bed slowly,

not daring to think of anything, even the firestick beside his hand, he did not look at it again. As if receiving some guidance, he walked towards the door and slowly walked out.

A long passageway outside the room, quite a number of people quietly shuttling back and forth but regardless who it was, once the person saw him, would immediately stepped aside and lowered his head.

He vacantly walked, as if a voice was calling out to him. Very soon he walked to a corner, there was a big stone room over there and the door was unlatched. At the other end of the corner, a familiar sound was heard, like the tone of a person in his memory called Qing Long.

“Mr Ghost, you are the world’s number one remarkable person, I beg you on behalf of Wisdom Queen and Wisdom King, save.....”

Following it was a sigh, a low voice spoke in the darkness, “I am indebted to Ghost King Sect, it’s not that I did not do my best but what Miss BiYao used was our Holy Sect most tragic ‘Forbidding Blood Curse’, it was also the infatuation curse handed down since ancient time. This cruel curse will use all of the person’s essence, blood and flesh to activate it and then absorb the body’s three immortal souls and seven mortal forms for smelting. Only with such blatant disregard for everything else then it can have the power to go against Heaven. But the person that is using this curse will surely have his soul scattered and unable to reincarnate forever. I too, really do not have any solution!”

Qing Long’s rough voice said, “Mr Ghost, but.....”

That voice interrupted, “I understand what you are saying. That’s right, the

rare treasure, 'He Huan Bell' on Miss BiYao, did at that moment, forcefully absorbed remnants of one soul from the three souls and seven mortal forms that was forced out from her and kept it inside the bell. That is why the body of Miss was not destroyed. But, but this art of calling back the soul skill, had already been lost for thousands of years. Only thousand years ago in the foul place at the southern border, a short-lived black shaman tribe was heard of having this rare skill but had since been extinct. This, this pardon me that I am really powerless!"

Qing Long was silent, after a long while he then said, "But, but sect leader he, not eating and drinking for several days, now already again..... Mr Ghost, he has always respected you, you try to advise him ba!"

That voice slowly said, "Ghost King sect leader is extremely grief-stricken, after some time, he will naturally get better....."

Qing Long was about to say something when suddenly his body shook, as if he had discovered something and turned his head to look over. He saw that weak and pale figure, walking step by step to the entrance and then as if summoning his greatest courage, finally walked in.

Again silence.

Qing Long lowered his head and kept quiet, in the darkness, a deep sigh seemed to be heard.

In the stone room, on top of the white jade stone platform, a beautiful girl lay quietly there, as if sleeping quietly in a deep sleep. Her father, sat beside her holding her hand, staring foolishly at his daughter.

Zhang Xiao Fan stared dazely, his tears silently dripping down, both of his legs weaken and he finally was unable to hold up anymore, collapsed and sat beside BiYao.

That gentle and peaceful face, since then in his life memories, became an unerasable memory!

In the still stone room, an indistinctly sound of weeping in grief, a soft voice choked with sobs:

“Why are you so silly.....I still have not told you, in that ancient well, the person that I saw was you.....”

Qing Yun Hill.

Small Bamboo Valley.

Late in the night.

Lu XueQi stood silently at the peak gazing faraway but the night was icy cold, the night sky full of stars twinkling, as if ridiculing the common people struggling in the world of mortals.

Footsteps sounded, the familiar and respected sound of her teacher was heard behind her, “Qi er, why are you standing here again?”

Lu XueQi did not speak.

ShuiYue looked at her, suddenly sighed, walked beside her and quietly said, "You are thinking of that person again?"

Lu XueQi remained silent, agony suddenly appeared on her face and she said, "Teacher, it was not supposed to be like this, it was not supposed to turn out like this now!"

ShuiYue also seemed to become silent, after a long while she gently said, "This is all destiny Qi er. When you meet him again in the future, both of you will be the foes who cannot exist under the same sky, you yourself must remember this clearly."

After saying, she sighed, turned and left.

Leaving only Lu XueQi standing at the same spot, the mountain breeze blew over, she could only feel a sudden coldness over her body. Silently gazing afar, using only the voice that she could hear, she quietly said, "When I see him again....."

The night as cold as water, shining on her lonely figure.

Chapter 85: Ten Years

Ten Years

Black dark clouds hovered in the night sky, the gloomy canopy in the sky seemed to be pressing towards the ground, drifting down from the vaults of heaven in the piercingly screaming cold wind, the drizzling rain rolled over the vast earth.

Within the wilderness, no villages could be seen ahead and the ground could not be seen at the back, lush growth everywhere. Only an ancient path extended over from far away, and again all alone by itself extended out to a distant place.

Within the dark clouds in the night sky, a deep low thunder sound rumbled, the rain between Heaven and Earth gradually became heavier.

The earth solemn and quiet, other than the sounds from the wind and rain, everywhere was pitch black. Only on the ancient road, a lonely lamp burned, revealing a little light.

This is a little house in the wilderness, the owner's surname was Ho, a forty-

something middle-age man who was born in a town called Xiao Chi Town, which would take a day of travel from here. At this desolate place beside the ancient road, he built up a simple and crude house with his own hands and provided a place for the travellers travelling from South to North to have a place to rest and have tea, thus making a few hard-earned money.

Right now shopkeeper Ho was sitting behind the counter at his own shop, concentrating to hear the wailing storm outside his house. His brows frowned slightly and he softly sighed, this kind of bad weather, most unlikely there would not be any more customers coming in.

This small house of his was built between Xiao Chi Town and a big Kongsang Mountain, the ancient road in front of his door, ever since ancient times it had always been a road for merchants and travellers and it also led to a big city at in the further East area, a must go-through route to East ChangHe City, therefore there would be travellers travelling at any one time.

Right now in this stormy night, in this wilderness small shop, there was unexpectedly a few customers who were silently sitting in the gloomy, dim small house, avoiding the wailing wind and weeping rain.

“Pi pa.”

The lampwick in the oil lamp in front of shopkeeper Ho made some light cracking sounds and roused this honest middle-aged man from his drowsiness. The sound of the storm outside his house pressed in in waves, [Wu wu] like it was choked. It seemed like tonight those customers would not be able to leave.

As he was thinking, he raised his head to look towards the customers in his shop. The simple and crude small house had only five tables and three of the

tables were seated with customers. The table at the extreme corner sat one single man and that area was one of the dim areas where the lamp's light could not reach properly. That man sat there solitary, even his face was indistinct.

And the two tables nearby, one table was seated by an old man with an uncommon bearing and a young lady. Beside the old man's hand, a bamboo pole was leaning against the table with a cloth banner at the side, written on it "Immortal Guide" four words. Seemed like he was a Jianghu fortune-teller.

As for the last table, it was the table with the most number of people, merchants travellers who were travelling the same way, a total of four people. The corner behind them was stacked full of goods and right now it seemed that there was a young man among them who was softly berating the awful weather.

"Alright, don't say it anymore." An old who looked oldest among the four people commanded him, turned his head over and smiled at shopkeeper Ho, with a slight apologetic tone he said, "Shopkeeper Ho, this rain is so heavy and the winds are so strong, we still make you accompany us throughout the night."

Shopkeeper smiled and shook his head, this group of merchants frequently traveled via this ancient road and stopped over at his small shop frequently so they were also considered regular customers. He immediately said, "It is alright, it is a common affair for me to stay up throughout the night but today, ever since from daytime, dark clouds have been hanging over the sky, why did Sir you still hurry on with your journey?"

The elderly was stunned with what he heard and he and his companions looked at each other, he bitterly laughed and said, "Actually how could we not know that the weather is bad today but being away from home, we really have our difficulties."

Shopkeeper Ho made an “Ah” sound.

The elderly raised the cup in front of him and drank it down in one gulp, he said, “Shopkeeper Ho, the ways of the world nowadays are tough!”

Shopkeeper was shocked and said, “What happened?”

That elderly gave a bitter laugh and said, “Since ten years ago, the Evil Faction that had disappeared for a long time suddenly appeared again, I heard that they even had a big fight with those celestials from the Good Faction at Qing Yun Hill. After that for these ten years, not only was the Evil Faction not destroyed by the Good Faction, it instead flourished as the days goes by and everywhere we go we heard they are fighting and contending with the Good Faction.”

Shopkeeper Ho silently agreed, that elderly sighed and continued, “They fight their own fights and we commoners are unable to intervene too but just that with these fights, the whole world is in chaos, nowadays robbers and bandits run amuck and those that robs and plunders the houses are numerous. We who make our living travelling, are on tenterhook everyday, fearing that we will run into bandits which is why we are travelling in haste, unexpectedly we are obstructed here by the storm, troubling shopkeeper Ho.”

Shopkeeper Ho shook his head and said, “It doesn’t matter, you don’t have to be troubled by it.....”

While he was still speaking, suddenly a voice was heard from across that far corner, indifferently speaking, “So since you said it this way, this gentleman without a doubt, believe that all of the great disorders presently happening under the sky, robbers and bandits running amuck, are all caused by the Evil

Faction as mentioned in your speech?”

That elderly was shocked, without having the chance to speak, the fortune-teller and the young lady sitting at the table in front, also turned to look at them. That young lady's gaze was bright, her appearance beautiful and with light dimples at the corners of her mouth, looking lovable.

She suddenly smiled lightly and spoke to the elderly merchant, “This Sir!”

That elderly looked at her and said, “What's the matter, miss?”

That young lady softly said, “Sir, your face is thin with many wrinkles but the shape of your face is unbroken, destined that although there will be many twists and turns in your life but your life will still be considered safe and sound. Just that six points away from the middle of your forehead, there is a small scar, horizontal in the middle of your face. It obstruct your life line, wealth line and foretell that during your old age, there might be a big calamity. Looking at your age now, why not speak less as it will also reduce the sources of disaster.”

The group of merchants changed their countenance together, that elderly even stood up and stared closely at this elderly and youth but both of them instead did not have any reaction, looking perfectly composed. After a long while that elderly's expression was undecided, looked around at his surroundings and finally sat back down, cupped his hand towards the young lady and said, “Thank you Miss for your guidance.”

Once he sat back down, the small shop immediately became quiet. That mysterious guy at the corner also seemed to quieten down and did not speak anymore.

Just that this night was long and endless, it was really difficult to bear and after a long while, the merchants began to chat, but all they could chat was again that Good and Evil great battle ten years ago at Qing Yun Hill.

These merchants were just ordinary commoners, naturally they would not be at the actual scene but hearsay was created because of this. In addition, those Good Faction cultivated masters had always been very secretive so it was the best topic for these commoners to gossip about.

As they chat along, a few of those young guys' voices became louder, the rest of them heard it and began to pay attention to it.

“.....anyway, at that time Qing Yun Sect's situation was already in imminent danger, luckily DaoXuan the old immortal used his powers to create and lightly dabbed with his fingers, immediately a chi long lightning with thunder crash came down from the sky. I heard that loud deafening sound was heard within the vicinity of hundred of miles, this then made the Evil Faction retreated!”

“Nonsense!” Suddenly a soft shout was heard but it came from that unordinary bearing old man who was seated together with the young lady, everyone was surprised and looked at him, the old man was heard saying, “If DaoXuan was really that powerful, how could it be that the Qing Yun Hill battle, so many people from Qing Yun Sect died and even two of the seven branches leaders also perished. Numerous senior and elder disciples were injured or dead, you think those devils in Evil Faction eat nothing but plain cooked rice?”

Everyone was speechless, the young lady beside him frowned deeply and quietly said, “Grandfather, I had just ask them not to talk too much, how come you are speaking so much?”

That old man Hehe laughed, the face with divine demeanour suddenly displayed slight arrogance, he softly replied, “Xiao Huan, don’t scare me. I have allowed you to read my life fortune long ago and although my whole life I will roam around but I will have luck when I am old and destined to be safe and sound with my family to send me off on my funeral, hehe, doesn’t matter, doesn’t matter!”

The young lady had just sipped her tea and almost choked on his words, she coughed a few times and stared angrily at that old man, that old man instead was immensely pleased with himself and was not worried at all.

This old man and young lady were indeed the Jianghu fortune-teller, Zhou YiXian and his granddaughter, Xiao Huan, who travelled around the world. It had been ten years since the Good and Evil big battle at Qing Yun Hill and Xiao Huan had already passed her puberty and grown up, blossomed into a beautiful girl but just that she still followed Zhou YiXian to roam the ends of the earth.

Right now Zhou YiXian as if his addiction was stimulated, disregarding that this was the first time he had met those people, he pulled his stool and actually sat among those merchants and started to talk loudly and arrogantly regarding that battle at Qing Yun. Xiao Huan who was beside felt depressed due to his actions but could do nothing to stop him.

Zhou YiXian was an excellent talker, also he depended on his glib tongue to travel around the world. His description was vivid and lifelike, far exceeding those young men earlier on and even shopkeeper Ho could not bear it after a while and walked over. The crowd gathered around, listening to Zhou YiXian haughty described in-depth, laughing and recollecting about the past.....

“Ah!”

While listening to the exciting parts, the few young men exclaimed out at the same time, one of them could not help but asked, “Sir, couldn’t it be that you were at the scene too, how did you come to know the details so well?”

Zhou YiXian was stunned, following which he lightly patted his clothes, shook his head and sighed, “All these fightings and killings, already all along I do not wish to be involved, simply let those Qing Yun Sect juniors to handle it!”

Everyone was shocked and immediately filled with a deep veneration, unexpectedly at this moment, a sound of “Pu” was heard from beside, it was Xiao Huan who had spitted out the mouthful of tea she had just drank, coughing non-stopped.

Zhou YiXian gave her a stare and turned his head back, Hehe laughed slightly. At this time, a young guy sitting beside said, “Sir, then in the end that disciple surnamed Zhang in Qing Yun Sect, what happened eventually, was he really kicked out of Qing Yun Sect?”

Zhou YiXian frowned his brows, was silent for a while then shook his head and said, “I am not sure about this, the situation was chaotic at that moment, it seemed like that Zhang Xiao Fan had also fainted and eventually was snatched by the Evil Faction people. Since then there was no traces of him.”

The crowd around him sighed, actually Zhang Xiao Fan’s existence was a secret and was an important big secret to Qing Yun Sect and TianYin Temple which absolutely would not be told to outsiders but on the day that the secret was revealed, there were considerable number of people present, especially the Evil Faction members were at the scene too, therefore as time passed by the rumours actually started to spread around. Just that what Zhou YiXian was

describing now, was as if he had personally saw everything at TongTian Peak in Qing Yun Hill.

Shopkeeper Ho sighed and said, “Wondered how is that young man now?”

“How is he now.....” suddenly, again that mysterious guy who was sitting at the corner spoke, carrying with it an indistinct shift.

Zhou YiXian turned his head over and looked at that man sitting in the dim shadows, he said, “Why, this brother, could it be that you know?”

That man was silent for a while and unhurriedly said, “Of course I know but just that even if you are someone who once saw him, now most probably you might not be able to recognize him already.....”

Xiao Huan frowned her brows and said, “ What happened to him?”

But that man did not speak anymore, only made his own figure disappeared into the darkness.

The storm outside the house filled up the whole sky and covered the land, the melancholy seemed to have increased by a few degrees.....

Book 3, Chapter 85: Ten Years - Part 2

Kongsang Mountain, Thousand Bats Ancient Cave

Eight hundred years ago, here was where Evil Faction senior Elder Blackheart started the period of Blood Forger Hall's golden age, took over the command of the Evil Faction and intimidated the world. But as of now the later generations disciples were unworthy and the place became desolate and dilapidated, really pathetic.

And that Forsaken Abyss hidden in the depths of this Thousand Bats Ancient Cave, right now had been taken over by a large number of enemies that had appeared out of nowhere.

Using ancient seal character calligraphy strokes, like dragons flying and phoenixes dancing, "Forsaken Abyss" three big words were engraved at the side of an enormous rock, Blood Forger Hall's last generation of disciples were all gathered here, their backs against the enormous rock and if they were to retreat a few more steps, it would be that bottomless dark Forsaken Abyss.

And their numbers were left with only less than ten people, including Nian Leader, Liu Gao, Wild Dog Taoist etc, each of them with injuries and their faces exhausted and terrified. On the ground in front of them, several bodies lay disorderly, the black-attired men whose numbers were several times more than them surrounded them, each and every one of them had a human skull sewn on their chest.

Nian Leader breathed deeply, forced himself to calm down and was the first to spoke but suddenly discovered that without knowing when, his voice had already turned hoarse, "Various, various Ghost King Sect friends, we, Blood Forger Hall, are only a tiny small branch within the Holy Sect and have never dared to offend Ghost King Sect, don't, don't know Ghost King Senior why must he treat us like this?"

“Heng!” a sound of contemptuous snort was heard from among the numerous black-attired men, on his chest a golden human skull was sewn on it, completely different from the people around him, a black-attired man walked out. Looked to be the leader, he coldly said, “Nian Leader, the situation in Holy Sect today is already very obvious, Ghost King Sect Head had also sent out letters to you several times but you still are like the grass on top of a wall, today you deal with us and tomorrow pay obeisance to Chang Shen Hall, unless you do not regard Ghost King Sect Head in your heart at all?”

Nian Leader’s face turned pale, he knew that currently within the Holy Sect, with the internal fights for the top within the four big powerful branches turning more and more savage day by day, all of the small branches without exception attached themselves and often there would be rumours that they were exterminated by a mysterious person. And now that Ghost King Sect suddenly attacked in force, his years of painstaking effort and hard work to run and manage this Blood Forger Hall were almost extinguished in one stroke, plus the situation right now before his eyes was also quite obvious.

And really as expected that black-attired man sneered and said, “Nian Leader, I say it once more to you, Ghost King Sect Head today is a man of great talent and bold vision and the day that he will unify the Holy Sect is just around the corner. It is because our Sect Head think highly of you then that is why he decided to take in your Blood Forger Hall under his banner, you better not not know how to appreciate favors.”

Speaking at the last part, his voice was already filled with threats.

Nian Leader’s forehead was full of sweats, although the situation was clear and his tiny small Blood Forger Hall no matter what, would not be able to win over Ghost King Sect but could it be that the inheritance passed down by forefathers be ruined at his own hands?

The decision was really not easy to make!

The black-attired man saw the hesitation on Nian Leader's face, his face immediately turned cold and he suddenly said, "Nian Leader, I give you one word of advice, the one you are facing now is me and you are considered lucky but do you know who is the one leading the attack on Kongsang Mountain?"

Nian Leader's body shook, the black-attired man was already sneering and said, "I see that you have already guessed, that's right, it is indeed our Ghost King Sect deputy Head Ghost Li (translator's note: also have the meaning of strict or severe). If he comes, all of your outcome may....."

Halfway through his words someone beside him suddenly coughed lightly twice, this black-attired man's face changed immediately and seemed to have thought of something, his face also turned pale, seemed like even to him, this name also conveyed a deep meaning of fear.

And at this moment, a thick stench of bloody smell suddenly drifted in, without knowing from where did it come from, it suddenly filled up the entire big space. All of the black-attired men from Ghost King Sect immediately straighten and drew their bodies taut, the black-attired man that was leading also turned slightly pale, looking at him carefully, you could faintly see a slight twitch at the corner of his eye.

What kind of person, actually made him this afraid?

The sound of footsteps gradually rang out and seemed to be coming from the depth of this endless dark abyss, slowly walking out.

One step, one bloodstain!

All of the black-attired men suddenly like a flood of water, separated into two sides, creating a path.

Faint green light with a slight red color, lightly rippled in the darkness, unhurriedly moving forward.

The Blood Forger Hall members' faces all without exception paled, without any color at all.

Ten years ago, there was not Ghost Li this number one figure in Ghost King Sect but a rumour spread within the sect that after the Good Evil bloody battle ten years ago, Ghost King Sect Sect Head Ghost King took a Good Faction traitor into his sect, regarded him as his own child and even passed down the entire Holy Sect Classic <<Tian Shu>> second volume that was said to have fall into Ghost King's hands.

And this Ghost Li other than his skills had improved by leaps and bounds, his character had changed even more drastically, his appetite for killing and devouring blood had reached the stage where it struck terror into the Evil Faction disciples.

In the recent years, the internal struggle within Evil Faction had became more and more severe as the days passed and Ghost Li, who originally was a honest and simple disciple from Qing Yun Sect, suddenly became the first ranked warrior in Ghost King Sect, leading the Ghost King Sect disciples marching unhindered in massacre, exterminating numerous sects. The "Devour Soul Stick" (this name was given by the Evil Faction disciples secretly) in his hand had

devoured countless people's fresh blood, in addition with Ghost King's favourable treatment, he had very quickly become a, below one man and above a million, figure in Ghost King Sect.

And this man, ten years ago, these people in Blood Forger Hall had all saw him before.

In the crowd, Wild Dog Taoist looked over at him, the man who was slowly appearing from the darkness and carrying that strong bloody stench, as if it was diffusing out from the depths of his body.

Innumerable people stood in that area, yet not a single sound.

His face, still looked like as before, without much changes. The look of his brows was still vivid in his mind, just that Wild Dog's heart was instead, pengpeng started thumping non-stopped, as if standing in front of him, was not a person but a cruel mad beast.

"All of you....."

He unhurriedly spoke the first sentence, his tone calm and with a quiet sternness reverberated in the place, "surrender or not?"

Countless stood behind him yet nobody dared to stand near him.

The Blood Forger Hall members looked at each other, Nian Leader sweating profusely, even the wounds on his body did not seemed to hurt but just at this moment, suddenly a strange cry was heard, "Go and die!"

Everyone turned pale and only saw that in the next moment on the ground beside Ghost Li, a glint of dagger was suddenly exposed out and stabbed towards his lower abdomen. And the assassin with his hair dishevelled and his expression hysterical yet vacant, both of his legs were already chopped off by somebody, blood streaming down.

This person seemed to be a disciple under Blood Forger Hall, his body sustained heavy injuries and in his fear and pain he finally lost his mind, shouting crazily while stabbing towards Ghost Li. Just that after a short while, the mysterious green light mixed with bloody red light, sent out from Ghost Li's right hand, enveloped this person.

The bloody stench in the air, again increased by a few degrees.

The withered corpse fell sideways lifelessly, the Blood Forger Hall members' faces again turned pale by a few more degrees, a few young disciples' bodies started to tremble, Ghost Li's eyes instead were gradually suffused with light red glimmer, again he unhurriedly asked, "All of you, surrender or not?"

And that extremely ugly-looking black Devour Soul Stick in his hand (firestick.....) slowly also started to light up.

Behind him, all of the black-attired men seemed to suck in a breath of air together and at the same time stepped forward.

Unparalleled, horrible odor swept over like blotting out the sky and covering the earth, drowning all of the Blood Forger Hall people.

Suddenly, a loud cry exploded out among the Blood Forger Hall members, “No, don’t want, I, I, I surrender!”

Following this voice a young disciple ran out, leaving the Blood Forger Hall crowd and dashed towards the Ghost King Sect but subconsciously he stayed far away from where Ghost Li was.

This opening, immediately created a reaction, the Blood Forger Hall members you looked at me, I looked at you, time to time there would be people walking out, Nian Leader gave a long sigh, knowing that finally the situation was hopeless, laughed miserably and said, “Forget it, forget it!”

While speaking, he stepped forward from the crowd, the rest of them followed behind, he slowly walked towards Ghost Li and facing him, took out a palm-sized black plate from his bosom, engraved on the top was a black heart, presented it with both hands to Ghost Li, laughing miserably and said, “This is Blood Forger Hall ‘Black heart command’, Blood Forger Hall eight hundred years foundation finally this day considered the end.....”

“Rubbish!”

At this moment, suddenly a loud shout but that shout carried a slight quiver of fear, came from their back. Everyone was surprised and turned to look, in front of that enormous rock, there was still one man standing there and who did not follow them to walk forward together.

Wild Dog Taoist!

Wild Dog Taoist stared at Nian Leader breathing heavily but he still loudly

said, "Boss, when you brought me into Blood Forger Hall, we, in front of Founder Blackheart idol, swore a heavy oath, this, this life to be unswerving, you, you how can you do this?"

Guilt flashed over Nian leader's face, he lowered his head and quietly said, "Wild Dog, the circumstances forced us to do this, don't seek your own death, quickly come over!"

Wild Dog Taoist, under the stares of numerous people, especially that indistinctly effusing horrible red light pair of eyes up front was like penetrating into his heart, raising the hairs on his body and even both of his legs could not stop slightly trembling due to the extreme fear.

But, even in his trembling state he slowly shook his head and said, "Can't do, boss, can't do, you can ask me to do anything but to betray Blood Forger Hall, can't do!"

He faced the other party, looking vacantly and empty as if everything was destroyed, he softly said, "I have looked like a strange monster ever since from young and everyone despised me, even my own parents also threw me away. I was brought up by wild dogs, suffered extreme hardship and humiliation and only when I entered Blood Forger Hall, it was then my turn to bully others and I was able stand tall and proud. At that time I swore a heavy oath in front of our forefather, this life I am Blood Forger Hall's, no regrets even in death....."

The crowd was stunned, Nian Leader noticed that Ghost Li's expression was slowly darkening, his heart panicked, he had never expected that this wild dog who had always bully the weak and fear the strong, only cared for his life and feared death would now became like this.

But surely he could not because of one person, Wild Dog, and disregard his own life, at that moment he hardened his heart and said, “Good, you are great, then you shall hold up Blood Forger Hall by yourself!”

Speaking, his hand swang and threw over the Black heart command in his hand, Wild Dog subconsciously caught it but following which his body started to tremble violently and panting heavily.

Nian Leader and the rest submerged into the group of Ghost King Sect black-attired members, leaving Wild Dog standing all alone under the enormous stone which was giving off light, facing the numerous black-attired men and standing not far from him, that devil who was said to have an appetite for killing and devouring blood!

A savage stare looming in the distance landed on Wild Dog’s face.

Wild Dog felt himself had seen an evil spirit, if not for the enormous stone supporting him behind, he don’t even know if he could even stand. Just that, in this extreme fear, he still quietly used his quivering voice to say, “Kill me ba!”

While speaking he held the Black heart command tightly in his hand and closed his eyes, the cold metal plate seemed to infuse into his body, waiting together for the arrival of destruction and death!

Chapter 86: Long Journey

New Chapter - Long Journey

The surroundings were quiet and still, as if the only sound resonating in his ear was his own intense heartbeat sound, the fear of not knowing when death would arrive was like the bottomless icy cold sea, drowning Wild Dog in it.

He shivered involuntarily.....

Countless eyes watched this human figure, so very pitiful and lonely but unexpectedly he persisted, that trembling hand holding on to that Black Heart Command, still very tight, very tight.

That image suddenly felt a bit familiar, as if many years ago, that stubborn and persevering youth with an unknown persistence.

The red light in his eyes slowly faded, his arms silently waved in the darkness, immediately the numerous black-attired men like tidewater, gushed out and completely disappeared in an instant.

The sound of Wild Dog's panting slowly slowed down, in his heart he felt strange but still afraid, he slowly opened a narrow slit in his eyes but instead, without knowing when, he saw only two people were left in this place including himself.

The air that was filled with the bloody stench, also without knowing when, disappeared.

That person with his back facing him, stood at the edge of the Forsaken Abyss, silently gazing downwards, as if in that world's deepest darkness, it had a memory of his past.

A wind slowly blew over, the human's insignificant small body compared against this enormous Forsaken Abyss, looked so very fragile. A thought suddenly flashed across Wild Dog's mind, now that nobody was around, if he pushed him down like this.....

Once this thought was conceived, immediately like a fire burning it started to haunt him, burning until his whole body began to heat up and he could not resist not to try it. But just that although his mind was in a mess but his body, as if resisting his intention, stood unmoving.

Until that person turned around and looked at him.

Wild Dog felt a pail of cold water had poured onto his head, drenching him from head to toe.

"Just now were you thinking of pushing me down from here?" He indifferently

asked, as if the matter was not related to him.

[Dang!]

The Black Heart Command slipped from Wild Dog's hand and landed onto the ground. Wild Dog hurriedly picked it up, his face also pale by a few degrees but following which he stiffened his body, as if to give himself a boost of courage, he loudly said, "Kill me if you want, I, I am not afraid of you!"

This man who was addressed by others as "Ghost Li", coldly looked at him and said, "I will not kill you. If you die, Blood Forger Hall will really be extinct, I'm afraid Elder Blackheart under the ground would also die with everlasting regret." He walked forward, passing by Wild Dog and still speaking, "In the future, you will just follow me!"

Wild Dog was stunned for words, after which he loudly exclaimed, "You brought men to wipe out almost all of our Blood Forger Hall and you still want me to follow you?"

Ghost Li did not pay attention to him and continued to walk forward but his voice still travelled over clearly, "Your skills is too low and if it's not for me now, for Ghost King Sect to kill you, it will be your that same sect comrades who had surrendered to us, like Nian Leader and the rest, who saw that you have persevere on Blood Forger Hall, wouldn't it show that they are too shameless. They too will also want to kill you."

Wild Dog was speechless, sweats appeared on his forehead but when he saw that that person's figure was slowly submerging into the darkness, walking further and further away, he eventually with a stamp of his feet ran up with quick steps to follow up while loudly saying, "Humpf, I am not afraid of death

but to revive Blood Forger Hall, I have to make myself put up with it.....”

In the darkness, footsteps echoed, one after another, walking in this Thousand Bats Ancient Cave. Out of a sudden, as if he had suddenly thought of something, the person behind spoke, “Hey, Zhang Xiao Fan, why did you treat me this way.....”

His voice suddenly disappeared, in the dark depths, suddenly like a roar of an evil beast, a thick and heavy smell of blood immediately enveloped over. Wild Dog shuddered all over.

After a long while, that smell slowly dispersed and the person in front after being silent in the darkness for a long while, only then indifferently said, “That name, I have forgotten it for many years.”

Wild Dog let out a long breath but he really could not help but to speak again, “Then what shall I call you in the future?”

Without replying, that person walked forward again. Wild Dog grumbled a few words to himself, not knowing what was he cursing at but he still continue to follow.

In front of them, was still endless of darkness.

xxx

Qing Yun Hill.

This mysterious and mystical celestial mountain in the mortal's eyes, after ten years, was still like a paradise on earth.

The damages brought by the Good and Evil battle had already been repaired but just that the wound deep inside the heart, had it ever healed?

The big battle ten years ago, Morning Sun Valley leader Shang ZhengLiang and Sunset Valley leader Taoist Tian Yun unfortunately passed away and Long Shou Valley leader Taoist Cang Song betrayed the sect, other than Sect Head Reverend DaoXuan, half of the six main leaders were gone, it could be said that they suffered a big loss.

Morning Sun Valley and Sunset Valley leader positions had already been replaced with their respective elders, only Long Shou Valley which was the second biggest branch next to Sect Head's sect, because of Taoist Cang Song, were not able to raise their heads in Qing Yun Sect and after the internal discussion within the branch, they surprisingly recommended the younger generation disciple, QiHao, to take over the leader position.

And as if like a trend, among the various big branches in Qing Yun Sect, opportunities for the younger generation to show themselves increased, like Return of the Wind Valley Zeng ShuShu, Big Bamboo Valley Song Daren, Small Bamboo Valley WenMin, Lu XueQi, were already helping their teachers to do more and more stuffs.

However within the Sect Head branch, these past few years, Reverend DaoXuan had gradually distanced himself from the secular world and left the daily trivial matters to his favourite pupil, Xiao YiCai, to handle.

Behind TongTian Peak Mountain, Founders Ancestral Hall

Warm sunlight shone on the majestic temple buildings, making it looked solemn yet mysterious. In the ancestral hall it was still gloomy, the faint lights from the eternal burning altar lamps, the candles and joss sticks were still holding a memorial for the countless Qing Yun Sect's ancestors' souls.

Lin JingYu, at the empty ground in front of the Founders Ancestral Hall, alone by himself, with his eyes closed and sitting cross-legged. The Dragon Slayer Sword which was emitting dark green light rays lightly floated at the top of his head, producing green halos which enveloped him, flashing mysterious strange light under the sunlight.

His face appearance, the look of the naivety had already disappeared, in addition perseverance and vicissitudes.

Behind him, deep inside the Founders Ancestral Hall dimness, a pair of eyes quietly looking at him. After a long while, a figure slowly walked out.

It was that mysterious old man with a face full of wrinkles, he unhurriedly walked out of the shadows and sat down at the Founders Ancestral Hall's flight of steps, his gaze settling on Lin JingYu's body. After a long time he indifferently said, "That is enough."

The Dragon Slayer Sword dark green light rays responded and disappeared, Lin JingYu breathed deeply and opened both of his eyes, he stood up and turned his head to look at the old man, revealing a smile, saying, "Senior!"

The old man looked at his young face, a slight trace of smile emerging at the corner of his mouth and said, "Your aptitude is really good and also so hardworking, your improvement far exceeded what I have expected so much more."

A look of gratefulness flashed over Lin JingYu's face, he bowed deeply and quietly said, "Senior's great kindness and favour, disciple will remember as long as I live."

The old man gently waved his hand and turned but he sighed and said, "In a blink of an eye, it's another ten years. I have nothing more to pass to you and you also have been here in Founders Ancestral Hall to accompany me for ten years, today you shall go back."

Lin JingYu's body shook, revealing a stunned expression but that old man disregard it and only said, "The things that happened within Long Shou Valley branch, do you already know?"

Lin JingYu recovered his senses, nodded his head and said, "Yes, a few days ago, QiHao senior brother came to see me and told me a little."

The old man nodded his head and said, "Today I heard that the new generation of outstanding disciples in Qing Yun Sect are all gathering at TongTian Peak, maybe there is something. Just now there is also word from Sect Head, you should also go over."

The corner of Lin JingYu's mouth moved, looking at the old man, he looked as if he could not bear to leave. That old man smiled, a faint sadness seemed to appear on his face too but immediately it disappeared, he waved his hands and said, "You are already a grown man, don't have to do this, you shall go!"

Lin JingYu took a deep breath, prostrated himself and said, "Senior, your kindness in imparting your knowledge in these ten years is like a mountain, disciple will engraved it deeply in my heart, in the future I will use all that I have learnt to uphold justice and eliminate evil, to repay my alma mater and not to let down my life's aspiration!"

The old man, with a smile on his face, said, "Good, now go."

Lin JingYu bowed again, looked at his surrounding scenery and eventually, abruptly turned, straightened his body and walked forward in big strides, leaving this Founders Ancestral Hall.

The sun shone onto his back, it also seemed to be slightly dazzling.

The old man watched his figure, staring blankly, without knowing when behind him, another figure appeared.

"He left." That figure indifferently said.

The corner of the old man's mouth twitched, he unhurriedly stood up, turned around and looked at this person, this supreme leader of Qing Yun Sect.

"Many thanks." He suddenly said.

Reverend DaoXuan seemed to be slightly surprised, frowned and said, "What?"

The old man passed by him, walked towards the temple buildings in Founders Ancestral Hall, continuing, “Many thanks for allowing this young man to accompany me for ten years.”

Reverend DaoXuan was silent for a while, he too slowly walked into the Founders Ancestral Hall. In the center of the main hall, before the altar that enshrined numerous Qing Yun ancestors and elders’ spirit tablets, the lamps and candles flickered, causing the lights it had cast on a person’s face to be flickering in shadows too.

That old man walked to the front of the altar, took a brand-new candle from the incense table in front of the altar and lighted it from another candle, replacing the almost-burned down candle.

Reverend DaoXuan quietly watched his unhurried yet practised actions, suddenly said, “That year when I took a big risk, hid the truth from various teachers and elders to save you but you did not even said a single thank you. Why is it for a young man today, you thanked me instead?”

That old man did not speak and took a step back, placed himself in the shadows, his hand was still holding on to that replaced candle remnant. He raised his head and looked up, the Qing Yun Sect generations of ancestors’ spirit tablets, towering dignifiedly in front of him, sacred and solemn, like a mountain’s imposing manner, looked as if it could easily flatten him this tiny insignificant human.

He remained silent, did not speak and only continued to gaze like that.

Reverend DaoXuan behind him, could not see the old man’s expression at this moment but he could see that hot candle wax dripping from the candle

remnant, drop by drop, it landed on that withered palm and then slowly coagulated.

That palm, also seemed to be trembling slightly.

In the depths of the shadows, far far away, a faint sigh seemed to be heard.....

Book 3, Chapter 86: Long Journey - Part 2

When Lin JingYu arrived at Crystal Hall TongTian Peak, there were already several men standing there. Among these men, there were some that he was familiar with, and some so unfamiliar that he had only saw their faces a few times, he just knew that they were all from the same sect.

But without exception everyone there knew, these young people standing here right now were all Qing Yun Sect's outstanding young generation.

And within the crowd, none more outstanding than these two people, one naturally cold, distinct and beautiful Lu XueQi and the other one, now dressed in a branch leader's apparel and with an extraordinary bearing, QiHao. Speaking of which, the other branches' leaders had not arrived, QiHao was also the only leader out of the six to arrive.

QiHao turned to look and happened to saw Lin JingYu walking in and was surprised for a moment. And then after which he walked up with a big smile, with one grab he hugged Lin JingYu, took a good look at him from top to bottom, laughed and said, "Lin junior brother, aren't you at Founders Ancestral Hall keeping vigil, why did you come?"

In those ten years, Lin JingYu had always maintained the excuse of maintaining vigil at Founders Ancestral Hall to others and for that mysterious old man, he was someone from Qing Yun Sect past days of secrecy and hard times therefore most of the people would not know and right now naturally he would not say anything. He only smile and said, "Ten years have ended so I came out too, by chance someone told me to make a trip here, I didn't expect QiHao senior brother you are also here."

QiHao smiled and said, "Sect Head Teacher Uncle gave notice for all of the branches' outstanding disciples among the younger generation to come here and said there are important matters to discuss, I happened to be free so I came over to take a look."

While the two fellow brothers were chatting, a man walked over, his build was tall and big, it was Big Bamboo Valley lead disciple, Song Daren. Not seen for ten years, his appearance however did not change much.

At that time Song Daren with QiHao and the rest were considered close so therefore he came over to exchange some greetings, after a while his gaze landed on Lin JingYu, smiling he said, "Have not seen Lin junior brother for several years, you have became even more handsome and tall, I guess your skills have again improved a lot right?"

Lin JingYu bend his head slightly, smiled and said, "Song senior brother you overpraise me."

Song Daren was about to say more when a voice was heard from behind him, saying, "Ah, Qi senior brother, do you still recognize junior brother?"

QiHao looked towards the person who was speaking, smiled and said, “Zeng junior brother, even if I do forget someone, I will also not dare to forget you!”

The person who walked over was the most outstanding younger generation disciple of Return of the Wind Valley, Zeng ShuShu and walking beside him were the two beautiful ladies from Small Bamboo Valley, WenMin and Lu XueQi.

The majority of the people were all looking at that icy and cold Lu XueQi, only Song Daren looked towards WenMin. He [Hehe] with a laugh, WenMin with a smile on her face, gave him an angry stare.

QiHao and the rest had met WenMin and Lu XueQi before, Zeng ShuShu said, “Qi senior brother, that year when you took over the branch leader position, junior brother had committed a mistake and was being grounded by my father so was unable to come and offer my congratulations, please do not be offended!”

QiHao gave a big laugh and said, “Zeng junior brother what are you saying, as long as I receive your well wishes, it is enough.”

Zeng ShuShu smiled and nodded, he looked around and said, “Qi senior brother, this time Sect Head Teacher Uncle called us all here, not sure if it is for any big matter?”

QiHao waved his hands and said, “I don’t know the specific details too but I heard something happened somewhere in the West, Sect Head Teacher Uncle intend to send out our outstanding younger generations disciples to let them gain experience.”

“Ah.” All of them uttered a cry, most were quite curious and excited, Zeng ShuShu was also originally full of smiles but suddenly his face froze, as if he had thought of something, QiHao noticed it and asked curiously, “Zeng junior brother, what happened?”

Zeng ShuShu laughed bitterly and said, “Younger generation, outstanding disciples to leave the mountain and gain experience?” He gently shook his head, sighed and said, “These words, why do I find it so familiar.”

He and QiHao looked at each other, suddenly they both understood each other’s meanings, the four people that year, right now.....

They turned their head unanimously and looked at that beautiful lady. Lu XueQi stood there quietly, as if she had not heard anything but again as if she had hid everything deep inside her heart, that bright pair of eyes moved and looked over at Lin JingYu, as if it wanted to look for a certain figure but eventually, it still moved away.

Right at this moment, suddenly in the great hall the resonant tone of the bells started, everyone immediately straighten and after a while Sect Head Reverend DaoXuan, accompanied by Su YiCai, walked out. He looked at the crowd, smiled while greeting them and sat down at the main seat.

Everyone bowed, QiHao stood at the front, Reverend DaoXuan smiled and waved, saying, “Enough, enough, all of you sit.”

But among the disciples, other than QiHao whose status had changed and sat at the right-hand side of Reverend DaoXuan, the rest of them remained standing.

Reverend DaoXuan looked at Su YiCai who was beside him and said, “YiCai, you shall brief them.”

Su YiCai nodded and reply, “Yes, Teacher.”

He walked out, looked around at the crowd and in a clear and loud voice he said, “Various fellow sect members, today we invited everyone here is because there is one thing that need our Qing Yun Sect most outstanding disciples to go and accomplish.”

When he spoke until here, there was immediately a stir among the crowd, Su YiCai smiled and continued, “Recently rumours were spreading everywhere, saying that recently inside the big marsh in the West, out of a sudden there were strange lights shining into the sky and ceaselessly for many days, most likely a sensational rare treasure will soon be born. By right if the Heaven send out spiritual beings, only the virtuous person can claim it and we are also not interested. But after this news was spread, it was heard that the Evil Faction evildoers moved out in big forces to the West, intending to get a share of the action.”

“What?”

“Hateful!” Qing Yun Sect young disciples immediately with fury written over their faces, one after another cried out.

Su YiCai waited till the clamour was reduced slightly, smiled and said, “If this news was false then it doesn’t matter but in case there is really such a rare treasure and lands into the Evil Faction’s hands, then aren’t we playing jackal to the tiger. Qing Yun Sect have always lead as the world’s Good Faction leader therefore Sect Head Reverend had decided, to select the outstanding disciples

from the younger generation of our sect and to go together to the West big marsh, to uphold justice and eliminate the demons.”

Speaking until here, he paused for a while and suddenly with a slight mysterious air, said, “Various junior brothers, on top of it there is another important matter, it was heard that today TianYin Temple and FenXiang Valley also sent out their disciples to the West big marsh. Ever since that big battle ten years ago, everyone should know in their hearts, these two sects openly are in harmony with us but in the dark have been eyeing the Good Faction leader position for a long time. Hope everyone will not cause our sect to lose face!”

A wave of uproar in the crowd, at once someone shouted, “Sect Head Reverend please do not worry, I and the rest will never cause Qing Yun Sect to lose face!”

“That’s right, this time we must show the Evil Faction and TianYin Temple, FenXiang Valley people our prowess!”

Reverend DaoXuan smiled and nodded, stood up and said, “This trip to the West, there may be perils, in addition the Evil Faction is dangerous and crafty, all of you must be on your guard at all times.”

Everyone responded at the same time, “Yes.”

Reverend DaoXuan spoke to Su YiCai, “Then you shall make arrangements, try to move out early.”

After speaking, his gaze, with or without intention, looked at Lin JingYu who was standing among the crowd and then turned and walked into the inner

chambers. The crowd respectfully sent him off, until his figure disappeared. Su YiCai then turned around and divided the members.

On the other side, Lin JingYu spoke to QiHao, “How come, Qi senior brother, you are not going this time?”

QiHao laughed in spite of himself and said, “Lin junior brother, I can’t leave.”

Lin JingYu then realized, his face turned red and said, “Ah, senior brother is already our branch leader, I did not think of that.”

QiHao patted his shoulder, smiled and said, “This will be your first time venturing out to the world, it is indeed a good opportunity, I look forward for you to exhibit your martial prowess and make a name for yourself in one move!”

Lin JingYu smiled and said, “Senior brother you must be joking.”

QiHao smiled but after which his face turned slightly solemn, he saw that nobody was around and spoke quietly to Lin JingYu, “Lin junior brother, to tell you the truth, ten years ago teacher...Taoist Cang Song betrayed Qing Yun and in the end caused our Long Shou Valley branch to hang our heads in shame. Especially Rising Sun Valley and Sunset Valley these two branches disciples, they looked at us like enemies. This senior brother of yours, I, in this position, have been really very difficult, therefore I am really looking forward to your trip this time, to help our Long Shou Valley gain some glory!”

Lin JingYu did not speak and after a while he nodded his head slightly and quietly said, “Qi senior brother, I understand, do not worry, I definitely will not

make you disappointed.”

QiHao smiled, the tension on his face also lessened, he stretched out his hand to pat on Lin JingYu’s shoulder.

Just at this time, Song Daren walked over, looked at both of them, smiled and said, “Why, this time Long Shou Valley is sending Lin junior brother out?”

QiHao smiled and said, “That’s right, not sure who will be from Big Bamboo Valley?”

Song Daren [hehe] laughed and said, “Originally it was to be me, this good-for-nothing big senior brother, but later on my teacher’s wife find me stupid and so let my sixth junior brother, Du BiShu, to go.”

QiHao smiled and said, “Du junior brother has always been smart, with him in our Qing Yun Sect is like a tiger that has grown wings.”

Song Daren’s eloquence naturally was not as smooth and considerate as QiHao, after chatting for a while he was about to leave when he suddenly turned back and spoke to QiHao, “Oh right, Qi senior brother, my teacher’s wife recently missed my LingEr junior sister. After you return home, ask her to come back to Big Bamboo Valley and stay in a few days.”

QiHao smiled and said, “Song senior brother, you still do not know, this early morning before I left Long Shou Valley to come here, LingEr had already returned to Big Bamboo Valley. She said she missed her mother. Seemed like mother-in-law and she are really mother and daughter kindred spirits.”

Song Daren was stunned for a while and then laughed loudly, loud and clear, reverberating in this Crystal Hall.

Chapter 87: Old Places

New Chapter - Old Places

Qing Yun Hill, Big Bamboo Valley.

Misty clouds between the mountains, like a gentle white silk sash, softly shifting. The early morning air with dew still in it, together with the fresh crisp breeze, passed through that stretch of green bamboo forest, brushing against the Big Bamboo Valley summit.

That area of architectures with Observed Silence Hall as its centre, quietly stood still in the dawn rays, everything appeared to be that tranquil.....

Just that a sound of dog barking was heard suddenly, mixed with [Zi zi] cries, broke the silence. Da Huang, with its shiny fur, running over at a fast speed, Xiao Hui riding on its back, clutching tightly onto the fur on Da Huang's neck to support itself, at the same time waving the other hand in the air, looking very excited.

Ten years ago, after Zhang Xiao Fan went to TongTian Peak from here, he had never came back. Initially, these two animals became depressed, especially Xiao

Hui, who was usually active was melancholy for a long time. DaHuang too did not have it easy, it mopped around the whole day and not knowing if it was because he loved the food that Zhang Xiao Fan cooked, during that period of time whenever Du BiShu, who was replacing Zhang Xiao Fan to cook, placed out food for them, would definitely suffer Da Huang and Xiao Hui's howls and roars and after they had their meals, would most likely be looked upon with disdain and looking very unsatisfied. Poor Du BiShu also became depressed for some time because of this.

Just that time like water, leisurely passed, the memory of that moment also seemed to gradually fade. Without knowing from when, Xiao Hui and Da Huang again started to play at Big Bamboo Summit, having fun ceaselessly, just that even though it was so, in the deep nights whenever they were about to sleep, they always returned back to Zhang Xiao Fan's room, as if awaiting something.

Although for so many years, this room had always been empty.

“Si!”

Da Huang suddenly stopped in its track, the great inertia almost caused Xiao Hui to roll down from its back, luckily Xiao Hui's hand was holding on tightly and it managed to stabilize its body. Da Huang barked loudly, suddenly turned its head back but instead it opened its mouth and rolled out its old long tongue, to chase its own tail, its body turning round and round at the same spot.

Xiao Hui sat securely at its back, grinned and loudly, [Zi zi] laughed, looking very excited and happy. This boring game done endless times by Da Huang but to them, it was as if it was the most interesting game.

The faint dawn lights shone on their bodies, the Big Bamboo Valley

reverberated with the two animals' sounds, the humans were still deep asleep, this excellent timing seemed to be only for them.

Far away, at the back of the hill that verdant bamboo forest, indistinctly the sound of bamboo leaves being brushed by the mountain breeze [Hua hua] leisurely reverberated, even wind that was blowing from that direction, also carried faint scent of the bamboo leaves and the smell of that bamboo forest.

Suddenly!

Da Huang stopped chasing its own tail, Xiao Hui on its back also seemed to lift up its head at the same time, opened its mouth wide and looked towards that stretch of bamboo forest.

Green Hill, green bamboos, wind passing, like sea.....

Rustle, rustle, rustle.....

“Zi zi zi zi!” Xiao Hui suddenly shrieked, Da Huang's reaction also seemed to be strange, just that its voice was much softer and barked a few times but after a while, the two animals seemed to know something, Xiao Hui grabbed tight of Da Huang and Da Huang immediately spread out its legs and swiftly ran towards that black bamboo forest at the back of the mountain.

The familiar small path at the back of the mountain, maybe it was because nobody came here to practised their homework for a long time, the trees and grasses had overgrown until the original small path was gradually fading but Da Huang as if it had natural intuitive, traversed through the forest, running faster and faster and very soon it had reached the front of that stretch of bamboo

forest.

Inside the verdant bamboo forest, serene with a trace of mystery, Da Huang stopped outside the bamboo forest and softly called out [Wu wu] a few times, Xiao Hui jumped down from its back and squatted aside, looked at him and looked deep into the bamboo forest, at times using its hands to scratch its head, as if it had some hesitation.

But after a while eventually Xiao Hui made up its mind, it [Zi zi] called out twice to Da Huang and took the lead to walk into the forest. To say it actually walked also did not seemed to be correct too but Xiao Hui strangely did not climb up the bamboos and instead used its front limbs as support on the ground, leap by leap slowly went in, looking at Xiao Hui, it seemed to be careful but yet full of anticipation.

Da Huang [Wu wu] called out twice and also started to stride out, following behind it and walked into this bamboo forest.

One monkey one dog, slowly traversing in this peaceful bamboo forest, very quickly their figures soon disappeared.

The morning rays were blocked by the thickly grown bamboo leaves but from in-between the slits, there were still streams of sunlight, channeling into light beams as big as fingers and shone down from the top of the bamboo forest, down onto the ground below.

Xiao Hui and Da Huang slowly walked along in the forest, walking along... unknowingly, they had reached a certain place in the deep of the bamboo forest, there was a small clearing which seemed familiar. Vaguely in the memory, it seemed to be the place that when Zhang Xiao Fan first came here,

working hard to chop down the bamboos.

Xiao Hui stopped its steps, squatted at the clearing and using its hands to scratch its head, looked around.

In the deep and serene bamboo forest, everywhere was quiet.

As if there was an unknown scent, lingering here.

Causing heartbeat to slowly increase.....

“Pu!” a light footstep sound, stepped into this deep forest silence.

Xiao Hui and Da Huang both turned at the same time, that person’s figure, behind a thick bamboo, slowly appeared.

The bamboo forest suddenly quieted down again but after a moment, suddenly there were sounds of cheers, Xiao Hui jumped up, its body changed into a grey streak of light and dashed over, jumped into the mid-air and leaped into that person’s embrace!

It grabbed that person’s clothes tightly, laughing heartily loudly, without any care releasing all of its delight, [Zi zi zi zi] laughing ceaselessly.

That person encircled his hands, the once cruel aura right now had disappeared, on his forehead a long time not seen gentleness and smile, embracing Xiao Hui in his bosom. After a while, suddenly he felt another feeling, bending his head to take a look, a smile emerged at the corner of his mouth. He

stooped his body, gently caressing the now rubbing against his body Da Huang's head, smiling and saying, "Da Huang, have you been well?"

DaHuang naturally could not speak and only [Wu wu] softly called out, its tail ceaselessly wagging, using its head to rub against his palm.

At the corner of his eyes, as if a place where nobody could see, indistinctly reflecting the lights, "Only all of you, still treat me as before!"

He softly sighed and breathed in deeply, in this bamboo forest, the once missed familiar smell.

"Hua hua!"

Suddenly, again a flurry of footsteps sounds, it was instead Wild Dog Taoist who scuttled out from behind but looking at his worn robes being torn in a few places by brambles, one would have guessed he had lost his way.

Wild Dog Taoist's entire face looked jinxed, he looked at the past Zhang Xiao Fan, the current Ghost Li and grumbled, "Hey, brat, are you mad, if you want to die also do not have to do this! Here is Qing Yun Sect, what if someone finds out, even if we have ten lives we will also surely be dead!"

Suddenly, Da Huang, who was extremely docile towards Ghost Li just only, turned its head, the furs on its neck were all bristling and it bared its teeth, showing its obvious extreme dislike towards Wild Dog Taoist. In a moment, Da Huang howled and actually pounced over.

Wild Dog Taoist was shocked but looking at this almost-the-height-of-half-a-

man giant dog suddenly pouncing over, his heart first thumped and subconsciously he stretched his hand to grab hold of his own fang magical weapon.

Unexpectedly at this moment Ghost Li who was in front, indifferently said, “If you dare use magical weapon to hurt this dog, I will chop off all of your hands and legs. And then throw it in front of that Observed Silence Hall at the foot of the mountain.”

Wild Dog was stunned, he angrily said, “What did you say.....”

But he had not finished his words when Da Huang had already pounced over, the moment Wild Dog was distracted he was immediately pounced on by this giant dog. Immediately the sounds of dog barking and human’s angry cursing shouts were heard incessantly, human and dog somersaulted together, staggering and in complete disorder! Wild Dog Taoist and Da Huang both rolled to the back of a bramble far away, human and dog’s figures could not be seen but angry cries could be heard at times.

“Aiya! Damned dog, you still bite....hey, brat, you this bastard, still not calling this dog to let go, no, let go, ah.....damned dog, this is human thigh, not chicken thigh! quickly let go, don’t bite anymore.....ah ah ah.....”

Ghost Li turned a deaf ear to Wild Dog’s miserable cries, turned his head to look at Xiao Hui in his bosom, his face was all smiles. After checking carefully, after not seen for ten years, Xiao Hui seemed to have slightly grown again, the feeling of carrying it in his embrace also seemed to be heavier by quite a lot, even that scar in-between its eyes also seemed to have expanded much.

And Xiao Hui, after the initial excitement had passed, was still grinning and

like in the past, climbed on to his shoulder and habitually stretched out its hand to play with his hair.

Ghost Li quietly stood there and slowly walked outside, till the fringe of the bamboo forest and gazed out far. The place that was in front of the mountain was covered by the clouds, it was once his warmest home.

Lost in his thoughts, gazing deeply.

Not knowing how much time had passed, Da Huang proudly ran out from the depth of the bamboo forest, looked very pleased with itself, its tail could not stop wagging. It leaped beside Ghost Li, [Wang wang wang] called out a few times.

Ghost Li smiled, stretched out his hand and patted its head.

After a short while, Wild Dog Taoist staggered out from the black bamboo forest, his robe was again ripped in several more places and even a few more scratches also appeared on his dog face, as for the wounds on his legs, indistinctly it could be seen.

Right now he saw Da Huang lying beside Ghost Li, he felt a bit afraid and actually did not dare to go over, standing far away he angrily scolded, “Damned dog, don’t think there is someone backing you, sooner or later one day I will butcher you!”

Da Huang suddenly turned its head over, dashed towards Wild Dog Taoist and howled, Wild Dog was scared out of his wits and immediately took a few steps back but Da Huang looked to be scaring him only and did not chase over, it

instead turned its head. Wild Dog was then relieved but no matter what he did not dare to scold again.

Looking down at the foot of the mountain for half a day, the day's first thread of sunlight had already quietly landed, covering this stretch of green mountain with a blanket of light golden cloth.

Ghost Li closed his eyes and breathed deeply.

After a while, he turned around, stretched his hand to bring Xiao Hui down into his embrace, looked at Wild Dog and said, "Let's go!"

Wild Dog could not wait to hear him say those words, quickly walked over while muttering, "Isn't this asking for trouble! Just for one monkey, risking lives....."

Da Huang seemed to sense something, stood up and looked at Ghost Li, Ghost Li patted Da Huang's head, smiled and waved his left hand, a black stick flashing strange green light appeared, it was indeed that "Firestick", supporting his body, straight up to the sky.

Wild Dog was dumbfounded and complained, "Brat, where do you think this is! Has to be that arrogant even when leaving....."

He was grumbling to himself when suddenly Da Huang howled loudly, Wild Dog was shocked and quickly steered his magical weapon, following Ghost Li.

In front of the black bamboo forest, Da Huang's solitude figure, barking loudly, unceasingly, unceasingly barking.....

Its mad barking, reverberated within the mountain, barking incessantly until a fair white hand stroked its neck, gently asked, “Da Huang, what happened? Why did you run here today, and even keep on barking?”

Da Huang seemed to be slightly agitated and breathless, it turned around to look at Tian LingEr, who had already become a young married woman and turned its head back again, barked loudly towards the sky.

[Wang wang, wang wang, wang wang wang wang.....]

Tian LingEr frowned, looked around at the surroundings and feeling a bit strange, said, “What happened, Da Huang? Oh right, where is Xiao Hui? How come it is not together with you?”

Da Huang, not knowing if it understood her words but it still faced the sky, barking itself hoarse.

Tian LingEr looked towards the sky but saw only blue sky and white clouds, the blue sky stretched endlessly and vaguely there was a piece of cloud stroked out from the cloud layers, galloping through the firmament, such a magnificent sight. Not knowing why, her heart suddenly felt lost, for a moment she stared foolishly.

With Qing Yun Hill as south, several ten thousands miles away in a desolated place, there was a high mountain, its name was “Majestic Fox Mountain”, it was the Evil Faction Ghost King Sect headquarters location.

In these ten years, the Evil Faction’s power was flourishing day by day, highly

skilled fighters were numerous but the internal fights within were also becoming severe as the days passed, it was even more intense than the fight with the Good Faction. The Ghost King Sect was originally one of the powerful branch among the Evil Faction four great branches, for the past ten years Ghost King leader had exerted himself to make his sect prosperous, using great skill and strategy and made Ghost King Sect grew in strength day by day, indistinctly it gave the impression that it would replace Wan Du Clan as the Evil Faction's biggest branch.

The Ghost King Sect as of now, for the earlier generations of highly skilled fighters, other than the mysterious four holy envoys appearing, there was also a mysterious figure, "Mr Ghost" appearing beside Ghost King, usually only human voice was heard but nobody was seen. But the attention that was most placed on, was the younger generations of the Ghost King Sect, especially the one that was regarded much by Ghost King, Ghost Li, was the most outstanding among them, Ghost King even did not hesitate to make an exception by making him vice leader, regarding him as his own child. Now everyone under the sky knew, Ghost Li would definitely be the next leader of Ghost King Sect.

In the Evil Faction, the internal fights were not only intense but they would go to any lengths, so many people had tried to sow discord between Ghost King and his this number one beloved fighter but all had failed.

And only for those mere number of people who understood that period of past, in their hearts, towards these two people's firm and almost unbreakable relationship, all instead felt sorrow.

The black veil gently covered her face, that mysterious black-attired lady-Youji, right now quietly sitting in the most important room in Ghost King Sect. The room was not very big but very cold, the reason for it was because in the middle of the room, a crystal-clear sparkling white ice platform was placed, vapours of cold air floated up from the almost transparent ice platform.

A beautiful girl, wearing her favourite green robe, lying quietly on top, among the threads of white cold air that was floating out, her face looked to be slightly pale, almost like transparent, cold and beautiful! Both of her hands crossed and placed in front of her body, in her palm, as if already joined to her body, was a small gold bell, flashing with strange light rays, as if it was gazing at this world.

At this moment, a low deep rumble was heard from the back, this room's thick and heavy stone door was pushed open by someone and shortly closed up again.

Footsteps sound was heard, someone walked and stopped beside Youji.

Youji unhurriedly raised her head, to be able to enter this room, there would not be more than four people in the entire Ghost King Sect.

Ghost Li's pale face appeared in front of her, her heart behind her black veil, slightly palpitated, vaguely she recalled, every time this man entered this room, his face would turn more and more pale.

Just that in this man's eyes, Youji totally did not exist, that beautiful girl lying there peacefully, right now, had already occupied all of his heart and body.

The stone room suddenly became very quiet, as quiet as death.

YouJi stood up lightly and retreated but her eyes still lingered on him. His figure appeared to be lonelier. As for the horrible bloody scent that frequently appeared around him in that outside world, it was totally undetected here.

Who knows, maybe this was the only place where he could have peace.

She took one last look at this man and walked out, taking care to close the stone door but then was shocked to see that Qing Long, wearing all white, was standing beside.

“What is it?” After being silent for a while, YouJi, indifferently asked.

Qing Long looked towards that stone door and said, “He is back?”

YouJi’s black veil shifted, as if she was nodding slightly, said, “Yes, he is in there talking to BiYao.”

Qing Long frowned and gently sighed. Actually all of them knew in their hearts, the so-called chat, was just Ghost Li talking quietly to himself, as for BiYao, whether or not she could hear, that was another matter. Just that this matter was too heartbreaking and none of them wished to talk about it.

YouJi stood quietly for a while and suddenly said, “Zhang Xiao Fan every time he comes back, the first moment he will come here.....”

Qing Long’s countenance slightly changed and cut in, “Third sister, as of now he has already been bestowed the name Ghost Li by Sect Head Ghost King, I

have told you many times not to use this name to call him.”

YouJi, behind the black veil, not knowing what her expression was but there was not a slightest change in the tone of her voice and continued to say, “..... but Sect Head instead has not been here for a very long time.”

Qing Long looked at her and eventually gave a long sigh and said, “These ten years, the white hairs on Sect Head’s temples, how much has it increased, I guess you should at least seen it? It is not that he does not miss his only daughter, just that he hide the pain in his heart.”

YouJi remained silent for a while again, after which she seemed to recall something and raised her head, she said, “The matter of looking for the black shaman tribe, how is it going?”

Qing Long shook his head and said, “The black shaman tribe was only transitory a thousand years ago, now we don’t even have a single clue to where do we go to search.”

YouJi slowly turned around and walked out.

This stone room that BiYao was slumbering in, naturally was in a extremely secluded place within Ghost King Sect, on normal days rarely anyone would come and right now in the corridor outside the stone room, there were only the two of them.

Qing Long watched the back of YouJi’s leaving figure and suddenly spoke, “You better stay a distance away from Ghost Li.”

YouJi's body suddenly shook, immediately she stopped her steps, her whole body seemed to tighten but after which she slowly relaxed, turned around and stared at Qing Long through the black veil, word by word she spoke, "What do you mean?"

Qing Long instead did not look at her, turned his eyes to look that stone room's door, indifferently said, "I know you feel guilty towards BiYao, feel that you did not protect her well but your unspoken concern towards that man seemed to have cross the line."

YouJi did not speak but this corridor suddenly turned even more icy-cold than that stone room, unseen murderous aura seemed to emit ceaselessly from that black-attired lady.

"Are you saying, I actually have feelings towards this young man?" word by word she spitted out.

Qing Long seemed not to feel any of the murderous aura in front of him, his expression also never changed and only slowly said, "Third sister, I did not say that, I only wanted to remind you, because of BiYao, the relationship between Ghost King Sect Head and this man has always been delicate. I have followed Ghost King Sect Head for many years and know that even though he treats Ghost Li like his own child but at times when he is grieved that BiYao turned out this way, I'm afraid he also feels some bitterness."

When he spoke until here, he turned his head back and looked deeply at YouJi, softly said, "Third sister, you better look out for yourself."

YouJi from afar, coldly snorted and suddenly said, "I don't know what you are talking about!" turned around and walked off.

Qing Long gave a bitter laugh, shook his head and sighed softly.

Inside the stone room.

Ghost Li sat beside BiYao, gazed at that beautiful yet slightly pale face and softly said, “I am back, BiYao.”

.....

“During this trip, I helped your father eliminated another branch, it was that Blood Forger Hall that we met in the beginning, you should still remember right?”

.....

“I don’t know why but when it was down to the last man, I suddenly thought of you, remembered that we met there and I could not do it. BiYao, will you blame me?”

.....

“A few days ago, I sneaked past the sentry and secretly went up the Big Bamboo Valley summit, at the same time I brought Xiao Hui back. Have you seen Xiao Hui? It is that monkey that I raised since young.....”

.....

“I went to the Black Bamboo Forest, you guess what did I see?”

.....

“Actually that piece of black bamboo that had fell onto the ground was still lying there. BiYao, do you still remember? That piece of bamboo that both of us sat together.....”

.....

“Actually, nothing has changed, BiYao.”

.....

“BiYao.....” He softly chanted, in a voice that indistinctly choked with sobs, resounded in this stone room.

-end of chapter-

Chapter 88: Big Wang village

there are in total 8 books, 11 chapters more for this book.

Big Wang Village (Big Wang could also mean King)

White hairs growing on the temples, years flowed like water!

Ghost King turned his attention away from the mirror-like water surface, sighed slightly and turned his head around, smiled and said, “I have not look at a mirror for a long time, today I take a look and saw that my white hair has grown out quite a few.”

Standing behind him, Ghost Li, without expression, indifferently said, “You worry too much.”

At this moment, at a small lakeside in Majestic Fox Mountain, a stone pavilion was built in the heart of the lake and only an ancient wooden bridge connected it to the lake shore. Right now Ghost King and Ghost Li stood in the middle of this stone pavilion.

Ghost King clasped his hands behind his back and with a composed

expression, said, "I heard about your recent trip to KongSang Mountain, although Blood Forger Hall was subdued but the remaining last person that refused to surrender, Wild Dog Taoist, you took him in instead, is there such thing?"

Ghost Li looked at Ghost King but saw that his face expression was calm and did not know what he was thinking in his heart, he immediately nodded slightly and said, "That's right."

Ghost King smiled, turned around to look at the lake surface that was as dark-green as jade, indifferently said, "In the past when you led men to attack, you have always leave almost no man standing, why did you instead grant mercy towards this person?"

Ghost Li was silent for a while and said, "The Blood Forger Hall today although is on the decline but eight hundred years ago it was the de facto ruling group for a period of time, far more than a small branch."

Ghost King stood there and did not seem to have any reaction, and also did not show if he was satisfied or not satisfied with this explanation. After a long while, he suddenly spoke, "Speaking of which, the magical weapon in your hand, the Blood-Sucking Orb, it was originally Elder Blackheart's relic, seems like there are some lineage relations between Blood Forger Hall and you."

Ghost Li slowly raised his eyes and looked at Ghost King, Ghost King at this time, happened to turn around and also looked at him.

Both of their eyes, met in mid-air, Ghost Li's eyes were sombre and Ghost King's eyes, instead was calm and deep.

Ghost King suddenly laughed and said, “Recently it was heard that a rare treasure was born in the West death marsh, do you know?”

Ghost Li nodded and said, “Yes, heard of it.”

Ghost King leisurely said, “Heard that not only the Good Faction people are swarming over, even Wan Du Clan, HeHuan Sect highly skilled men are also intending to get into the action. As for Chang Shen Hall, as their headquarter is located near the death marsh, they definitely will not give it up.” He paused for a while, facing Ghost Li he asked, “What do you think?”

Ghost Li did not speak immediately and was silent for a long while, Ghost King seemed to be extremely patient with him and did not show any sign of frustration. After a long while, Ghost Li unhurriedly said, “Since we have subdued Blood Forger Hall, other than the four great branches in the sect, the last branch with some promising potential has also been dismembered.”

A smile emerged from the corner of Ghost King’s mouth, he nodded and said, “That’s right.”

Ghost Li said, “In the Evil Faction, it has always been a tripartite confrontation at the top, the four great branches have always wanted to take over each other. In the past because of the external threat from Good Faction, they then worked together to fight off the external enemy. Of course now is the not same as before, and presently the power alignment in the sect is slowly lining up, the next step will be the fierce battle between the four great sects, just that we don’t know who will be the one to take the first step?”

Ghost King smiled and clapped his hands, saying, “Good, good! Well said.”

Ghost Li took a look at him and indifferently said, “Over these ten years, you have not only passed on to me the second volume of Tian Shu, you have even imparted your life’s knowledge, strategies, decision-making, one after another, if I still cannot infer on this then wouldn’t I be unworthy of your painstaking efforts?”

Ghost King smiled and looked at this young man in front of him, like looking at a treasured perfect object that he had personally crafted, in his joy there was an indistinct pride, he was heard saying, “That is not entirely so, the things that I have imparted to you will also depends on your ability to comprehend. These few years you have progressed fast and really far exceeded my expectation, initially I thought that with your aptitude, you would need to practise at least thirty years and more, unexpectedly you have used only ten years and attained such a big achievement, rare indeed, rare indeed!”

Upon receiving such praise from Ghost King, Ghost Li’s face instead did not have any smile, as if to him, this was nothing to be happy about.

But Ghost King also did not mind, these few years the person in front of him, from the initial Zhang Xiao Fan until the present Ghost Li, his past characteristics had all totally turned upside-down, other than his appearance which remained the same, almost the rest of him did not carry any resemblance of his past. He paused for a while and said, “So what do you think, in our holy sect, the war between the four great branches is inevitable, do you think that we should attack first! or quietly wait?”

But this time Ghost Li did not have any slightest hesitation, immediately he said, “Pre-emptive strike!”

Ghost King fixed his eyes on him and said, “Good! Then which branch do you think we should deal with first?”

Ghost Li said, “Chang Shen Hall!”

Ghost King frowned but there was already admiration in his eyes, he said, “Why is that so?”

Ghost Li said, “Currently Ghost King Sect and Wan Du Clan’s strengths are the greatest, HeHuan Sect and Chang Shen Hall are second. HeHuan Sect has always been low-key but Chang Shen Hall Hall leader, YuYang Zi, although his skills is high but he is proud and conceited and has always considered himself the main leader of that Qing Yun Hill Good and Evil battle and thinks himself as the ultimate supremacy of the Evil Sect. Such a fool, if not to choose him then who?’

Ghost King smiled and said, “That’s right, well said. If you were to lead, how will you move?”

Ghost Li muttered slightly to himself and said, “Now is the good opportunity. With the birth of the rare treasure in the death marsh, YuYang Zi will definitely see it as easy as reaching for it from a bag and will not allow outsiders to dip their fingers in. But since the Good Faction is coming in forces, we can wait for Chang Shen Hall to clash with the Good Faction and after both parties sustain heavy injuries, we will join hands with Wan Du Clan, HeHuan Sect on the sly to make our moves, this kind of throwing-stones-in-after-a-man-has-fallen-into-a-well move, they will definitely not reject. As such this battle will surely succeed!”

Ghost King looked at him and did not speak.

Ghost Li slowly raised his head, looked at Ghost King and lightly said, “What is

it?”

Ghost King seemed to stare vacantly at him, after a while he regained his senses and slowly withdrew his stare, as if he had sighed deeply inside his heart, he indifferently said, “Nothing, what you have just said and what I have thought, are almost similar.”

Ghost Li did not speak anymore.

Ghost King smiled lightly and said, “You shall rest for another two days and then proceed to death marsh!” After speaking, he took out a sealed letter from his bosom and passed it to Ghost Li and said, “I have already wrote the details in this letter. After reaching the death marsh, all matters and people under Ghost King Sect will follow your orders.”

Ghost Li slowly took the letter and kept it in his bosom, he remained quiet for a while and then nodded his head towards Ghost King, turned and left after that. But just when he had only took a few steps, he suddenly heard Ghost King said, “There is still one more thing.....”

Ghost Li stopped.

Ghost King’s voice was heard saying, “Between us, why do you still address our holy sect as ‘Evil Sect’?”

Ghost Li remained silent for a long while and coldly replied, “I have joined the sect for ten years, in here everyday is a blood fight, everyone is trying to outwit one another, scheming and manipulation are even more common, how can it deserve a holy word?”

Ghost King laughed loudly and then said, “O! Then the Good Faction which you came from, how is it?”

Ghost Li’s body seemed to tremble slightly, after a while, he was heard saying, “The wicked things that the Good Faction did, are no better than the Evil Faction people!”

Ghost King looked at him with interest and said, “This is not, that is also not, then in your heart what is it that you have define as ‘Good’?”

Ghost Li did not answer, remained silent for a long while and raised his head to look at the sky.

Blue sky, white clouds.

“I don’t know!” he quietly said, as if talking to himself.

After that figure whose back appeared to be somewhat lonely and melancholy gradually went further away, the smile on Ghost King’s face also slowly disappeared. In his obscure eyes, it seemed to blink with a mysterious light, twinkling ceaselessly, wondered what was he thinking in his heart?

At this moment, a voice was heard from the other side saying, “Sect head, I

Ghost King cut off his words and said, “Qing Long, come on up!”

“Yes.” Qing Long walked over from the wooden bridge, his eyes followed the direction where Ghost King was looking at somewhere far away and said, “Deputy head was also here just now?”

Ghost King nodded and said, “What is the matter?”

Qing Long said, “Wan Du Clan that old freak secretly sent his men over again, asking when will Sect Head be sending men into the death marsh and for everybody to work together?”

Ghost King sneered and said, “Go and reply them, after three days, Ghost King Sect and Wan Du Clan, HeHuan Sect will be entering the marsh together.”

Qing Long nodded and replied, “Alright.”

Ghost King muttered to himself for a while and then as if suddenly thought of something, turned his head facing Qing Long and asked, “Qing Long, what do you think about Ghost Li?”

Qing Long was surprised, raised his eyes to look at Ghost King but saw that Ghost King looked calm however his eyes were deep and bottomless, in his heart an unknown cold shudder passed through and for a moment he forgot to answer the question.

Ghost King smiled and said, “What is it?”

Qing Long returned to his senses but after which he pondered to himself and his expression showed some hesitation. Ghost King saw it, smiled and said, “Qing Long, we have known each other for many years, you can just speak your

mind.”

Qing Long shook his head and laughed bitterly, he said, “I shall say it like this! When I was at his age, my skills were not as high, shrewdness not as deep.....”

Speaking until here, he suddenly stopped, Ghost King frowned and said, “What is it, is there more, just say it!”

Qing Long hesitated for a while, looked at Ghost King and said, “methods not as cruel!”

Ghost King looked at him but did not say anything, he unhurriedly turned around and looked at that mirror-like lake surface. Qing Long, behind him, slowly said, “These few years, especially the recent two years, Ghost Li’s methods are becoming more and more fierce and vicious, killing people at the slightest provocation and is even more ruthless in the power struggle. And among our Ghost King Sect’s younger generation, the more outstanding ones like kill-the-living monk, swallow-returns etc, majority of them are all under him.”

Ghost King indifferently asked, “You think that this is not good?”

Qing Long slowly shook his head and said, “Not that, just that in those days he..... how exactly did he turn out to be this way?”

Ghost King was silent for a while and suddenly said, “Actually I too made a wrong judgement in the beginning.”

Qing Long was surprised and said, “Sect Head, what did you say?”

Ghost King said, “When I passed him the second volume of Tian Shu, I thought that with his aptitude, he would need at least twenty years to have achievement but in these ten years, especially the last five years, Ghost Li’s skills suddenly improved tremendously, it can be said moving a thousand miles in a day, just that he hides all his emotions, even I have never see through them!”

When he spoke until here, in the eyes which had been back-facing Qing Long all these while, a hidden cold gleam seemed to flash past but his voice did not have even a slightest change, “His character is persistent and steadfast, firm and indomitable, to use it on his training is really beneficial but I still have suspicions that maybe there might be other reasons.”

Qing Long frowned, said, “Don’t tell me he still has other secrets?”

Ghost king shook his head and said, “You should know he has Qing Yun Sect’s Taoism true way and Tian Yin Temple’s Great Brahman Wisdom?”

Qing Long nodded and said, “That’s right.”

Ghost King slowly said, “Based on my covert observations, he has not only achieve great progress on our holy sect’s Tian Shu True way, even in Qing Yun Sect’s Tai Chi Xuan Qing Way and Buddhism’s Great Brahman True Way, he has improved by leaps and bounds at the same time. These three sects’ true ways, don’t tell me subconsciously they complement one another and produce an extraordinary effect?”

He turned around, faced Qing Long, smiled and said, “With his current skills and in addition that rare magical weapon ‘Soul-Absorbing’ in his hand, even if

you have the Ring of Universe Clear Light, I'm afraid you only have fifty percent of success."

Qing Long smiled and said, "I'm old already, no longer able to compete against the young people."

Ghost King suddenly laughed loudly, stretched out his hand to pat his shoulder and said, "There is no such thing". He smiled while speaking unhurriedly, "During that time I foresaw that this youth would definitely not be a sedentary animal in the pool and today his achievement has even far exceeded my expectation. If Ghost King Sect was to be handed over to him, in the days to come the future will definitely be full of boundless prospects, just that"

Ghost King clasped his hands behind his back and suddenly stopped speaking, walked to the side of the pavilion and gazed out.

Qing Long quietly stood beside and looked at Ghost King, on that figure of great authority, suddenly an indistinct melancholy was revealed, silently conveying that unspoken words.

BiYao.....

After three days, Ghost Li left Majestic Fox Mountain and headed for southwest, at the same time with him there was the monkey Xiao Hui and other than that, Wild Dog Taoist also came along. Initially Wild Dog Taoist did not wish to go to that dangerous death marsh place but Ghost Li only carelessly said, "After I leave, I guarantee that Majestic Fox Mountain will be a hundred times even more dangerous than that death marsh, do you believe?"

After he spoke these words, Wild Dog Taoist immediately turned pale, although his mouth was still stubbornly unyielding but his legs already followed behind.

The Divine land vast lands, boundless in length and breath and naturally the richest and most populous was the Central Plains and outside the Central Plains, the north was the original bitter icy cold north pole, uninhabited by humans; the east side was the boundless great sea; as for the south, outside the Central Plains there were the great mountains, towering at the frontier, the mountains ranges seemed to stretch forever, over there, barren hills and treacherous rapids with foul air and poisonous substances were uncountable, legends also said there were even strange and peculiar wild barbarian men, who devoured birds and beasts' raw meats, extremely savage and cruel.

And on the west side of the Divine vast lands, there were two terrible lands. In the Northwest direction, there was a desolated desert which stretched as far as the eye could see, the common people called it 'The Wildlands', in which there was no rain for more than a hundred years, the climate was extremely dry and occasionally there were a few oasis but mostly occupied by wild and ferocious beasts, naturally it would be death for those common people who went in. And in the legends, in the deep of the Wildlands, there was one grand temple from where the Evil Faction originated from.

As for the Southwest, it was the enormous death marsh that the common people was talking about. The climate of this place was completely different from the northwest wildlands, within a year, every ten days there would be rain for seven, eight days, the different unusual floras were as many as the hairs on an ox, lush and flourishing. This type of gloomy and damp place had always been the habitat of the world's huge and poisonous evil beasts and venomous worms and the highly toxic methane gas that was the specialty of this place, would rise from the marsh's rotting mud everytime it rained, if humans were to breathe it in and if there was no appropriate medication, within a quarter of an

hour, they would die from the poison to their hearts. Other than this, the rotting animals' bodies, trees and plants that were soaked from the rain for thousand and hundreds of years, turned this into a perilous place, a slightest misstep and you would be suck into the bottomless marsh, forever unable to see the sun and die a miserable death.

Such perilous place, naturally usually no one would come. But not long ago, the rumours started to spread in the world, in the west death marsh, a sudden enormous huge golden beam of light shone out into the sky for a day and night. Even in the deep of the night, the sky was as bright as daytime. After three days, the golden light then gradually dispersed. From then on, in the death marsh there seemed to be always loud strange crying sounds indistinctly heard, causing those living at the death marsh borders to be constantly fearful.

Once this news spread it immediately shook the world. From the cultivators point of view, spiritual beast magical weapons had always have their own spiritual nature, looking at this volume of huge golden light, naturally it was the premonition of a rare treasure's birth calling its predestined person over. And from the looks of this golden beam, this extraordinary treasure's magic would definitely not be trivial, for a moment it shook the world and the Good and Evil highly skilled pugilists started to gather.

And on the surface that flurry of activities, there was an unknown undercurrent, flowing turbulently.

About half a day journey from death marsh in the west, there was a desolated withering small village called 'Big Wang Village', the name was given because the villagers in the village believed in a certain mysterious deity called 'Big Wang'. Just that this deity had always been ineffective, not only did it not bless the villagers to be promoted and gained wealth, it did not bless them with abundant harvest or with enough food or clothes.

Actually to think about it, to live at the border of this kind of death marsh, time and time again a strange beast would suddenly scuttle out from somewhere or a venomous worm would slither out, it was a small matter if they kill the domestic animal but the yearly number of people that died from this were also not insignificant. Those with some capabilities had already left this damned place for the Central Plains, those that were left here were most likely indolent people.

But for these few days, the Big Wang Village was suddenly bustling with excitement again, those people that were coming to and fro were all highly skilled cultivators. Although Big Wang Village was not the only entrance to the death marsh but it was one of the dwellings that was closest to the death marsh. Before going into the death marsh, majority of the people would come here to buy some water and food, in the following few days, these actually made the villagers of this Big Wang Village gained a small fortune and increased some vitality.

And at the same time because this was the nearest place to the death marsh, the golden beam and the strange cries from the death marsh were also first discovered by the villagers and the news spread from here, therefore quite a number of people also came here to find out more information.

Just that after the number of people increased, naturally there would be good and evil people too, in the days that followed, in this little small place of Big Wang village, fights had occurred countless times and some unlucky ones who had not even stepped into the death marsh and yet without rhyme or reason died here, it was really injustice.

Enough of this digression. This day, Ghost Li and Wild Dog Taoist also came to Big Wang village, they stood at the village entrance and saw people coming and

going in the village and it was actually quite lively, completely different from the usual lifeless scene.

Walking into the village, Wild Dog Taoist glanced all around, frowning and muttering something.

The monkey, Xiao Hui, for the first time saw so many people after so many days, and was feeling excited, it leaned on Ghost Li's shoulder and [Zi Zi] called out, Ghost Li patted Xiao Hui and looked at Wild Dog Taoist, he said, "What are you doing?"

Wild Dog Taoist rudely replied, "I am finding an inn, after walking for so long shouldn't we find a good place to rest for a while? It is really a god-forsaken damned place, even an inn is also so hard to find!"

Ghost Li indifferently said, "So, you think this place will have an inn?"

Wild Dog Taoist was shocked and said, "What?"

Ghost Li turned his eyes to look at the people walking up and down the street, saw that those people's clothes were of vibrant colours, obviously they were not the hard-working people of Big Wang village and said, "Have you come here before?"

Wild Dog [Pei] a sound and said, "Who will have nothing better to do to come to this damn place!"

Ghost Li took a look at him and said, "That's right, since this place does not have outsiders visiting and the villagers are all impoverished, what is the use of

a inn?”

Wild Dog was speechless, his dog face turned a few more degrees of bitterness.

At this time, suddenly at the main street ahead of them a cry was heard, someone loudly shouted, “Foresee fifty years of future and be able to break three hundred years of horoscope, indisputable deity fortune-teller, brush pen to judge yin and yang, foretell the coming future, come and know your fortune!”

Both Ghost Li and Wild Dog were surprised and turned to look at the source of the voice. At the side of the main street, a worn-out table and chair were placed, a bamboo pole was stuck beside and a banner hung from it, with words written, ‘Immortal Guide’ four words. Beside the bamboo pole, an old man with uncommon bearing was shouting in a clear loud voice, the shout earlier on came from him and beside him, a sleepy young lady, her looks was rather pretty and right now leaning her body against the table, a helpless expression on her face.

Without saying, these two would be Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan. Zhou YiXian brought Xiao Huan to roam the earth and although his ability was not high but he still persistently like to head towards places where it’s lively. Some time ago he heard about the death marsh rumours and immediately in spite of Xiao Huan’s objections, he dragged her to this Big Wang village.

Right now using Zhou YiXian’s words to say, travelling allowance had all ran out, the hero had came to a dead end, he had no choice but to tell fortune in the streets. However although he was crying his own wares but afterwards he changed little by little “.....distinguished customers who are passing by, I, the immortal, who have receive the genuine skills from my forefathers, am able to

control all of the world's poisons. Today inside the death marsh, highly toxic and methane gas, as long as everyone carry this sachet which I am selling, you will definitely be immune to hundreds of poisons and have vajra body defending divine skill.....”

Xiao Huan, sitting beside softly sighed, having sat there for a few hours and grandfather was enthusiastically shouting but in reality not even one sachet was sold. The local people believed it but could not afford it (Zhou YiXian asked for an exorbitant price), the outsiders unfortunately were all cultivators, everyone of them experienced and knowledgeable, the stares given by them were all saying “swindler” two words. Luckily the Good Faction chivalrous heroes were all busy competing for the treasure and did not dispute with this fortune-teller, if not usually whichever master's disciple suddenly burned with righteous indignation and wanted to help the common people to get rid of vermin, perhaps he would get more than what he had bargained for.

Seeing that Zhou YiXian was still calling out with great energy, Xiao Huan, feeling impatient, stood up and was about to call out to stop her grandfather when suddenly a flash of blur, without knowing when, a person had stood in front of the table, it was a young man wearing a light blue robe, his features delicate and pretty but just that without knowing why his face looked to be slightly pale.

“Miss, I will like my fortune to be told.” That young man with a slight smile at the corner of his mouth, calmly said.

Xiao Huan frowned and appraised him, at this time Zhou YiXian also discovered this situation and quickly came over, smiling broadly he said, “Customer, what do you wish to see, fortune or marriage? How will you like to be read, by face, palm or glyphomancy?”

That young man pondered for a short moment and said, “I want to enter this death marsh too, why don’t you help me read this fortune!”

Zhou YiXian [Hehe] laughed and said, “No problem no problem, come, customer please take a seat. Mhm, I will first make myself clear, we have receive genuine skills from from our founders, our fortune-telling is incomparable therefore each telling requires ten taels of silver.....”

That young man was shocked and said, “That expensive?”

Zhou YiXian smiled and did not answer.

That young man shifted his eyes around and looked at Xiao Huan again, smiled and said, “Alright! ten taels it shall be. Why not like this! you will first help me to read a word.”

Xiao Huan looked at him and took out a piece of white paper beside her, passed him a thin brush and said, “Then can customer please first write a word on

Unexpectedly that young man took the brush but laughed instead, “Not necessary, I will write my name, you will help me to read and see how is my name’s fortune?”

Speaking, on this piece of white sheet, he wrote down three characters and passed to Xiao Huan.

Xiao Huan was stunned for a moment and took over the paper, looking at the piece of white sheet, she heard that young man smiled and said, “My name is

Qin WuYan!”

Chapter 89: Fortune telling - Part 1 - Fortune Telling

Xiao Huan frowned slightly but her pair of eyes slowly brightened, looking carefully at that piece of white paper with the three characters, Qin WuYan, written in neat and proper handwriting, the brush strokes were upright, smooth and round, the corners understated and smooth, considerably a beautiful piece of handwriting.

Xiao Huan blinked her eyes, suddenly smiled and said, “This customer, there is a ‘Yan’ in your name, it has double fire with the sun’s maximum power but with the suppression from the word ‘Wu’ in the middle, things have taken a new turn and instead became soft, feminine; in addition, ‘Qin’ word resides in the west, signifying that you will have great advantage towards the west cold and Yin (translator’s note: yin is the feminine and negative energy) place!”

She placed the paper gently on the table, looked at Qin WuYan and said, “The west death marsh is a place of dampness and yin energy, your luck will definitely not be bad in your journey there.”

A trace of smile surfaced on Qin WuYan’s face, the young yet pale face appeared to have some color returned to his face, he nodded and said, “Thank you Miss, here is ten taels, please keep it well.” After speaking, he took out ten

taels and placed it on the table.

Xiao Huan looked at it but did not take it. Zhou YiXian beside her, stretched out his hand to take it and kept it in his bosom, [he he] laughed and said, "Thank you customer."

Qin WuYan smiled but did not show any intention to leave, instead he took out another ten tael from his bosom and placed it on the table. Zhou YiXian was surprised and said, "Customer, this....."

Qin WuYan calmly said, "I have another friend who is also going to that death marsh, I will like to trouble Miss to read his fortune also."

Xiao Huan was surprised, Qin WuYan had already took over the pen and wrote down two characters on the paper, passed it over to Xiao Huan, smiled and said, "His name is Ghost Li!"

The main street which was bustling with activities, the ambient sounds suddenly quietened down.

Some quietly retreated, some quietly came nearer, human figures indistinctly seen on the street corners and rooftops, although it was daylight now but it suddenly became rather chilly.

The ones there would naturally feel this inexplicable change, Zhou YiXian frowned slightly and looked around him, he had not said anything but Xiao Huan had already pushed the paper over, nonchalantly said, "Sorry customer, fortune telling requires the person to write it personally so that we can tell."

Qin WuYan did not become angry, only smiled and said, “Really?”

Looking at him, he did not seem to be leaving or having any intention of giving up, he still stood in front of the table. Xiao Huan’s expression changed and just at this moment, a hand suddenly stretched out from beside and wrote ‘Ghost Li’ two characters on the paper, then someone indifferently said, “Miss, please look at my two characters.”

Xiao Huan turned and looked at him.

Ten years of time seemed to pass in a flash!

Xiao Hui leaning on his shoulder, its quick-witted eyeballs turning round and round, and his face, nothing seemed to change, still looking the same as before.

On the main street, a deathly quiet, in the dark and in the open, surrounding these two young people, as if there were two forces, monitoring each other, confronting each other.....

Xiao Huan, after staring blankly for a long while, took over that piece of paper.

“Ghost Li!”

She read aloud softly.

These two words, a far cry from the beautiful characters written by Qin WuYan, the strokes were heavy, clumsy and not versed but every stroke and line was extremely clear, the strength used while writing seemed to desire

restraining oneself but at every stroke ending, it appeared that it was unable to hold back and revealed a few abilities, a whiff of one's pride assaulted over.

Xiao Huan's eyes at this moment seemed to become brighter, after a while she placed the piece of white paper down, paused for a while then said, "This customer, what do you want to ask?"

Xiao Hui suddenly jumped down from Ghost Li's shoulder and landed on the table, took that brush and curiously played with it.

Ghost Li took a look at Xiao Hui and said, "I want to go to this death marsh too, will Miss please take a look at my fortune?"

Xiao Huan looked at him, suddenly laughed and said, "All humans have souls, the souls that linger after death, most become Yin spirit ghosts dread by the common people. Since customer chose this kind of mournful name, obviously you do not believe in Gods and ghosts, why do you need to ask me?"

Ghost Li quietly looked at her and did not speak but Qin WuYan who was beside suddenly laughed and spoke, "Wrong, wrong, Miss you are wrong."

Xiao Huan was shocked by his words and said, "Where was I wrong?"

A faint gleam appeared in Qin WuYan's eyes, facing Xiao Huan but his gaze from the corner of his eyes seemed to sweep towards Ghost Li, he smiled and said, "In ancient times, Wisdom King split the heaven and earth apart, Wisdom Queen created all living things and humans, this is already an eternal truth, how can it not be believed?"

The Evil Sect had always revered two saints which were the Wisdom King and Wisdom Queen, the ordinary sect members had always been unparalleled in their faith, just that to the Good Faction, naturally it was immoral. Except that this Qin WuYan was asking emotionlessly and seemed to be questioning something.

Behind him the unseen pressure from the main street, following the turning of his head, suddenly rose.

Ghost Li unhurriedly turned, facing him, Qin WuYan at the same time turned around.

The two youths in this simple and crude street, coldly facing each other.

The surroundings were quiet, Zhou YiXian suddenly felt a buzz at the back of his head and a wave of dizziness, even his breathing unconsciously started to get tense. He secretly looked around, after a while he discovered many people that looked unrelated to this place, either listening attentively, or secretly looking, some simply stared directly over here and in their hands they were holding their magical weapons, holding stances that looked like they would make an attack anytime.

Ghost Li's nostrils slightly contracted, his voice also turned slightly deep and said, "Du gongzi (translator's note: young master or son of official)?"

Right now the smile on Qin WuYan's face also gradually disappeared, showing a solemn expression but his voice still remained calm, he said, "Xue gongzi!"

[Pa!]

Suddenly, a muffled sound suddenly resounded in the scene, the two tensed forces which were secretly facing each other were unexpectedly frightened, like a sharp whistling in that soundless tightly strained situation, it nearly exploded.

Even the calm expressions maintained on Ghost Li and Qin WuYan's faces, the corners of their eyes also seemed to twitch slightly.

A panic-stricken embarrassed voice rang out, "Not, nothing, I, I didn't do it on purpose....."

Everyone looked over, Zhou YiXian, in his moment of nervousness accidentally dropped the money that he had just accepted onto the floor, making a muffled sound. Sweat appeared on Xiao Huan's forehead, she angrily stared at him, Zhou YiXian's face turned red, too embarrassed to speak but in his heart, he was shaken.

In these ten years, the Evil Sect's power had greatly flourished, the younger generation produced a number of young outstanding talents, the three most outstanding, those gossipmongers combined their names and called them 'Three gongzi', namely: Wan Du Sect Qin WuYan, known as 'Du GongZi'; Ghost King Sect Ghost Li, called as 'Xue GongZi'; and the last one was HeHuan Sect Jin PingEr, known as 'Miao GongZi'. [translator's note: Du - poison, Xue - blood and Miao - ingenious]

Among the four great branches of the Evil Faction, only in Chang Shen Hall's younger generation, nobody was listed in it and no qualified successors to carry on.

For the past few years, in the Evil Sect, these three young men could be

described as the ones who called the wind and summoned the rain, at this young age they were already in command of their branches' supreme authority and in their trails from time to time there would be bloodshed, struggles and bloody battles were inevitable but they had never met each other before. Someone once said, the day that the three of them faced each other, perhaps it would also be the day that the real great battle between the four great branches of the Evil Sect would start.

And right now, the two most powerful branches in the Evil Sect, Wan Du sect and Ghost King sect, were in the stares of these two young men who were facing each other.

The atmosphere in the place was strangely quiet and strained, Zhou YiXian felt himself almost could not breathe and wanted to secretly pack up and take Xiao Huan away but right now no matter what he dared not moved, these two young men were renowned fiends and he definitely could not afford to offend them.

At this moment, Qin WuYan suddenly laughed and said, "Ghost Li brother, junior has long admire your big name, today I finally have the chance to meet you, it is really the blessing of three lifetimes!"

With this laugh immediately the tensed atmosphere was greatly relieved, Zhou YiXian could almost immediately felt it, the constant invisible pressure pouring in from all around, with his laugh, started to retreat slowly.

Ghost Li although did not smile but his expression soften, maybe in both of their hearts, they both knew that now was not the time for them to fight.

"Qin brother is too kind."

Qin WuYan, as if the earlier confrontation had never happened, smiled and said, "With Ghost Li brother your good self arrival here, most likely the rare treasure in the death marsh will definitely not be able to escape from brother's hands."

Ghost Li looked deeply at him and suddenly said, "The world is so big, Ghost Li is just an inferior person. If Senior God of Poison wish to have this object, senior needs only to speak out and definitely nobody will dare to take."

Qin WuYan's face expression slightly changed and immediately said, "Our teacher no longer pay attention to the world's affairs, what's more if it is to belong to someone, it should be Chang Shen Hall YuYang Zi senior who run this place."

Ghost Li looked at him, calmly nodded and said, "Qin brother's words are right."

Both of them looked at each other and suddenly laughed. Qin WuYan cupped his hands, turned and with his hands clasped behind his back, left. Looking at his natural and relaxed figure, if one did not know his identity, maybe one would have thought that he was an elegant gongzi from the secular world.

As his figure walked further away, the pedestrians who were walking along the bustling main street just only suddenly broke off and dispersed, in a short while almost half had disappeared.

Ghost Li unhurriedly turned his head around, his gaze landed upon Xiao Huan who was standing at a side, Xiao Huan's bright pair of eyes instead did not show any slightest sign of fear and met his gaze.

Ghost Li looked at her for a long while and looked at Zhou YiXian and finally back to Xiao Huan, suddenly a trace of smile emerged on the corner of his lips and he quietly said, “You have grown up.”

That not-seen-for-ages smile suddenly appeared, as if a wisp of spring breeze had melted some ice but it was just a fleeting moment, when Xiao Huan regained her senses, Ghost Li had already carried the monkey Xiao Hui and headed towards the west. The surrounding people either followed from afar or followed near, gradually another half disappeared.

Without knowing why, Xiao Huan suddenly felt an inexplicable disappointment and silently looked at that young man’s back figure, she saw from far although there seemed to be a crowd clustering around him but no one dared to go near, other than the monkey on his shoulder.

Even that figure, also seemed to be somehow melancholy.

She watched silently, engrossed.

Book 3, Chapter 89: Fortune telling - Part 2

“Hey, young lady!” Suddenly a loud shout rang out beside her.

Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian, who was packing up ,were shocked. When they turned to look, they saw a Taoist man with strange facial features and the shape of his face was like a dog, standing in front of them, he said, “Young lady, seems

like you can read fortunes very well, read the fortunes for your Uncle Wild Dog Taoist too!”

Xiao Huan looked at him and said, “O! What does customer wish to see, by face or by characters?”

Wild Dog was about to answer when suddenly a sound of [ZiZi] was heard from beside, everyone was surprised. Xiao Hui the monkey, without knowing why, had ran back and in two to three steps it had scurried to the fortune-telling stall side, a pair of eyes rolling to and fro at these three people.

Wild Dog stared at Xiao Hui and angrily said, “What are you hurrying, are you afraid your Taoist Uncle will eat up this young lady?”

After speaking he turned his head around and spoke to Xiao Huan, “I am illiterate, you will tell my fortune from my face.”

Xiao Huan smiled and said, “Customer, what do you want to know?”

Wild Dog paused for a while, frowned while he thought about it and said, “I, I bear a huge responsibility, can you tell me if I will make it big in the future?”

Xiao Huan looked deeply at his features for a long while and said, “You have a strange appearance, unique among the thousands but definitely not the special look that will achieve great merit or undertaking. The three wrinkles on your forehead formed early and pushes the merit lines aside. Moreover it severed the merit lines in the middle, causing weakness in the lines at the back,” She smiled and said, “If you do not have a benefactor to help you, it will be hard for you to succeed in this life.”

These words were spoken casually by Xiao Huan but Wild Dog Taoist turned ashen upon hearing it, his expression was extremely ghastly. Unfortunately at this very moment, Zhou YiXian joined in, stretched out his hand with a laugh [Hehe] and said, “Customer, ten tael thanks!”

Wild Dog Taoist dog’s eyes opened widely and shouted furiously, “Pei! This woman is speaking rubbish! Your Wild Dog Taoist Uncle has always been fortunate and lucky, what hard to succeed, and still dare to ask me for money, you are looking for death!”

Zhou YiXian got a shock but Xiao Huan’s expression instead never changed, Wild Dog was about to turn and renege on his payment when suddenly the monkey Xiao Hui who was squatting by the side, [Zizi] shouted twice and suddenly jumped up and leapt onto Wild Dog’s body.

Wild Dog Taoist immediately got a shock and flailed his arms and legs wildly, he angrily said, “Damned monkey, what are you doing.....”

He had not finished his words when Xiao Hui, taking advantage of his flustered state, jumped off again and this time, landing on the table in front of Xiao Huan, grinning while facing Xiao Huan, [Hehe] laughing.

Xiao Huan looked at the monkey and felt that it was extremely adorable, she could not help but smiled and said, “Little monkey, what are you doing?”

Xiao Hui’s left hand stretched up to scratch its head, its eyeballs rolled one round, and it took out its right hand which was behind and spread it opened in front of Xiao Huan.

Xiao Hui took a look and was shocked, in the monkey's hand, an ingot of fine silver. Looking at the size, most likely it was worth more than thirty taels. At this moment, Wild Dog Taoist who was standing behind, was also shocked, he felt his chest and immediately was livid, "Bastard, dare to steal your Taoist Uncle's money, rebelling rebelling!"

A flash of grey light in his hand, the fang magical weapon appeared, his hand raised and about to hit on Xiao Hui's head.

Xiao Huan's face expression changed, her left hand withdrew into her sleeve and was waiting to do something but Xiao Hui the monkey instead [ZiZi] called out at Wild Dog, jumped up and down on the table and making threatening gestures, looking at it, it seemed to be even more aggressive than Wild Dog Taoist.

Wild Dog Taoist's hand raised until mid-air, suddenly he seemed to recall something, rather unwilling but eventually lowered his magical weapon, harshly said, "Good, you win! One day you this bastard and that brat will come and beg me!"

After speaking, he turned away angrily and walked off.

Xiao Hui the monkey leapt up high, turned its head over to face Xiao Huan and [Hehe] laughed. The more Xiao Huan looked at the monkey, the more she liked it and stretched out her hand to pat Xiao Hui's head, she laughed lightly and said, "Thank you little monkey!"

Xiao Hui beamed with joy and could not stop using its monkey hands to feel its head, even its tail, at times it straightened out and swayed, at times it coiled

up.

Zhou YiXian kept the silver that was dropped onto the table carefully and was extremely happy, he walked over and stretched out his hand to try and pat Xiao Hui's head too, at the same time he said, "Hehe, good monkey, good monkey....."

"Zi!" Unexpectedly Xiao Hui suddenly screeched and opened its mouth to bite, if not for Zhou YiXian withdrawing his hand in time, his hand would have been bitten. Zhou YiXian was stunned but saw that Xiao Huan was laughing heartily and patting Xiao Hui's head, one human and one monkey extremely harmonious but puzzled why was he treated that way, he felt embarrassed.

Xiao Huan felt Xiao Hui was becoming more and more adorable and hugged Xiao Hui in her bosom, teased and played with it. Zhou YiXian started to pack up but he was feeling extremely sour, shook his head sighed and said, "Ai! What are the ways of the world now, even a monkey is also so lecherous....."

Xiao Huan's face turned red, gave her grandfather a stare and angrily said, "Grandfather, what did you say?"

Zhou YiXian laughed awkwardly and dared not continue on but turned his head over and still with a troubled sage appearance, "Ai! Moral degeneration! Moral degeneration!"

Xiao Huan did not bother about him, turned around and thought for a while. She walked to the side and took out a small packet wrapped in paper from her own bundle, gently opened it, there were two sticks of glittering bright-coloured candied haws, a whiff of sweet-smelling fragrance wafted into the nose.

Xiao Huan took up one stick and passed it to Xiao Hui who was in her bosom, Xiao Hui took it but left Xiao Huan and jumped back to the table, its eyes rolling round and round looking at the candied haw in its hand and finally, carefully placed it into its mouth and licked it with its tongue.

Xiao Huan leaned on the side of the table, smiling broadly looking at it and said, "It's sweet isn't it, it's really very delicious!"

Xiao Hui the monkey blinked its eyes and immediately nodded, holding the candied haw in its hand, it excitedly jumped here and there on the table and after a while, jumped off the table and using the hand that was holding the candied haw, waved at Xiao Huan and ran off from the main street, very soon it disappeared from view.

Xiao Huan looked at its figure gradually disappearing, laughed while shaking her head. In her heart she really liked this extremely intelligent monkey but too bad it was not hers and felt some regret. Turning her head around, she discovered Zhou YiXian was also looking at the same direction where Xiao Hui had headed, looking dazed and he seemed to be muttering something, she could not help but say, "Grandfather, it is only just a little monkey, you are already so old and still bear grudges, aren't you afraid others may laugh at you!"

Zhou YiXian humphed and said, "What do you know, I suddenly thought of this, this monkey is so amazing and can actually steal the silvers from Wild Dog Taoist this kind of cultivated person without anyone knowing, if I were to keep this kind of monkey too, then if how much silver I wish to steal, I will have that much of silver....."

Xiao Huan became gloomy and angrily cried, "Grandfather!"

Zhou YiXian regained his senses, gave an embarrassed laugh and did not dare to continue, engrossed himself in packing.

Xiao Huan gave him a stare and turned over, she packed her bundle and also wrapped the remaining candied haw stick carefully, suddenly she heard a clear laughter from beside, someone said, "How is it that after three years not seen, you still like to eat candied haw that much?"

Xiao Huan was stunned and raised her head to look, she saw a young lady, wearing light yellow clothing, oval-shaped face and her features picturesque, the first look clear and attractive, the second look sultry and mesmerizing.

Xiao Huan was delighted, laughed and immediately put down the things in her hands and pulled that girl's hand, she laughed and said, "Sister, how come it's you?"

That girl obviously was familiar with Xiao Huan, pinched Xiao Huan's white face, smiled and said, "Three years not seen, sister you are becoming more and more beautiful, even I cannot help but be enthralled when I see you!"

Xiao Huan's face reddened and she scolded her, "Be serious! How come you are here?"

That girl smiled and did not answer, she instead faced the west, it was the same direction that Qin WuYan and Ghost Li headed, and gazed at it.

Xiao Huan was taken aback and said, "You are also going to the death

marsh?”

That girl’s eyes blinked, in a moment that captivating lovely face smiled and said, “Sister, do you want to go in and watch the fun?”

Xiao Huan frowned slightly and said, “But inside that place is really.....”

That girl laughed lightly and said, “What are you afraid of, I am here! Don’t tell me I will allow others to bully you? Even if you don’t mind, my heart will ache!”

Xiao Huan gave her a look but could not bear it and laughed out, she said, “Alright, anyway we have not seen each other for a long time, I also want to spend more time with sister.”

After speaking, she turned to Zhou YiXian and asked, “Grandfather, are you going?”

Zhou YiXian obviously knew this girl’s identity, he expected that with this person around, it would be safe, immediately he laughed and said, “Go, of course I want to go.”

That girl smiled and said to Xiao Huan, “Sister, let’s go!”

Speaking she put her arm around Xiao Huan’s shoulder and whispered something in her ear, Xiao Huan giggled out and the two of them slowly walked off, leaving the entire stall stuffs for Zhou YiXian to pack.

Zhou YiXian stood dazed for a while, shook his head and sighed. As he packed, he bitterly lamented moral degeneration, people disrespected the elderly.....

-end-

Chapter 90: Death Marsh

The sky was overcast, giving an impression that it was hovering very low, gusts of chilling winds out of nowhere blew, causing a chill through the bodies it brushed past.

Within the stretch of overgrown grass beside the marsh, there was an obscured small path in the middle, leading into the marsh.

Zeng ShuShu and the rest of the Qing Yun Sect disciples stood at the entrance of the death marsh and peered in but they saw only vast expanse of lands, water and lush grass flourished everywhere and occasionally, a solitary tree stood erect in the midst. The air carried a faint stench of rotting smell and above the marsh, like a grey veil-like haze floated, allowing people to view only the areas around them, making it all the more mysterious.

Zeng ShuShu frowned and turned over, Qing Yun Sect with Su YiCai as the lead for the thirteen younger generation disciples, all had solemn expressions on their faces.

Since ancient times, the death marsh was ominously known as 'Once entered, difficult to leave', nobody knew what kind of ferocious animals or matters were in it. This time that Qing Yun group came to the West, Su YiCai with his status

and skills, implicitly was the leader of the group. Right now he looked deep into the death marsh for a long time, without any change of expression, he said to the group, “Yesterday FenXiang Valley Li Xun senior brother sent me a message, he politely said that he is with Qing Yun Sect, to eradicate the evildoers, so they have made a move first and already entered into the death marsh.”

A stir of movement passed through the group of people behind him, only Lu XueQi remained expressionless, standing beside her senior sister WenMin and facing the death marsh, silently staring. And at the other side, Lin JingYu who was travelling out for the first time, coldly humphed.

Su YiCai indifferently said, “Actually what FenXiang Valley meant, everyone should know it very well, if this time they get their hands first on that nameless rare treasure, their fame and influence will naturally be boosted greatly and regarding the future Good Faction leader position, I’m afraid someone will want to take a turn to sit on it.” Speaking till here, he paused for a while and a trace of smile appeared on his lips, he said, “But everyone do not have to worry, I presumed that even with the early unusual signs but until today no one has manage to obtain that rare treasure, this shows that the process is complicated and fraught with difficulties. They are impatient for success, let them go first, just that after we have entered the death marsh, everyone must be cautious. This death marsh’s bad reputation is well-known, perilous and unpredictable and there might even be Evil Faction sorcerers around. Once we entered, everyone must look after each other, bear in mind, bear in mind”

Zeng ShuShu said, “Su senior brother is right, it is getting late, why don’t we enter too.”

Su YiCai nodded and said, “Might as well. After entering, it is not advisable to wander far from each other, and do not land unnecessarily to prevent being bitten by the poisonous bugs or accidentally falling into the bottomless marsh.”

Everyone nodded, Su YiCai waved his right hand and wielded his 'Seven-star celestial sword', flew up and led the way in, after which Qing Yun Sect disciples also flew up, turning into different dazzling colours, following closely behind.

In a short while, this group of Qing Yun Sect elite and young disappeared into the death marsh haze, the entrance to the death marsh suddenly sunk into a vast still silence, only within the water plants, an unknown water bubble floated up, the gurgle sound resounded far and wide.

[Pa], Zhou YiXian's heavy slap landed on the right side of his own neck, immediately his neck reddened but the mosquito that bit him had already [weng weng weng] flew away and seemed to fly one round proudly in front of him and only then flew away perfectly contented.

Zhou YiXian's expression was suffering, at any time, small bumps from the bugs' bites could be seen on his face although it was not serious but he appeared a sorry figure. At this moment he was complaining loudly, "What god-damned place is this, why are there so many damned mosquitoes? This, this is only a day, and half of my blood have already been sucked!"

Xiao Huan who was walking in front turned, looking worried she said, "Grandfather, are you alright?"

Zhou YiXian angrily replied, "Nonsense, do I look alright?"

Xiao Huan frowned and said, "Strange, these mosquitoes are really too, why did they only bite you, PingEr sister and I are all alright."

Standing beside Xiao Huan that girl who was dressed in light-yellow clothing also stopped and turned back to look. She brought Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian into this death marsh, Zhou YiXian was careful but more than often he still landed in mud or water and yet she seemed to go with the flow and not a single dirt landed on her.

Zhou YiXian felt frustrated, he happened to see a small tree near him and immediately went over carefully to try and as the ground below the tree was still considered firm, he sat down promptly and said loudly, "I'm tired, rest a while."

Xiao Huan with an apologetic expression, looked at that dressed in light-yellow clothing beautiful girl, the girl who was addressed by her as PingEr sister laughed and said, "It's alright, let's rest a while."

Xiao Huan looked at her gratefully and looked around at the surroundings but the place was boundless and slightly further away was the gradually thickening haze, looking foggy. Throughout the journey so far, if not for this PingEr sister leading the way, she really would not be able to walk in.

Right now she could not help but asked, "Sister, is it that grandfather and me are a burden to you, if you fly, wouldn't it be faster?"

That girl smiled sweetly and said, "No worries, I am actually not rushing for time in this death marsh."

Xiao Huan was surprised and said, "Sister, aren't you sent here by your HeHuan Sect to obtain the rare treasure in this death marsh?"

So this delicate and beautiful girl dressed in light-yellow clothing was the Jin PingEr named together with Ghost Li and Qin WuYan. Nobody knew how Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian came to know this famous highly skilled ace from the younger generation of the Evil Faction.

But Jin PingEr obviously extremely favoured Xiao Huan and doted on her, she smiled at what she had heard and said, “Yes since this time so many people have come, let’s take it slow, no hurry.”

Xiao Huan felt strange but after thinking it carefully, she guessed it must be some secret within her HeHuan Sect and felt she should not probed further so she changed the topic and said, “Sister, we have been in this death marsh for one day already, on our way in, I saw that you are extremely familiar with the place, don’t tell me you already know the way?”

Jin PingEr shook her head and said, “I have never been here.”

Xiao Huan was shocked.

Jin PingEr looked at her and saw that Xiao Huan’s pair of bright eyes were full of curiosity, she smiled in spite of herself and said, “Have you heard of an ancient book’s remnants that recorded the world’s various strange and unusual matters, rare and strange beasts.....”

Xiao Huan thought for a while and said, “Don’t tell me it’s [Divine and Evil The strange]?”

Jin PingEr nodded and said, “Correct, this book was written by an extraordinary ancient person, it was said to have nine pages but many have

since been lost. Other than [Demon beast. Spiritual beast chapter], [Goblins chapter] and also one remnant chapter [Mountains and rivers chapter] I got hold of it by accident, at the end of the chapter, there were some records of this death marsh.”

Xiao Huan then understood but before she give a reply, a loud and clear shout was heard from Zhou YiXian again, following which Zhou YiXian was heard cursing loudly, most likely he was bitten again by some unknown mosquitoes and had his blood sucked.

Xiao Huan after all was still his granddaughter, in her heart she was concerned and came to realize that although there were many mosquitoes along the way but not one touched her or Jin PingEr and yet only bit Zhou YiXian, surely there was something strange going on and since she naturally did not have this ability then it must be Jin PingEr.

Immediately she turned her head and looked at Jin PingEr, Jin PingEr laughed and acted as if nothing had happened, she asked, “Sister, what is it?”

Xiao Huan gave a wry smile and said, “Sister, my grandfather he.....this, I know you have great skills, why don’t you help him!”

Jin PingEr looked at Zhou YiXian, disdain in her eyes but turning around and meeting Xiao Huan’s earnest gaze, she shrugged her shoulders and said, “Alright for your sake, let him have it easy.”

Speaking she took out a small white jade bottle from her bosom and passed it to Xiao Huan, she said, “There are some medicated liquid in this bottle, tell him to spread it on his body and the mosquitoes will naturally avoid him. “

Xiao Huan happily took it over, her face full of smiles and said, “Thank you sister.” She quickly walked to Zhou YiXian and passed him the bottle. Zhou YiXian was taken aback for a while and suddenly jumped up, he yelled angrily, “You have this good stuff and yet you did not.....”

Jin PingEr’s face hardened and stared over, Zhou YiXian immediately became silent and looked as if he had done something wrong, lowered his head and took the bottle. He poured out some liquid and spread it on his body, after a moment he smelled a delicate fragrance and sure enough, immediately the buzzing sounds of the mosquitoes were gone and his body started to relax.

Xiao Huan slowly walked over and passed the bottle back to Jin PingEr, after hesitating for a while she quietly said, “Sister, do you still nurse a grudge against the mistake made by grandfather at that time?”

“Hng!” Jin PingEr’s face turned slightly cold and she said, “Three years ago at East Ocean because of some nonsensical words he said, it caused me to be lost beyond redemption in a deathtrap. If not for the fact that you, sister, discovered it early and gave up one year of your life to perform the ‘Soul retrieval strange formation’ to get rid of the evil spirits on my body, right now my fate would have been worse than death. This type of ignorant person, if not for.....”

Xiao Huan gently pulled Jin PingEr’s hand and quietly called out, ‘Sister.’

Jin PingEr looked at her, sighed slightly and a smile appeared on her face, her eyes too, full of tender affection, patted her hand and said, “Alright, alright, with such a good sister like you, I have already let go of the past matters long ago, just that sometimes when I look at this grandfather of yours, it is still an eyesore and can’t help but want him to suffer a little. He he, good sister, you won’t blame me right?”

Xiao Huan smiled and shook her head.

Jin PingEr smiled but suddenly her face turned cold, she abruptly turned around and shouted, “Who is there?”

Book 3, Chapter 90: Death Marsh - Part 2

Both Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian got a shock and looked around but only saw thick haze surrounding them, luxuriant vegetation and water bodies and other than the occasional water bubbles arising out from the water surface, there was not a single movement.

But without knowing why, Jin PingEr’s usual relaxed face right now had suddenly turned solemn, cautious, totally different from the gentle and quiet self when she was chatting and laughing with Xiao Huan. Calm with traces of murderous intent, she seemed to change into another person and the other party seemed to be a formidable enemy with which she could not let her guard down.

After a moment, somewhere far off in the thick haze, suddenly a voice was heard indifferently saying, “Jin Fairy, we have agreed to meet at the ‘Black Water Trench’ yesterday to discuss the important matters, why did you not come?”

Jin PingEr by now seemed to already know who the person was, her expression relaxed slightly but the alertness in her eyes had never once subsided, the tone of her voice was not polite at all, she coldly said, “I do not

know the way.”

The person in the haze seemed to hold back and for a while nobody spoke, after a long while the person then said, “What? Looks like from what Jin Fairy is saying, don’t tell me regarding the matter here, HeHuan Sect has lost interest?”

Jin PingEr humphed, facing the other party she said, “Three days before, four of our HeHuan Sect disciples were killed six miles northwest from Big Wang Village, they were poisoned with ‘Black Toad Powder’, was it done by you?”

The person in the haze seemed to be stunned and said, “No.”

Jin PingEr coldly said, “Only Wan Du Sect have Black Toad Powder, how do you explain this?”

That person in the haze did not speak and remained silent for a long while. The person coolly replied, “Jin Fairy, if I were the one who did it, I don’t even need to use poison.”

Jin PingEr humphed again but did not retort, showing no objection on on this point.

That person said again, “But since it concern both of our sects and it also involve me, after this matter is settled, I will naturally give you an explanation, what do you think? This time this trip to the West, there are many strange things and I’m afraid there is something fishy about it, hope that Fairy you will consider it carefully and place the important matter as priority.”

Jin PingEr frowned slightly and hesitated for a short while, she turned over

and spoke to Xiao Huan, “Xiao Huan sister, you and your grandfather will take a rest here for a while, I go up ahead to discuss some matters with others and will be back before dark.” Pausing for a while, she lowered her voice and spoke, “The thing that I have given you, do you still have it?”

Xiao Huan nodded and patted her left hand.

Jin PingEr smiled and pulled her hand, she softly said, “There is danger everywhere in this death marsh, I will be somewhere near ahead, if you are in any trouble, I will come in an instant. Just that you must never wander off, especially far from here.”

Xiao Huan nodded and said, “Sister please don’t worry, I know.”

Jin PingEr smiled and let go of her hand and said, “Please be careful and call me if you need anything.”

After speaking, she looked around at the surroundings again and suddenly leapt up, a purple brilliance light appeared below her clothes, supporting her slender figure and flew ahead into the haze.

Xiao Huan looked at Jin PingEr’s figure disappearing into the haze and turned around, she walked over to Zhou YiXian who was now leaning against that small tree. Since he was relieved of the mosquitoes’ harassment, he was immediately freed up but his mouth was still complaining, “If I had known this place is going to be like this, even if you kill me I also will not come.”

Xiao Huan laughed and said, “Nobody force you to come and it was you who wanted to follow along.”

Zhou YiXian humphed and then facing Xiao Huan, he said, "I say, you better stay far away from that woman, did you not hear the rumours going around these few years saying that she killed numerous people and at the same time extremely dissolute, seducing countless of respectable young men....."

Xiao Huan [Pei] a sound, irritation appearing on her face, she said, "Grandfather, how can you say it like that!"

Zhou YiXian stuck out his tongue but did not carry on.

And so the two of them waited there, the gloomy sky gradually darken but Jin PingEr had not returned. Xiao Huan began to feel worried and wanted to go take a look but considering Jin PingEr's instructions, in addition she herself did not have any confidence so eventually she dared not leave.

After waiting for another while, Xiao Huan could not help but felt anxious, she looked up at the sky and saw that the dark clouds had increased and from the look of it, not only it was getting dark, it seemed like it was going to rain too.

Xiao Huan exclaimed softly, she recalled that because she came out in a hurry, although she remembered to bring everything but she forgotten to bring the rain gear. If it rained at this time, it would be terrible. She quickly turned and asked Zhou YiXian, "Grandfather, did you bring umbrella?"

Zhou YiXian stunned for a moment, said, "Umbrella?" After a while he immediately comprehended and raised his head to look at the sky, for a moment he was speechless and stuttered, "I, I thought you brought it."

Xiao Huan anxiously said, “Ah! This is bad, if it rains, what shall we do?”

Zhou YiXian raised his head and looked around, there was only this small tree all around them, the rest were all ponds and vegetation and not a single place for them to hide from the rain, he lamented, “We are done this time, why don’t we find a place to avoid the rain?”

Xiao Huan shook her head immediately, “Can’t, PingEr sister has said already, we cannot wander off if not there will be danger.”

Zhou YiXian rudely replied, “Can’t leave? If we stay and wait for the rain, I’m afraid we will only have the danger of getting tuberculosis!”

Xiao Huan right now was also frowning tightly and fretting when suddenly a light sound was heard up ahead, it was a footstep sound. Xiao Huan was relieved and almost said “PingEr sister” but suddenly shut her mouth. A figure was seen walking quickly out of the haze and a small figure seemed to follow behind, at the same time a familiar-like grumbling voice was heard.

“Following you this stinky brat, it is really me this Taoist Uncle’s eight generations of great ill-luck, not to mention being on constant tenterhooks everyday and now I still have to be in this damn place and be bitten and sucked by these mosquitoes, why don’t you ask him to just suck my blood dry to end this!”

“Zi zi, Zi zi! ...”

Xiao Huan was surprised, it was that Wild Dog Taoist who she had met before at Da Wang village and leaping behind him was that monkey Xiao Hui. However

Ghost Li was not seen.

Wild Dog Taoist walked and walked and when he focused, he saw Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian standing in front, looking at himself with strange stares, he got a shock and said, “Yi? Aren’t you both the fortune-tellers, why are you all here?”

Xiao Huan had not even answered when the sharp-eyed Xiao Hui who was behind Wild Dog immediately recognized that the lady in front was someone familiar, [Zi Zi] called out twice and at once leapt to Xiao Huan’s side.

Xiao Huan immediately smiled when she saw Xiao Hui and bent over to carry it up, in spite of the filth gathered from the road on its hands and feet, laughed and said, “How come you are here?”

Xiao Hui seemed to understand, grinned and pointed behind with its monkey paw, gesturing non-stop to Xiao Huan, making [Zi Zi Zi Zi] sounds ceaselessly.

Xiao Huan obviously did not understand what it meant but seemed to guess correctly that Xiao Hui meant to say Ghost Li was just ahead, her heart palpitated for a moment and thought to herself if PingEr sister could be meeting Ghost Li?

And at this moment of doubt, an explosion of thunder was suddenly heard in the sky, rumbling loudly and shortly [Wa wa], big drops of rain fell down.

Xiao Huan shrieked and using her hand to cover her head, subconsciously carried Xiao Hui together and ran to Zhou YiXian, “Grandfather, what shall we do?”

Zhou YiXian could only forced a smile and simply flipped his clothes over his head and said, “No choice, we can’t leave and there is no place to hide, then just get drench!”

Xiao Huan was speechless but looking at the sky, everywhere was grey and gloomy, the rain was gradually getting heavier, in a short while half of her shoulders were already wet, indistinctly revealing a snow-white skin, glistening and eye-catching. Xiao Hui the monkey at this moment was also quite well-behaved, it had rolled into a ball and huddled in Xiao Huan’s embrace.

He he!”

Suddenly, mocking laughter sounds were heard, Xiao Huan turned to look and saw Wild Dog Taoist calmly taking an umbrella out from the bundle at his back and opened it, looking extremely conceited.

-end-

Chapter 91: Wild Dog The Good Person

In the death marsh, accompanying the increasingly heavy rain, a wind began to blow.

The monkey Xiao Hui's furs were all wet and plastering tightly on its body, it curled up its body and hid in Xiao Huan's embrace, not moving at all. Only a pair of sharp eyes, still rolling around, looking far ahead and then looked at Xiao Huan again.

The rain filled up the sky, turning the death marsh which was initially already gloomy into a darker shade, everywhere was a sea of murky grey. Zhou YiXian flipped up his clothes to cover his head and sat below the small tree. Xiao Huan, could not decide whether to sit or stand, after a moment, gave a wry smile and gently squatted down. She hugged Xiao Hui tighter to prevent it from the wind and rain, and as for herself, since she was already drenched, she did not have any other choice.

Wild Dog Taoist, extremely pleased with himself, held his umbrella and walked over. Looking at his expression, obviously there was none of the giving-his-umbrella-to-help-the-needy, showing-pity-and-tenderness-to-women etc , he was only heard saying, "He he, young lady, do you want the umbrella, it must be uncomfortable being drenched in the rain right?"

Xiao Huan raised her head to look at Wild Dog Taoist and laughed lightly, the raindrops fell onto her beautiful and fair face, burst and scattered like pearls.

Wild Dog Taoist's breath stopped, he planned to come over to make Xiao Huan begged him for the umbrella and then Wild Dog Taoist Uncle would loudly ridicule this young girl and then lastly arrogantly swaggered off, to be this type of bad person, it really felt good and very satisfying!

Unexpectedly Xiao Huan was far from what he expected, she did not speak a word, not to even mention begging him, his eager plans immediately fell through. Wild Dog Taoist was very vexed and glared fiercely at Xiao Huan.

This glare, without knowing why, took his breath away.

The young and beautiful lady in front of him, quietly squatting down and bearing the storm. The storm raged between Heaven and Earth, suddenly in Wild Dog's eyes, as if all of the raindrops were falling on her slightly frail body.

Her clothes were wet and sticking on her body, her black hair was slightly tossed, some strands strayed onto the side of her cheeks, the pale face against the wind and rain, carried with it a breath-taking and mournful beauty.

Her shoulders, were actually thin and weak, every raindrop that fell and rebounded were like crystal fragments and seemed to be trembling, the translucent fair and white skin stuck onto the clothes.

Wild Dog Taoist abruptly turned around and did not look at her, subconsciously he clenched the umbrella tight and as if he was reminding

someone, he repeatedly said, “I am a bad person, I am a bad person, I am a bad person.....”

Xiao Huan initially did not intend to bother about him but became curious upon seeing his reaction, saw Wild Dog’s strange behaviour and kept muttering something, she curiously asked, “Priest, what did you say?”

Wild Dog Taoist got a fright, for no reason his heart felt feeble and weak, he sneaked a look at Xiao Huan and saw the strange expression in Xiao Huan’s eyes and she was looking back at himself, raindrops dripping down on her snow-white face.

Even her figure in the storm also looked delicate and charming.

“None of your matter!” Wild Dog suddenly flared up and loudly shouted.

Xiao Huan was stunned, shrugged her shoulder and lowered her head but saw that Xiao Hui the monkey was looking at herself, she could not help but smiled and stuck out her tongue at it.

Xiao Hui grinned, [Zi Zi] laughed.

The wind blew and the rain fell, just when this storm showed no sign of stopping, Xiao Huan gradually felt her body started to shiver and was worrying about it when suddenly [Yi] a sound, she felt the rain above her head seemed to decrease by a lot. She raised her head to look and suddenly paused.

Without knowing when, Wild Dog Taoist had walked back and used his umbrella to shelter her, only within a short while, his body was wet from the

rain.

“There, give you the umbrella!” Wild Dog Taoist, as if unhappy with somebody, harshly shouted.

Xiao Huan stood up and exclaimed, “Priest, you.....”

Wild Dog Taoist’s eyes sneaked a look at her face for a moment and saw on Xiao Huan’s surprised face, glistening raindrops quietly dripping on her face, some fell onto her long lashes, reflecting the radiance and beauty in her sparkling bright eyes, absolutely captivating.

Wild Dog Taoist instantly was like being consumed by fire, pushed the umbrella into her hand and immediately walked off, without a care for the storm, loudly scolded, “All of you these young girls, always like to act pitiful, hateful, hateful!”

Xiao Huan, holding the umbrella and looking at Wild Dog Taoist’s back, suddenly laughed out, her laughter like a clear, melodious wind chime in the storm, laughed loudly and said, “Priest, you are a good person!”

Wild Dog Taoist did not dare to turn his head, [Pei] a sound, he angrily said, “Nonsense, your Taoist Uncle is a bad seed from the moment he was born and he will go all out against your likes of Good Faction people for his whole life!”

Xiao Huan stood holding the umbrella, smiled and looked at Wild Dog Taoist’s figure.

The umbrella had just left Wild Dog Taoist’s hand for a short while and he was

already drenched from head to toe. He looked around at the surroundings but could not find any place to hide from the rain so eventually he walked back to where Zhou YiXian was sitting below the small tree, humphed and following Zhou YiXian's example, flipped his clothes to cover his head, sulking and let the wind and rain drenched him.

Zhou YiXian looked at the ugly face of Wild Dog Taoist beside him, saw that his expression looked complicated and odd, looking both vexed and embarrassed. He suddenly laughed out loud and once he started he could not stop, he even put down his hands which were holding up the clothes, [Ha ha ha ha] laughing nonstop.

Wild Dog Taoist became infuriated from embarrassment, angrily said, "What are you laughing?"

Zhou YiXian pointed at him and [ha ha] laughed loudly, even disregarding the rain and wind beating on his face and loudly said, "I am a bad person, I am a bad person....."

Wild Dog Taoist immediately turned red, so Zhou YiXian's ears were that sharp, the words that Xiao Huan could not hear clearly, he could actually hear it from afar. Now that he saw Wild Dog Taoist looking extremely vexed after doing a good deed, as if he had gone against some principles, he really could not help but laughed out and almost fell over.

Wild Dog Taoist was extremely infuriated and stood up abruptly, Zhou YiXian was startled, although his mouth was still [ha ha] laughing but his body started to move back, unexpectedly the ground was slippery from the rain and [bong] his feet slipped and he fell back, landed into a mud hole, his whole body covered with mud.

Wild Dog Taoist taken aback for a moment but saw that Zhou YiXian was fumbling, looking extremely comical, immediately all of his vexness disappeared and he could not help but also laughed out loudly.

The two of them ridiculed and laughed at each other and then started quarrelling incessantly. Xiao Huan, standing a distance away, smiled but did not come forward.

The rain poured down and seemed to get heavier, between Heaven and Earth everywhere was dismal, instead only in this perilous death marsh, there was still a place with some mild warmth.

In the evening the rain suddenly screeched to a stop, a moment before the sky was so dark that it looked like it was almost the end of the world and the moment after the clouds had already cleared, one wondered if such weather only existed in this death marsh?

Xiao Huan heaved a long sigh and closed the umbrella, she looked up at the sky, although it was evening but after the heavy rain, the haze had dispersed slightly and the sky looked to be even brighter than daylight.

Even the air, those rotting stenchs, right now had also temporarily disappeared.

Xiao Huan turned around and looked in the direction of the small tree, Zhou YiXian and Wild Dog Taoist were still sitting there, just now during the big storm, both of them were still arguing loudly but after weathering the storm, the two of them obviously did not have any energy left, lifelessly put their clothes down from their heads, a sound of shush, the water flowed down like

rain, poured from their clothes.

Xiao Huan smiled and turned around. She placed Xiao Hui down and when Xiao Hui touched the ground, it leapt up twice and shook itself, causing the rainwater to spray all about, even Xiao Huan could not avoid in time. Xiao Huan laughed and chided it, she saw that within the water plants nearby, there seemed to be a small pond and walked over. She found a spot where there was not much water plants and looked down.

The flora in the pond were luxurious, even in this broad water surface, it seemed to reflect a faint clear jade color and she was unable to see how deep this pond was. Xiao Huan looked at her own reflection in the water reflection, slowly tidied up her appearance. The hair strands that were messed up by the storm, slowly returned back to its place, just that the clothes on her body were still wet from the storm and sticking onto her body, making her feel uncomfortable.

Far behind her, Zhou YiXian and Wild Dog seemed to start bickering again but their voices were not very loud so it was not that clear. The surroundings also suddenly quietened down, from the relentless storm until now, it seemed to be especially quiet.

Even on the water plants beside her, the glistening water bead silently rolled along the green leaf vein, the sound of the water bead dropping into the pond also seemed to be especially loud.

Xiao Huan took a deep breath involuntarily, after the rain, the air contained an indistinctly sweet smell.

Suddenly, Xiao Hui who had been quietly staying in the back, made a sharp

and tense [Zi zi] shout.

Xiao Huan got a shock and gave a questioning stare but suddenly became speechless, in the pond in front of them, in the dense water plants near to them, a pair of eyes appeared, almost twice as big as an average human and staring at her.

Xiao Huan exclaimed in surprise, Zhou YiXian and Wild Dog Taoist who were a distance away were startled but without waiting for them to react, the surface of the pond in front of Xiao Huan exploded, a thick column of water suddenly arise and attacked straight towards Xiao Huan.

Xiao Hui shrieked out loud!

Xiao Huan's face turned pale but she was still calm, subconsciously she took a step back, her left hand withdrew into her sleeve. The water column looked like it was going to hit Xiao Huan in an instant, suddenly an orange halo shot out from Xiao Huan's left hand and became a light screen, shielding in front of her.

That big thick water column was blocked by that orange light screen, instantly stopped in mid-air and was unable to move forward, at the same time an extremely hoarse muffled shout emitted from the water column, the water column shook in the mid-air and within the white water sprays, a black figure appeared and intended to land back into the pond.

Xiao Huan had not recovered from her fright and was about to step back, at this moment, a sharp whistling was heard in the air and a light yellow figure, like a flash of lightning, bolted over and in an instant, appeared before her, it was Jin PingEr.

Jin PingEr's pretty face looked deadly, her right hand waved and the purple energy immediately surged and directly entered into the pond, in a short moment there was a loud boom, a turbulent water wall shot up from the pond and charged up directly into the sky, its height exceeding several zhang.

That black figure was forced out by her but still appeared to have some strength left. Although it did not dare to deal directly with Jin PingEr but following the flow of water, it leapt backwards and landed in the water plants with a plop, its body was seen writhing, like a fish, swiftly swimming forward.

Everyone was stunned, that strange thing looked like a human but this type of movement in the water was not what an average human could achieved. Jin PingEr frowned slightly but did not chase after it. Looked like that strange thing was going to disappear into the far corners of the pond within the haze.

Unexpectedly at this moment, that strange thing made another angry hoarse shout, a black-green light with a few streaks of blood-red flashed lightly in the thin haze, that strange thing immediately turned and flew back, as if it was extremely fearful of that black-green light.

Just that when its body was in mid-air, the verdant water plants in the pond underneath its feet, stretching both sides from beneath its feet suddenly rapidly withered and turned brown, even the surface of the water also turned slightly black. Only the plants in Jin PingEr's direction remained verdant.

The strange thing seemed to bellow its last roar but still did not dare to land back into the pond, it flew towards Jin PingEr, evidently making its final fight.

Xiao Huan cried out, "Sister, be careful!"

Jin PingEr's expression did not change, a sneer appeared on her pretty face. As the black strange thing approached nearer, Jin PingEr's pretty eyes flashed, her right hand suddenly raised and the purple light swelled. Nobody could clearly see what magical weapon was used in the resplendent purple light but saw the purple rays like swords, struck down on that strange thing's head. That strange thing [Hou] made a muffled shout, its body flew a few zhang from the impact into the sky and following which it dropped down heavily, its hands and feet twitched and looked like it would not survive.

Gradually it started to quieten down, the turbulent waves in the pond also slowly settled down. Everyone turned to look at that strange thing on the ground and then, each one of them, including Jin PingEr, were all taken aback.

That was really a strange monster but it was a strange monster that looked like a human.

Like a human, it had hands and legs and even on its body, there was tight-fitting clothes but it seemed like to increase flexibility in the water, it wore little clothes. The skin that was not covered, flakes by flakes, it looked like fish scales.

But the thing that shocked them most, was its head. This was actually a fish head, the lips, gill and even the eyes, were also like a fish, it did not have eyelids.

Right now that fish-head-human-body strange monster lay on the ground, blood flowed continuously from its mouth and its body did not move at all, seemed like the heavy blow from Jin PingEr, struck it to death.

Xiao Huan looked at that strange monster and felt a shiver in her heart, subconsciously she shrank back behind Jin PingEr, Jin PingEr lightly patted her

shoulder and softly comforted her.

After a while, from the haze in front of them, two people slowly walked out. Although they walked out at the same time but both of them were rather far away from each other, as if staying vigilance against each other. It was Ghost Li and Wan Du Clan Qin WuYan.

Ghost Li's gaze swept around, he paused for a while at Xiao Huan's face who was behind Jin PingEr and then moved away.

Xiao Huan looked at Ghost Li and then looked at Qin WuYan and could not help but felt shocked, these three Evil Faction's younger generation most outstanding experts suddenly were secretly meeting up, and for whatever reason, it made one perplexed and excited thinking about it.

Qin WuYan walked to the strange monster's body and used his feet to kick it, that strange monster flipped and did not move.

Qin WuYan indifferently said, "Dead."

Xiao Hui, who was hiding at the side, [Zi zi] shouted twice and jumped onto Ghost Li's shoulder.

Ghost Li looked at Wild Dog Taoist and looked at Zhou YiXian and Xiao Huan, seemed to frown and then slowly said, "All that is to be said have been said, so that's all!"

After speaking, he turned around and was about to leave when Qin WuYan suddenly said, "Ghost Li brother, this not-human-and-not-animal strange

monster suddenly appear here, there is something fishy about it, don't you think so?"

Ghost Li stopped but did not speak, Jin PingEr looked at Qin WuYan and said, "Why, you know what this is?"

Qin WuYan was taken aback for a moment and shook his head slightly, he looked at Jin PingEr and Ghost Li's expressions again, they also seemed not to know where this half-human-half-fish strange monster came from. Just at this moment, suddenly somebody walked out beside them and loudly said, "I know where this strange monster came from."

The three of them got a shock at the same time and turned to look, it was Zhou YiXian. Even Xiao Huan was also shocked and said, "Grandfather, you know?"

There was still mud on Zhou YiXian's forehead but right now his demeanour was extremely unusual, with his hands behind his back and his expression haughty, he said, "Your grandfather has been roaming the world all his life, the bridges that I have crossed are more than the roads that you have walked, do you think I have lived in vain? This strange monster is called 'human fish', actually it is not considered an evil monster and in the Southern border's range of thousands mountains, the human fish race is one of the sixty-three different races."

Ghost Li and the rest were all surprised, naturally everyone knew about the thousands of mountains in Southern border but in the Southern border's wildlands, nobody had heard of the sixty-three different races. However looking Zhou YiXian's expression, he did not look like he was spouting nonsense.

Jin PingEr frowned and said, "That is strange, the Southern border is no less than thousands of miles from death marsh, why did this human fish come all the way here?"

This question befuddled the haughty Zhou YiXian, he scratched his head and said, "That I don't know."

Everyone remained quiet for a while and looked like there would be no conclusion, Ghost Li was the first to turn and walk away. Xiao Hui the monkey on his shoulder suddenly turned around, grinned and waved at Xiao Huan.

Xiao Huan smiled.

Wild Dog glanced at Xiao Huan and followed up but he had only took a few steps when Xiao Huan shouted from behind, "Priest, the road ahead is perilous, you must be careful!"

Jin PingEr was surprised and looked at Xiao Huan but Xiao Huan was smiling and did not look different, instead Wild Dog Taoist who was ahead, sped up. Nobody knew if he heard or pretended not to hear, without even turning his head, he rushed up to catch up with Ghost Li.

Qin WuYan looked at the direction where Ghost Li left, walked over to Jin PingEr, smiled and said, "Jin Fairy's 'Purple light sword' reputation is well-known, now that I have seen it, it really deserved its reputation."

Jin PingEr smiled blandly and said, "Qin GongZi is making fun of me, how can I compare to you, just by using a little poison and it can change this pond into a poisonous pond, within fifty years nothing can grow here."

Qin WuYan's eyes froze, his expression also seemed to turn cold. He looked at Jin PingEr for a while then unhurriedly said, "My humble self's 'FuPing' simple poison was made only within half a year, it is just a bag of tricks and did not catch the master's eyes so it was never shown. Didn't expect that Jin Fairy know about this, my humble self is really filled with admiration, really admire!"

Jin PingEr met his stare and did not show any sign of yielding, she said, "Qin GongZi overpraise me."

Qin WuYan looked at her again, a cold ray flashed in his eyes but then a smile appeared on his face, he nodded and said, "As such, my humble self will make a move first, the plans that we have made....."

Jin PingEr interrupted him and said, "Don't worry, I know what to do with that matter!"

Qin WuYan smiled and said, "Good." and then nodded towards Xiao Huan, considered that he had made his greetings, turned and left, disappearing quickly into the haze.

After Qin WuYan's figure disappeared, Jin PingEr still remained silent. After a while, she suddenly heaved a long sigh, Xiao Huan who stood behind her, almost at the same time could feel that actually Jin PingEr's body had been tensed all along and only now then her body relaxed.

"Sister, do you feel not alright?", Xiao Huan was concerned.

Jin PingEr shook her head slightly, looked at Xiao Huan and gently said, "I did

not come in time just now, are you hurt?"

Xiao Huan laughed, shook her head and said, "I am alright, only that I was caught in the rain just now but luckily I haveaiya!"

Jin PingEr was shocked and said, "What is it?"

Xiao Huan stamped her feet and said, "I forgot to return the umbrella to that priest."

Jin PingEr shrugged her shoulders and said, "Then keep it, next time you can return it when you have a chance to meet him again."

Xiao Huan quietly nodded, Jin PingEr gazed out afar and suddenly as if she had a feeling, she spoke quietly to Xiao Huan, "Xiao Huan, next time you must be careful of that two persons."

Xiao Huan did not understand and said, "What?"

Jin PingEr's eyes flashed and a cold ray seemed to flash, she coolly said, "Those two persons, they are really merciless and ruthless, if you see them in the future, you better stay far away immediately and be sure not to go near them!"

Xiao Huan kept quiet and slowly nodded but in her heart, for no reason, she suddenly felt disappointed, indistinctly she recalled back many years ago, that young man who was cheated of his money by Zhou YiXian.

Chapter 92: Mantis

Mantis

[Translator's note: It could also mean: The mantis stalk the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind]

Wild Dog Taoist followed Ghost Li, trudging deep into the death marsh.

Because of the heavy rain earlier in the day the initial soft loose soil turned extremely muddy. But after Ghost Li met up with Qin WuYan and Jin PingEr, he insisted not to use magical weapon to fly and instead to travel by foot.

It seemed like Jin PingEr and him were the same, both apprehended about something.

If this was in the past, Wild Dog Taoist would naturally let loose a torrent of abuse and minimally at least complained incessantly but right now, he seemed lost in his thoughts and did not even speak a single word, quietly following behind Ghost Li and that instead made Ghost Li curious.

Ghost Li looked at Wild Dog Taoist's distracted expression, suppressed his voice and indifferently said, "What's with him?"

These words seemed to be for himself because other than the water plants and ponds that looked icy-cold in the death marsh, there was no other person at all, other than the monkey, Xiao Hui, on his shoulder.

And it was Xiao Hui, who was looking drowsy before and after hearing Ghost Li's question, like being stimulated, it suddenly became excited. Its extremely intelligent-looking eyes rolled around and suddenly, jumped down from Ghost Li's shoulder and started to dance.

This strange behaviour, even Wild Dog Taoist, who was following behind, also got a shock and looked towards it.

Xiao Hui [Zi zi] and grinned, danced to Ghost Li and then its eye turned and suddenly leapt to the small pond beside them. It held up some water from the pond and dripped onto its own head instead, and then using its fingers to point towards the sky, jumping up and down.

Wild Dog Taoist fixed his stare on it and walked to Ghost Li and said, "What happen, this, this monkey is it mad?"

Ghost Li instead frowned and spoke quietly to Xiao Hui, "Raining?"

Xiao Hui was extremely delighted, nodded its head in succession and then broke a leaf from an unknown plant and brandished it on its head, as if blocking something. It then twisted its body to make a pose, twisting here and there and as if acting in a play, the leaf from its right hand changed to its left and then from left to the right.

Wild Dog watched and watched, suddenly he felt an unexplainable feeling of guilt. He stared at that weird monkey and spoke to Ghost Li, “Crazy, crazy, this monkey must be crazy.”

The monkey Xiao Hu flung the leaf away and then within two or three jumps, leapt back to Ghost Li’s shoulder. It pointed to the direction that they had come from, [Zi zi zi zi] calling out incessantly.

Ghost Li remained silent for a while and then slowly turned over and looked at Wild Dog Taoist.

Wild Dog Taoist forced a smile and said, “Why, why did you look at me for?”

Ghost Li’s gaze sneaked a look at his bundle on his back and indifferently said, “When it rained just now, did you lend your umbrella to, to, “ speaking until here, he frowned slightly and looked at Xiao Hui, thought for a moment and said, “You lent your umbrella to that fortune-telling young lady to shelter from the rain?”

“Zi!.....”

Without waiting for Wild Dog Taoist to answer, Xiao Hui who was on Ghost Li’s shoulder had already jumped up, looking very excited, the monkey smiled until its eyes narrowed up.

Wild Dog Taoist’s face turned red and then white, looking extremely embarrassed. Suddenly he pointed at Ghost Li and angrily shouted, “Stinky brat, I tell you, your Taoist Uncle used to kill people like flies, those who died at my hands are no less than one thousand, if not eight hundred.....”

Ghost Li glanced up at him and with a look that showed he did not even care, turned and stepped forward, indifferently saying, “Whether you have killed one thousand or eight hundred, what does it have to do with me?”

Wild Dog Taoist’s breath stopped, he could not carry on his initial bragging to boost his vibes. Ghost Li was heard speaking slowly from ahead, “Then again, even if you have killed one thousand or eight hundred, what does it have in relation to you lending the umbrella to that young lady?”

After he had spoken, he stopped walking and turned back to look at Wild Dog Taoist.

Wild Dog was stunned, as if facing a powerful opponent, he said, “What, what do you want to do.....no, what did you say?”

Ghost Li appraised him and suddenly laughed, he said, “But ever since after the Forsaken Abyss, you have surprised me again with this matter!”

“.....Unexpectedly you will also perform such hero-save-the-beauty stuff!’

Wild Dog Taoist stared at him dumbfoundedly and until he recovered, Ghost Li had already walked off with Xiao Hui, his figure almost vanishing ahead into the haze.

Wild Dog Taoist looked at that direction then suddenly leapt up in anger, stamped his feet and said, “Pei, your father, I, have always been a bad egg and have never done such a thing in my life, and furthermore, to say that the young girl is considered beauty.....uh!”

Wild Dog Taoist scratched his head and suddenly stopped while frowning. After a long while, as if talking to himself, he said, “Actually that young girl looks not bad.....”

Speaking such words, Wild Dog Taoist seemed surprised at himself and suddenly shook his head violently and cursed softly. He walked ahead in big strides towards the direction where Ghost Li had gone to catch up, soon he disappeared into the gradually thickening night haze.

Silence all around, the sky gradually darkened and the darkness invaded, slowly swallowing everything.

The other side of the death marsh.

Evil Faction Chang Shen Hall leader YuYang Zi in a robe of white, hands clasped behind his back and looking up into the sky, the night breeze in the death marsh blew, gently fluttering his robe. His bearing like a celestial immortal.

Other than his left hand, the empty sleeve adding a few degrees of inexplicable humour.

That Qing Yun Hill battle, he unfortunately was hurt by the world’s number one remarkable sword - the mark by Zhu Xian.

The night breeze carried some chill and the air still seemed to carry the humidity from the earlier heavy rain. The darkness filled the surroundings but only his figure was proud and conspicuous.

In the darkness behind him, indistinctly breathing sounds were heard. Those were his sect's men, hiding in the darkness and patiently waiting for his order.

Evil Faction Chang Shen Hall rose to prominence eight hundred years ago and until YuYang Zi this era, it was already the seventh generation. They had come a long way but nobody knew better than YuYang Zi, that behind this grand view the danger that Chang Shen Hall faced.

No successor!

In the Qing Yun battle ten years ago, YuYang Zi was elected to be the in-charge by the other three powerful branches of the Evil Faction. That was the prime and pinnacle moment of Chang Shen Hall's reputation in the Evil Faction in these hundred years and at that time, YuYang Zi was complacent. In addition he had also several favourite highly-skilled disciples which he had painstakingly trained for the past hundred years.

At that time, YuYang Zi really thought there was nothing that could obstruct him in this world, only with one stroke he would route the decrepit and outdated Qing Yun Sect and Chang Shen Hall's reputation would naturally awe the Evil Faction. With his own capability and with his highly-skilled disciples, in the next eight hundred years Chang Shen Hall would become the second Blood Forger Hall and him, would become the second Elder Blackheart!

Just that, all of these glorious dreams, on Qing Yun Hill under the Zhu Xian Sword, became bubbles!

He himself lost his left hand in the Zhu Xian Sword formation, not to mention the severe loss of his skills. And because Chang Shen Hall was leading the

attack, all of his highly skilled disciples were naturally in the frontline, the fights with Qing Yun Sect various elders leaders at TongTian Peak took down half of his men and after that when the Zhu Xian Sword formation started, the remaining Chang Shen Hall disciples again suffered heavy casualties. Only a few survived the battle, the whole sect was considered almost practically wiped out.

In this world everything could be easily obtained but the hardest was talents, especially the ones that were painstakingly trained by yourself and totally trustworthy!

In these ten years, YuYang Zi worked his heart's out and Chang Shen Hall gradually started to turnaround but in YuYang Zi's heart, that shadow in his heart grew bigger. The battle of Qing Yun almost totally destroyed the main force of Chang Shen Hall and in the past few years, if not for YuYang Zi he himself possessed powerful cultivated skills and managed to suppress the enemies who were lying around covetously eyeing his sect and especially seven years ago, he made a decision there and then, disregarding objections from his men and forcefully relocated the headquarters to this desolated death marsh, far away from the other three powerful branches reaches, nobody would know in the end, what would be their end results.

But just one month ago the increasingly intense internal fight within the Evil Faction screeched to a sudden stop and the last capable small-medium branch Blood-Forger Hall was also eventually subdued by Ghost King Sect and everyone had since positioned their stance. After a short temporary and breath-stopping peace, YuYang Zi's instinct predicted that very soon the next intense internal fight would break out between the four big powerful branches.

After all in the countless Evil Faction disciples' hearts, the figure of Elder Blackheart unifying the Evil Faction and marching unhindered all over the world eight hundred years ago had already become an eternal legend!

But legend was still a legend and right now at this moment, to Chang Shen Hall and even to YuYang Zi, their situation was extremely unfavourable. Limited by their capability, in the internal fight for the small and medium-sized branches, Chang Shen Hall were unable to join in, as such over time, the differences between their strength and the other three powerful branches were stretched even further. This matter lay heavily in YuYang Zi's heart and he almost could not sleep.

Also at this moment, as if the Heaven had opened its eyes, the signs of the birth of a rare treasure suddenly appeared in the death marsh just beside Chang Shen Hall. YuYang Zi was pleasantly surprised, if they could really obtain a rare treasure like Qing Yun Sect's 'Zhu Xian the Ancient Sword' then the survival of Chang Shen Hall would not be a problem and then from there, they could make plans to expand and who knows they might still have a chance to come back.

Under such circumstances, Chang Shen Hall viewed the rare treasure in the death marsh as something that was already theirs and would never allow others to encroach on it. Just that the news was somehow leaked out and within a few days it had already caused a stir in the world, immediately the world viewed it with fear and the Good and Evil Faction experts, one by one, gathered in the death marsh.

YuYang Zi was shocked and angry but right now he could not turn back. Therefore Chang Shen Hall full force was assigned into the death marsh, on one hand to search for that rare treasure location and on the other hand, to watch and kill those that came. In the past few days, the number of people that were secretly killed by Chang Shen Hall in death marsh were no less than a dozen and among them, there were individual Good Faction celestial beings and also highly-skilled disciples from the other Evil Faction branches.

For the sake of his own sect's survival, YuYang Zi could not care less!

This night YuYang Zi received his sect's secret report, a group of Good Faction men had set up camp near the 'Bottomless pit' at the periphery of the death marsh and were getting ready to spend the night there. And in the next few succession of reports from the scouts, YuYang Zi's face became colder and colder, in his heart he already knew who those people were.

Those were the young and elite disciples of Qing Yun Sect, initially there should only be a dozen or more men but after hearing the scouts' reports, the number of people were already more than a dozen and with them, there were monks and people dressed in FenXiang Valley clothes. YuYang Zi frowned tightly and breathed deeply, he gazed out far ahead, as if waiting for something.

After a long while, a light footsteps sounded in the darkness behind him, a shrewd gaunt middle-aged man walked to YuYang Zi side and YuYang Zi immediately turned around and faced him, obviously this person's status was special.

This middle-aged man's name was MengJi and he was one of the elite disciple of Chang Shen Hall YuYang Zi and also one of the few Chang Shan Hall disciples that survived the Qing Yun Hill battle, therefore he was one of the people that had YuYang Zi's deep trust. Right now one of the reason why YuYang Zi still could not make up his mind was also because he was waiting for this person to come back.

MengJi bowed to YuYang Zi, YuYang Zi shook his head slightly and said, "Forget it, dispense with courtesy, how is it?"

This question was asked out of the blue but MengJi obviously knew the

meaning of YuYang Zi's question, he quietly said, "Subordinate have already brought men to Black Water Trench and White Horse River which are on the other side of the death marsh to search but did not find any signs of the Ghost King Sect, Wan Du Clan and HeHuan Sect men arriving in force, only a few lower-ranked figures were found and subordinate already handled them."

YuYang Zi perked up and a smile appeared on his face for the first time, he nodded and said, "Good! As such we have no more concerns, tonight we will attack those uppity young people from Qing Yun Sect, Tian Yin Temple and FenXiang Valley in full force. First get rid of these people then the Good Faction will be powerless to vie with us again!"

But MengJi did not seemed delighted, instead he seemed worried. He hesitated for a while and eventually still say, "Sect leader, but three days ago news from our undercover men stationed near Big Wang village reported that it seemed like Ghost Li and Qin WuYan has already arrived, furthermore HeHuan Sect Jin PingEr's location has always been uncertain, we cannot not be wary!"

YuYang Zi's face twitched, revealing indignation, he hatefully said, "How would I not know, those Good Faction people only want that treasure while those people from Wan Du Clan, Ghost King Sect, what they want is my life!"

MengJi trembled but did not reveal what his thoughts, he looked uncertain and quietly asked, "Sect leader, then what shall we do?"

YuYang Zi humphed, breathed deeply and relaxed his body, he said, "By now we can't turn back already. Taking the advantage that Wan Du Clan, Ghost King Sect and HeHuan Sect men has not arrived, we first settle those Good Faction brats then search for the treasure in full force. Looking from the signs in the past few days, this must be an extraordinary treasure, once we obtain it, we don't have to fear the other three branches!"

MengJi bowed his head and said, "Sect leader is brilliant."

YuYang Zi nodded his head slightly and turned around, calmed himself down and focused. He then stretched out his only right hand, waved heavily once into the darkness and immediately the shadows assembled. In a short while a big group of Chang Shen disciples appeared, moving with ease to make a long-range raid towards the direction that YuYang Zi's finger pointed.

The boundless night, bleak with an aura of death!

Death marsh, bottomless pit.

The stretch of land looked like a piece of flat ground during the day but nobody knew why it had such a strange name. Unless they were the villagers that had lived for years near the death marsh, then they would know that in the middle of these lands, a big piece of land that looked the nothing different from the rest, all overgrown with wild grass, was actually an enormous bottomless pit. And in it, suction power of the sludge was extremely strong and if a ordinary person stepped in unaware, he would be suck in in less than a moment and then from there without any trace rotted silently under the deep marsh.

Therefore the reason for the death marsh name was because in the marsh, these type of horrible silent killers were numerous!

But these young Good Faction people were obviously not ordinary people.

Qing Yun Sect group of people travelled for a few days in the death marsh and in-between met Tian Yin Temple and FenXiang Valley disciples, the three parties

joined together and contrary to expectations, they saw familiar figures.

Tian Yin Temple had FaXiang, FaShan as leaders and among FenXiang Valley, there were Li Xun and YanHong. But just that after meeting up, their relationships became greatly different. Su YiCai as the leader of Qing Yun Sect disciples got along harmoniously with Tian Yin Temple disciples and they chatted merrily but over at FenXiang Valley instead, there were some estrangement feelings with these two big sects, as if they purposely maintained their distance.

The delicate reason within, everyone knew in their hearts but on the surface, they were still courteous and the three sects worked together, for justice and morals, kill the evil and eliminate the demons, exterminate the Evil Faction!

This night, the group of people stayed near the bottomless pit for the night. After starting up the bonfire and reminding the junior brother and sisters again not to wander off on their own, Su YiCai then invited Tian Yin Temple FaXiang, FenXiang Valley Li Xun to a corner and quietly discussed.

And at this moment, Li Xun was frowning slightly, a disdain expression in the recesses of his eyes but his expression still maintained an amiable look, he quietly said, "Su senior brother, perhaps you worry too much?"

Su YiCai smiled and said, "If Li senior brother have any brilliant suggestion, please say! My humble self will respectfully listen."

After Su YiCai and FaXiang's attention were on him, Li Xun paused for a while then said, "I thought our forces are formidable after our three sects entered the marsh, the disciples that Chang Shen Hall sent out were all routed by us. And ever since from the Qing Yun battle, Chang Shen Hall highly skilled disciples are

all either dead or injured, other than the YuYang Zi holding up the fort, the rest are really not worth any consideration. Instead Su senior brother said there will be danger tonight, isn't it too much?"

Su YiCai after remaining silent for a while, said, "What Li senior brother said makes sense. But in Evil Faction Chang Shen Hall, YuYang Zi Sect leader's skills is extremely powerful. Just him, we cannot let our guard down. Other than that, from the time Chang Shen Hall rose to prominence and ranked as the Evil Faction four big powerful branches until today, it has already been eight hundred years long. As the saying goes, the centipede does not die easily and beside they are determined to get this death marsh's rare treasure, the dog might be desperate enough to jump over the wall, we better be careful!"

FaXiang nodded and said, "Su senior brother words makes sense, we really have to be careful."

Li Xun saw that both of them were saying the same things and so felt it would not be appropriate to add on but he had an arrogant characteristic and it revealed in his eyes, he indifferently said, "Then according to both senior brothers, how shall we proceed tonight?"

FaXiang looked at him and was taken aback, he turned to look at Su YiCai but Su YiCai behaved as if nothing had happened, as if he did not notice and still smiled and said, "Li Xun senior brother is indeed brilliant, with brother's talent, in the future if the matter was accomplished, Li senior brother must remember the first merit."

LiXun smiled and actually did not thank him modestly.

FaXiang who was standing beside, saw Su YiCai's expression remained the

same regardless of anger or happiness, suddenly that youth 'Zhang Xiao Fan' figure flashed past his eyes, if only he was also here today, how good it would be.....

He felt an inexplicable pain in his heart and softly sighed, in the background he heard Su YiCai quietly started to make arrangements and quickly focused to listen, Su YiCai suppressed his voice and softly said, "Both senior brothers, today we....."

The night seemed to darken even more.

The night in the death marsh seemed to be enveloped by the black clouds or maybe during each night, this enormous death marsh would generate a haze.

Sheets and sheets of grey mist in the night air, not to mention the moon, even a single star also could not be seen.

Near the bottomless pit where the Good Faction young disciples were resting, other than a few bonfire ashes remnants struggling to burn, everywhere was quiet, not a single sound.

Indistinctly looking into the darkness, those Good Faction disciples were curled up into their clothes and covered their whole body tightly. After all these young people's cultivated skills were not enough to stand the death marsh night chill that seeped into their bones.

Chang Shan Hall disciples silently surrounded these people in all directions, quietly waiting for YuYang Zi's command in the darkness.

YuYang Zi slowly stretched out his only right hand.

Standing beside him, MengJi suddenly quietly said, "Sect leader."

YuYang Zi's hand paused, he felt slightly displeased but as MengJi was an important figure in his heart, he controlled his temper and said, "What is it?"

MengJi seemed to sense YuYang Zi's resentment but after hesitating for a moment, he still said, "Sect leader, look at these Good Faction people. How come there is not even a single night guard around?"

YuYang Zi was stunned for a while and then sarcastically said, "These brats, ambitious and arrogant, these few days I executed plans to make them underestimate the enemies, they have already thought we are useless and totally disregard us at all. It is not surprising to see that there are no night guards!"

MengJi's expression changed but eventually he kept quiet.

YuYang Zi did not pay attention to him again, his right hand flipped and a strange mirror with black and white sides appeared in his hand. He then flew up into the sky and drew a brilliant light streak across the night.

All of the Chang Shan Hall men cried out at the same time, reverberated far in the night, swarmed forward with immeasurable murderous aura!

A faint bleakness, in that dying light remnant.

The last ash at this moment quietly extinguished!

Swallowed up by the darkness!

After a moment, suddenly a clear and sharp sound [Qiang Lang] rang out like dragons singing.

A stream of jade-green light, a stream of blue light, a stream of golden light, a stream of white light and a stream of green light.

Five streams of brilliant strange lights, at the night black screen, like a sharp sword piercing the firmament, suddenly appeared in the deepest corner of the darkness and charging towards the Chang Shen Hall men.

And behind their back, even more brilliant light rays, appeared one by one.

YuYang Zi saw it all, his face turned extremely pale!

Chapter 93: Oriole

It happened suddenly, the unforeseen event arose suddenly in the dark. Those Chang Shen Hall men were caught unaware and could not react in time.

And in this flint-spark moment, the Good Faction men who were lying in ambush and all ready to risk their lives, each one of them wielded their magical weapons and charged over. With the intended attacking the unprepared ones, naturally they had a very big advantage and those Good Faction disciples that were here, each one of them at least an outstanding successor of one of the big sects. Although their cultivated skills might not be on par with YuYang Zi that kind of figure but against the ordinary sect members, they far exceeded them.

The moment was liken to a tiger entering a sheep flock, the Good and Evil Faction had always viewed each other as enemies and naturally they would not hold back during attack. Various kinds of light flashed crazily in the night, wails and screams were heard incessantly and the smell of blood arose immediately, drifting within the death marsh.

Among the different light rays, the one which was the nearest, flashed a blinding gleam of jade-green light. It belonged to Qing Yun Sect, Long Shou Valley disciple Lin JingYu's Dragon Slayer Sword.

This young man who had never displayed his skills, right now suddenly became a dazzling icon. The Dragon Slayer Sword gave a thundering sharp whistle, the incredible jade-coloured light exploded up towards the sky, bathing its owner in it. Without any hesitation, he charged right into the Chang Shen Hall group of people.

That was the most splendid stream of light in the night, his eyes were cold but deep inside, a fervid zeal seemed to burn, as if thirsting for the other party's fresh blood to be shed by the cold lights.

The first several Chang Shen Hall disciples, after the jade-green light rays swept past them, became a spray of blood rain.

The crowd was in a uproar and gushed forward to besiege him but Lin JingYu seemed not to even care about the attackers coming from behind his back and only looked forward, charging into the densest area, killing wherever he went and he could not be stopped. Everywhere he went, blood and flesh splattered. The rest of the Good Faction disciples caught up after a short while and each wielded their magical weapons and fought in close combat with the Chang Shen Hall men.

In the chaotic battle, Su YiCai who was shocked by Lin JingYu's actions, shouted loudly, "Lin junior brother, be careful....."

Just that Lin JingYu seemed not to be able to listen to anyone's warning, he who at this very moment right now, had already become a totally different person from that youth who was learning the craft at Long Shou Valley. Holding the Dragon Slayer Sword in his hand, his body turned into an evil-killing light!

Countless of Chang Shen Hall men surrounded him completely, even with that

he never turned his head back once. The Dragon Slayer Sword glistened while been brandishing in the night, numerous fresh blood sprayed up and spilled, staining his robes.

Until the end, countless Chang Shen Hall men pursued after him but yet nobody dared to block his way. Everyone fled for their lives and did not dared to face this mad-like monster.

Until, a piercing sound [Wu wu] was heard coming from deep inside the darkness, a white light flashed past and a circular object, spinning and descending at a great speed from the sky, aiming for Lin JingYu's head.

Lin JingYu cried out loudly, the Dragon Slayer Sword which was swishing in the air and fighting with the enemies, immediately flew back. He grabbed it with one hand and pierced it towards the sky, instantly the jade-green light swelled immensely and he leapt and soared into the air. Unexpectedly that disc thing became even more powerful, black and white lights shone out in turns and actually forcibly suppressed the resplendent jade-green light.

For the first time Lin JingYu's face turned pale. He knew that a master had finally emerged from Chang Shen Hall and although this unknown magical weapon looked to be unremarkable but it totally disregarded the Dragon Slayer Sword's unparalleled sharp sword light rays, carrying with it a force of extreme pressure and rapidly pushing down.

With the increasing pressure from that disc, Lin JingYu's face became paler and paler. Suddenly he bellowed and flew out inverted, only a split second later, that disc slammed down with a boom, creating a large pit of one zhang circumference at where he stood previously. The ruthlessness of this method also showed the person's extreme indignant.

Lin JingYu's body flew out inverted, the Qing Yun Sect disciples who were behind saw it and went up to catch but because Lin JingYu had charged recklessly into the midst of Chang Shen Hall group, surrounding him were all enemies. Before he could land and stand properly, he already felt severe pain and the next moment, three, four sharp blades were already hacking into his body.

Fresh blood spurted like fountain, bright and vivid, it dyed his robes red. The corner of Lin JingYu's eyes twitched but he did not have any fear or intention to withdraw. The Dragon Slayer Sword in his spilled blood became even more brilliant, wheeling around his body and immediately wails and screams were heard, three, four Chang Shen Hall disciples stumbled back, with limbs severed and vomiting blood, it seemed like they would not be able to survive.

Everyone saw that this young man had such courage and for a moment transfixed by him.

In a short while the Good Faction men charged over, Chang Shen Hall disciples did not dare to continued fighting and retreated back. And at the place where Lin JingYu was beaten, YuYang Zi emerged slowly, his expression savage, where had the celestial demeanour usually seen went to?

By this time, the fightings had gradually stopped. Chang Shen Hall disciples slowly retreated behind YuYang Zi while the Good Faction young disciples also came together. Su YiCai, Fa Xiang, Li Xun etc stood at the front, Small Bamboo Valley WenMin walked over and helped Lin JingYu to bandage his wounds and to stop the bleeding, at the same time she quietly said, "You this young man, why do you not treasure your life at all?"

Lin JingYu only saw WenMin a few times at TongTian Peak at that time and was surprised to receive her care suddenly. In the past ten years, he trained under the mysterious old man inside TongTian Peak Founders Ancestral Hall and with only his own aptitude and stoic perseverance, he finally made a breakthrough. And today his exhibition of his skills shocked everyone, causing everyone to view him in a different light.

But when this stranger senior sister asked him this question, suddenly he did not know how to answer and could not reply. WenMin had always been kind-hearted and when she saw that half of his body was bleeding, she took advantage of the respite from fighting and offered her help with his wounds. But due to the volatile situation, she roughly dressed up his wounds and then quietly said, "There will be another battle later, you must be careful."

Lin JingYu felt a warm feeling in his heart, nodded and said quietly, "Thank you Senior sister."

WenMin smiled and walked to stand beside Lu XueQi, Lu XueQi glanced over at Lin JingYu, her face expressionless but a flash of light seemed to brush past in her eyes.

Over at Chang Shen Hall side, YuYang Zi's face was cold and stern, his only hand held on so tightly onto the magical weapon, 'Yin Yang Mirror', that his veins popped out.

The raid on Good Faction was instead foiled by the Good Faction juniors, he did a cursory glance and saw that in only a short amount of effort, Chang Shen Hall had already lost one-third of its men but over at Good Faction side, almost no damage was sustained. Lin JingYu seemed to be the only one with the most severe wounds after being slashed by several swords.

Li Xun looked at the the Evil Faction Chang Shen Hall group, his eyes shone and he suddenly lowered his voice and said, “Su senior brother really has divine foresight, my humble self is impressed!”

Su YiCai smiled and said, “It is just coincidental. There will still be many occasions in the future to rely on Li senior brother for support, I hope that Li senior brother will favour me with your guidance.”

Li Xun indeed dare not look down on Su YiCai anymore, he nodded and said, “You’re too kind.”

Fa Xiang instead looked at the injured Lin JingYu for a while and seemed to have the intention to go over and convey his concern but eventually suppressed it. Ever since Qing Yun Sect and Tian Yin Temple travelling parties met up, both parties got along quite well but only Qing Yun Sect Lin JingYu from the start till the end, was still extremely cold towards Tian Yin Temple monks. As for the underlying reason, no doubt everyone knew it in their hearts, just that nobody wished to open up the old wounds so all along, instead it was the Tian Yin Temple monks who intentionally or unintentionally avoided Lin JingYu.

But since Lin JingYu was injured, Fa Xiang was still concerned. He turned around and spoke softly to Su YiCai, “Su senior brother, I hope your sect junior brother Lin JingYu’s wounds is not serious?”

Su YiCai already saw WenMin dressing up Lin JingYu’s wounds and turned to look at WenMin, WenMin understood and nodded slightly. Su YiCai was relieved and turned to Fa Xiang, “Lin junior brother’s injuries are nothing serious, Fa Xiang senior brother don’t have to worry.”

Fa Xiang bowed and pressed his palms together, chanted softly.

Su YiCai took a deep breath and looked ahead, he spoke in a clear loud voice, “YuYang Zi senior, to say you are considered a senior master too and Chang Shen Hall ranks as one of the four big powerful sects of Evil Faction, how can you use this kind of dirty tactic and not be afraid that you will be the laughing stock of the world?”

YuYang Zi furiously said, “You this kind of so-called proper Good Faction also did the same and ambushed us, and still dare to have the audacity to speak loudly here without any shame?”

Su YiCai’s expression remained unchanged and awe-inspiringly righteously replied, “We are all young and junior, furthermore we are in unfamiliar territory, of course we have to be on guard against treacherous and evil villains who are furtively doing us harm. Unexpectedly we didn’t expect the person to show up would be.....he he, he he!”

Su YiCai was far younger than YuYang Zi but because of his sharp tongue, in a few words he had already made YuYang Zi fumed with anger. He bellowed once and lunged, the Chang Shen Hall men who were behind him saw their sect leader made the attack and also charged forward. Su YiCai and the rest of the exceptional skilled disciples took up YuYang Zi while the rest began their battles again.

Actually, with YuYang Zi’s cultivated practised magnanimity, he would not be that easily provoked by Su YiCai but when he saw that the only bit of strength left in Chang Shen Hall was also spent considerably in vain, he was extremely pained and incensed; and of all things Su YiCai’s words insulted him without using vulgarity, every word was sarcastic. Although MengJi who was beside him, still maintained some sanity and wanted to persuade him but YuYang Zi had

already charged out.

To be able to retain his position of Chang Shen Hall Sect leader for over a hundred years, YuYang Zi undeniably had genuine talent. Even after losing his left arm at Qing Yun battle ten years ago and suffering great loss of his skills, fighting against one person, Su YiCai, he was absolutely not his match.

But of course, this kind of one-to-one duel would never happen. Su YiCai in the middle, Fa Xiang at left and Li Xun at right, these three were the most outstanding among the Good Faction younger generation cut off YuYang Zi and fought him.

YuYang Zi gathered his divine might, using his only arm, he fought as one against three. The magical weapon, Yin Yang Mirror, in his hand was fantastic and enigmatic, one moment it was black and the next white, emitting bursts of mysterious lights. The magical weapons' lights from Su YiCai and the rest were either blocked by this rare mirror or being pulled aside by YuYang Zi, nobody could get near him at all.

And furthermore, when the white side of the Yin Yang Mirror flipped over, it would actually reflect the magical weapons back at their casters. The three of them initially did not expect that this magical weapon would actually have such ingenious ability and nearly suffered heavy injuries. Li Xun's left arm was scratched once by his own magical weapon, 'Jiu Yang Ruler' and almost became another YuYang Zi, one armed man.

The three of them thus did not dare to be careless and retaliated carefully. YuYang Zi as one against three and facing these three outstanding talents from Good Faction, he could actually still maintained the upper hand, his skills and abilities were really exceptional.

Only that although YuYang Zi he himself was powerful but those men under him were far from it. Facing this group of Good Faction talented disciples and not a single disciple's magical weapon was not exceptional, although Chang Shen Hall numbers were much more but slowly they were losing.

Other than Tian Yin Temple monks whose attacks were much kinder, Qing Yun Sect and the Evil Faction had enmity as deep as the sea and its disciples' attacks were all lethal, Fen Xiang Valley was no different from Qing Yun. As YuYang Zi was being pestered by those three, although he had the upper hand but he was unable to get away, and while battling, he looked around and saw that other than MengJi and a few that were making an effort to hold up, the rest of the ordinary disciples had already lost their fighting will and the casualties were more than half.

MengJi, with one stroke, forced the Fen Xiang Valley disciple in front of him to back up, anxiety showed on his face, he loudly called out to YuYang Zi, "Sect leader!"

YuYang Zi gritted his teeth, revealing his extreme indignant but in the end he knew the game was as good as lost, if he were to fight on, even the last reserve of Chang Shen Hall would also be spent here. He had no alternative but to loudly called out, "Everyone retreat first, I will bring up the rear!"

Once these words were said, Chang Shen Hall disciples started to flee into the darkness behind. Su YiCai and the rest in Good Faction were extremely sharp-witted and attacked at the same time, the various magical weapons' remarkable lights flashed and one after another immediately rushed at YuYang Zi.

YuYang Zi gave a bellow of rage and did not even avoid, the Yin Yang Mirror spinned urgently in the air and charged up. [Dang] and deflected the magical weapon, 'Reincarnation Pearl'. It instantly turned from black to white and Su YiCai body's shook. The Seven-Star Sword suddenly lost control while executing its strokes in the air and turned back to attack, the force swift and fierce and Su YiCai for a moment fumbled. He quickly chanted the formula and managed to take back the control of the Seven-Star Sword again.

Just with this moment of effort, YuYang Zi had already pushed the attacking Li Xun's Jiu Yang Ruler aside and the three Good Faction offensive came to a standstill. But YuYang Zi did not take the opportunity to escape and instead leapt up and landed among the crowd.

The other Good Faction disciples were chasing after the escaping Chang Shen Hall disciples and were caught unaware by YuYang Zi. [Teng teng] a few sounds and he had seriously injured several men, a few were also hit by the Yin Yang Mirror's heavy force and flew out, landing among the darkness and then suddenly cried out. After a short while there were no more cries, most probably they had landed at the bottomless pit and ended their lives that way.

In the darkness, only YuYang Zi moved freely and showing his contempt. He weaved in and out, killing people as he went and covering Chang Shen Hall disciples who were fleeing. Wherever he went, the Yin Yang Mirror's black and white light rays would be in front of him and the Good Faction disciples scattered to avoid it. Its power and might was really considered unexcelled in the world.

And at far away, the few indistinct figures who were standing still for a long while, were also concentrating on the situation, especially fixing an unwavering stare at that YuYang Zi, who was displaying his martial prowess.

With the attack by YuYang Zi, Chang Shen Hall disciples immediately felt the pressure lifted and in a flash half evacuated, leaving only the bodies on the ground. YuYang Zi saw it and felt distressed.

But at this moment, Good Faction Su YiCai and the rest had already caught up and with Qing Yun Sect Song Daren, Zeng ShuShu, WenMin, Tian Yin Temple Fa Shan, Fen Xiang Valley YanHong, a total of eight, took out their magical weapons and surrounded YuYang Zi.

YuYang Zi gave a sharp howl, the killings aroused his excitement and one by one, the savage sides of his character were brought out. He did not have any slightest sign of fear, the Yin Yang Mirror spinned and danced, shielding left and deflecting right, drawing the counter-offensive, fighting with these eight people, from the ground to the sky, and again from the sky back to the ground.

Just that after all there were more people on Good Faction side and in addition their skills were above-average. Even how remarkable YuYang Zi's skills were, he still could not beat the crowd and slowly, the Yin Yang Mirror was being subdued.

The eight people from Good Faction leapt and flew, their teamwork gradually gained chemistry and although it did not look right that these eight people were attacking one but they only had to add a sentence in their hearts that this was one of the big evil monster of the extremely vicious Evil Faction and they would feel justified. Every stroke was lethal and aiming for the vital points.

But YuYang Zi with several hundred years of painstaking cultivated skills, how would he be someone to be trifled with, he placed himself under the blades' shadows and even though he was slowly losing the strength to counter back and the besieging pressures were increasing but no matter how intensely Su YiCai and the rest attacked, they still could not get pass his Yin Yang Mirror with

the two black and white mystical lights.

Besides, his body moved, secretly migrating the fighting group towards the side, if not for Su YiCai who was really sharp-witted and suddenly remembered how his own sect disciples had perished just now, he loudly shouted, “Be careful not to sink into the marsh!”

This then reminded everyone and they realized after a moment that they were been brought on the sly to the side of the bottomless pit and if they were not careful, one of them would sink in. it was really a very close shave.

In the chaos, YuYang Zi still had this degree of mindfulness and foresight, these practical experiences were naturally incomparable to these juniors.

However even how experience he was and how exceptional his skills were, facing this group of highly skilled, talented and holding remarkable magical weapons, and also with such foresight and composed young experts, he was also helpless.

These eight people led by Su YiCai, attacked at the same time. Immediately numerous extraordinary lights continuously hit onto YuYang Zi’s Yin Yang Mirror. YuYang Zi’s entire body shook and he felt immense pressure, like the power of a tidal wave, again and again. The opponents could rest slightly after attacking but he could only keep on defending, unable to retaliate. After deflecting more than ten, twenty times, he finally could not withstand and had not choice but to move back, gradually moving away from the bottomless pit.

After leaving the bottomless pit, the Good Faction were immediately relieved and felt unimpeded to beset YuYang Zi.

YuYang Zi gradually felt fatigued, from the corner of his eyes he saw that most of his Chang Shen Hall disciples had already evacuated and MengJi and a few were on their way to his aid but beside him, even more Good Faction disciples were enclosing in.

YuYang Zi felt a moment of panic, he knew if these twenty, thirty people besieged him, even how high his ability was, he would also have to give up his life here. Immediately he deflected Zeng ShuShu's XuanYuan Sword strike and loudly cried out, "All of you quickly leave!"

MengJi and the rest were shocked and then turned and fled. YuYang Zi did not wish to prolong the fight, the Yin Yang Mirror in his hand flashed and flashed, suddenly the white light flared, its resplendence dazzling to the eyes and in an instant retaliated against the five magical weapons and reflected them back to its casters.

The Good Faction did not expect that he still would have such ability and immediately there were some disorder and a small opening opened up in the formation.

How could YuYang Zi stood by, immediately his body turned into a light and dashed forward like lighting.

His figure had just only moved and the next moment he was already at that opening and looked to be getting away. Su YiCai and the rest were slightly far behind him and were unable to catch up in time.

But then a jade-green light shone at once, resplendent and dazzling, the Dragon Slayer Sword arrived with a vengeance and chopped down, looking at this impetus, it looked like it would chop YuYang Zi into two.

YuYang Zi could not defend in time but at this moment of life and death, he was able to force himself to shift three degrees to the right. That jade-green light chopped down beside him, his sleeve fluttered, turned into flecks by this jade-green light.

YuYang Zi had already lost his left arm and it had instead gain an advantage for him at this moment. If not, it was not known if he could maintain his conscious under such intense pain but he felt a burning pain on his left body, most likely caused by this Dragon Slayer Sword's baleful jade-green light. His body continued to move and his right hand had already flipped, the Yin Yang Mirror immediately flashed with black and white lights and shot out across. A muffled groan was heard and Lin JingYu staggered backwards, all of his dressed wounds on his body split opened, spurting out fresh blood again!

Right now the road ahead was cleared of Good Faction disciples, YuYang Zi was delighted and about to exert his powers, at the same time he cursed in his heart, today the humiliation suffered at these Good Faction juniors, he would pay it back a hundred times in the future.

In the death marsh, suddenly a loud explosion was heard!

Everyone turned to look!

A resplendent dazzling blue light spanned across the horizon, the dark clouds in the sky like ink, rotated around at a fast speed, like a ferocious swirl. Lu XueQi standing in mid-air, a piercingly cold gale, her unparalleled appearance like ice and snow!

In the darkness far away, a figure seemed to tremble slightly.

That beautiful girl floated in the air, walked seven steps, her lips chanting and instantly lightning flashed chaotically in the horizon, like a gigantic snake traversing through clouds.

YuYang Zi's countenance changed greatly but without waiting for his reaction, Lu XueQi's 'Celestial sword Maneuvering the Thunder Formula' was already ignited, the enormous lightning in the horizon suddenly fell and struck onto Tian Ya Sword's tip. Blue light flared and instantly lighted up half of the gloomy sky.

And right now, Lu XueQi did not feel the same strain when she competed with Zhang Xiao Fan, lighting filled the sky, reflecting deep in her eyes, as if things had gone back to the past!

The enormous light beam, refracted and descended. It had not even reach the ground where the Good Faction disciples nearby had already started to withdraw. Within the perimeter of several zhangs from YuYang Zi, the gale howled and the trees, water plants were all uprooted, its might was staggering!

YuYang Zi gave a long howl, all of his clothes gathered up, the Yin Yang Mirror rose and suspended in the air, radiating black and white lights and then suddenly became one, evidently YuYang Zi after the intensive battle, was using all of his energy to make the final battle!

[Boom.....!]

The enormous light beam hit onto YuYang Zi's Yin Yang Mirror with an impact and YuYang Zi's body immediately sunk into the earth by one cun, agony flashed past YuYang Zi's face but Lu XueQi in the air too suddenly shook greatly and turned pale by a few degrees.

But the enormous light beam did not reduce or withdraw, flowing ceaselessly from Tian Ya Celestial Sword, the electric rays flashed crazily and struck down fiercely. YuYang Zi resisted with his one arm, looking more and more awful, if not for the fact that the 'Celestial sword Maneuvering the Thunder Formula''s force was too powerful and the Good Faction disciples could not intervene, else right now if hundreds and thousands of swords attacked at the same time, YuYang Zi would immediately turn into a meat pulp.

YuYang Zi's eyes were full of hatred, the next moment his face muscles twitched for a while and he bit savagely on his tongue and spat a mouthful of blood at the Yin Yang Mirror. Suddenly the Yin Yang Mirror immediately gave forth a burst of light and forcefully pushed back that enormous beam of light from Lu XueQi.

Su YiCai and the rest felt that something was not right and pounced over but YuYang Zi giving a long howl, flew up and the Yin Yang Mirror powerfully swept behind him, stimulated by his blood, it's divine light surged violently. Su YiCai and the rest did not dare to meet it directly and everyone of them kept out of its way..

Although this move by YuYang Zi was formidable but after this intense battle and with the usage of such savage and strange art, his internal energy was already severely injured and even his steps were staggering. But this person was really amazing, under such circumstances he could still muster a breath of energy and flew out, disappearing eventually into the darkness.

Li Xun and the rest wanted to pursue but Su YiCai weighed the pros and cons and loudly stopped them, "Don't pursue a beaten enemy, there are dangers everywhere in this death marsh and we are on unfamiliar ground, our priority is to be careful!"

Although Li Xun was not willing to but tonight Su YiCai had predicted like a prophet and he really felt admiration from his heart so eventually he stopped.

This night, this battle, finally concluded with Evil Faction Chang Shen Hall's crushing defeat.

Just that between the Good and Evil open factional fight, the Good Faction also suffered losses but compared to Chang Shen Hall, it was way much better.

Chapter 94: End of the road

The night as black as ink, cold and harsh.

Suddenly, a light flashed past in the darkness, approaching at an incredible speed but looking at it from afar, that light seemed to be wavering and unstable.

On the ground MengJi was pacing worriedly, behind him were the remnants of Chang Shen Hall disciples, a cursory glance revealed roughly fifty or sixty people, each one of them looking terrified, watching the road they had come from.

Until they saw that light.

Immediately it caused a stir among the ordinary disciples and quite a few cheered. MengJi instead looked at that figure that was flying in and the anxiety on his face increased.

That light came near and stopped, YuYang Zi floated to the ground and immediately everyone cried out, "Sect leader, sect leader". Unexpectedly without waiting for the crowd to reach him, YuYang Zi's face paled and [Wa] a

sound, threw out a big mouthful of blood, dyed the front of his robe red.

Not one did not change their countenance.

MengJi rushed up and supported YuYang Zi, he felt coldness and noticed that YuYang Zi's entire body was cold, extremely abnormal. And underneath his clothes, his body was still shivering. MengJi was greatly alarmed.

YuYang Zi felt MengJi's shock and turned to look from left to right. He saw the terror on his disciples' faces and knew they were already highly strung with low morales, if even himself would not survive then immediately it would turn into a scene of the rats deserting a sinking ship.

Immediately he forced his spirits up, suppressed the turbulent blood and energy in his chest and in a clear and loud voice said, "All of you don't have to panic, I had just used my internal energy to force the clotted blood out of my body so I am alright."

YuYang Zi had always been like a deity in the Chang Shen Hall disciples' hearts, when he spoke those words it had an effect and many of the sect disciples' expressions became relaxed and obviously looked much relieved.

Although YuYang Zi's words were such but his countenance was really terrible, as white as a paper and on the left hand side of his body, there was a patch of blood, even his sleeve was missing, looking extremely dishevelled. Luckily currently it was late in the night, thick with darkness, if it was in the day, with hundred over pair of eyes watching, they would know immediately that he was already an arrow at the end of its flight.

MengJi frowned tightly and turned back to speak to the Chang Shen Hall disciples, “There is nothing serious with Sect leader, all of you first take a rest and we will plan again the next morning!”

Everyone gradually dispersed and until Chang Shen Hall men were far away, MengJi felt YuYang Zi’s body suddenly sank and quickly supported him, looking at YuYang Zi, he felt his heart was almost at his throat.

There was not a trace of blood on YuYang Zi’s face and he was panting heavily. If not for his support, YuYang Zi could barely stand.

MengJi quickly helped YuYang Zi to sit down. YuYang Zi meditated on the ground and slowly breathed in and out. After a long while, his breathing then gradually calmed down and he looked slightly better. Mengji stayed beside YuYang Zi, looking worried and anxious, at the same time kept glancing at his surroundings.

Everywhere was dark, other than the few campfires by Chang Shen Hall disciples nearby, nobody could see further than their fingers.

The night was malevolent, as if it was too, spying on this misfortunate precarious Chang Shen Hall sect.

YuYang Zi slowly opened his eyes.

MengJi immediately spoke in a low voice, “Sect head, are you alright?”

YuYang Zi laughed bitterly, in his eyes naturally he would not treat MengJi the same as the ordinary disciples. Sighing softly he said, “I was besieged by those

bastards and used up a lot of my energy, and at the end unexpectedly there was one girl who used Qing Yun Sect's 'Celestial sword Maneuvering the Thunder Formula'.....”

MengJi was shocked and said, “There is such a master within them?”

YuYang Zi hatefully said, “Not even that, I fought with several and at least three or four had exceptional aptitude and until the end, I had to use ‘Blood Curse’ to force my way out!”

MengJi's face turned pale again. Blood Curse was Chang Shen Hall's well-known genuine curse, it allowed your skills to increase exponentially instantly but the backlash was extremely terrible, needless to say it would greatly decrease your skills but it would also shorten your lifespan.

After being speechless for a moment, MengJi recovered his senses and spoke to YuYang Zi, “Sect leader, then what shall we do now?”

YuYang Zi's face was solemn, after remaining silent, he hatefully said, “Now that the arrow is already on the bow, we cannot not shoot. Once it is daylight, we will immediately move deeper into the marsh, into the ‘inner marsh’ to find the treasure!”

MengJi's countenance changed greatly, he exclaimed, “Sect leader.....”

YuYang Zi waved his hand and interrupted MengJi's words, he said, “I know what you wanted to say but if today we leave the death marsh, sooner or later we will also die at the other three sects' hands, might as well take this gamble!”

MengJi stared dumbfoundedly at YuYang Zi and saw the malevolent expression on his pale face thickened. He guessed that it was already too late to persuade him and could only slowly stood up, faced the sky and sighed softly in his heart.

The enormous death marsh which was situated at southwest of the vast Divine Land, with a circumference of eight thousand miles, stretching forever. Since ancient times human were rarely sighted. And in it, it was segmented into two kinds of world; one was the outer marsh which was where the main crowd was at, it belonged to the periphery of the death marsh and occupied around seventy to eighty percent of the lands. In the outer marsh it was covered densely with the bottomless pit and poisonous insects but for the cultivated skilled practitioners, these were not a concern and they only had to tread carefully to be fine.

And in the innermost part of the death marsh, there was still a mysterious area. It was a place where all year round, highly toxic methane gas surrounded it and nobody ever knew what it looked like. Even if occasionally some highly skilled master ventured in, nobody heard from them anymore, hence both Good and Evil faction generally did not wish to enter without careful consideration.

And these past few days, numerous people had searched for the treasure in the death marsh but to no avail. YuYang Zi had long expected that this treasure would be in the unpredictable perilous inner mash. If the situation was not so urgent, YuYang Zi would probably have to consider many things and at least prepared long in advance but because of the circumstances today, he himself like a compulsive gambler, could not afford to consider anymore.

The night breeze blew over.

Chang Shen Hall disciples who were exhausted from the day of fighting were all asleep, the campfires on the ground were also dying. YuYang Zi was still meditating with his head low, MengJi who was standing beside him earlier on had most probably went over to join the other disciples.

Suddenly YuYang Zi's eyes snapped opened, his glare fierce but with a trace of fear and looked around at his surroundings.

The night saturated with darkness.

The muscles in his body suddenly tensed up and then he slowly stood up.

His only hand clutching tight onto the Yin Yang Mirror.

The bone-chilling wind blew onto his body, the coldness seemed to seep into his heart.

In the recesses of the darkness, footstep sounds were gradually heard.

[Pa, pa, pa

[Sha, sha, sha.....]

[Hua, hua, hua.....]

As if with different rhythms, at the same time, from three directions. soft yet neat footsteps sounds walking and gathered towards Chang Shen Hall disciples.

YuYang Zi's face, for the first time displayed despair, he suddenly shouted loudly, "Bastards, better get out here!"

This loud shout, forceful but indistinctly insufficient stamina. However it still reverberated far in this marsh, immediately the Chang Shen Hall disciples woke up with a start and within the cries of fears they quickly got up and swiftly gathered together.

YuYang Zi's expression was unpredictable, his heart had sank deep down. He turned left and right and suddenly looked stunned, in a loud voice he said, "MengJi, where has he gone?"

Chang Shen Hall disciples looked at each other and for a long while nobody answered, obviously nobody knew.

YuYang Zi felt a burst of energy coming up, his head felt dizzy and almost splatted out another mouthful of blood.

And at this moment, suddenly a calm male voice was heard from the darkness, harmoniously said, "YuYang Zi Teacher Uncle, are you looking for this person?"

[Wu] a sound and something flew out from the darkness in front Chang Shen Hall, forming an arc and then landed in front of YuYang Zi and the disciples, rolled a few times.

Someone took a fire and viewed it under the light, suddenly a gasp of shock was heard. This was the head of MengJi who was just here earlier on, speaking

to them. Both of his eyes were opened wide in shock which suggested most probably he had died unjustly.

YuYang Zi took a deep breath, moving his sight from his last capable disciple's head to the front and stared. He coldly said, "Qin WuYan?"

A young man slowly walked out, his face slightly pale but a warm smile was on his face, he said, "Teacher Uncle's foresight really surpassed the rest, nephew is standing in the darkness yet you still know it's me, admirable, admirable!"

YuYang Zi's expression could not be uglier, he coldly said, "You are really something but the way how your Wan Du Clan treats your fellow Holy Sect members, isn't your that old poison monster teacher of yours afraid that Wisdom King will banished him to Hell after his death?"

"Ah!" Qin WuYan pressed a hand to his chest and made a startled posture but on his face, he was still smiling peacefully without any trace of fear. He turned and speak to the other side, "Jin Fairy, such a heinous crime, our Wan Du Clan dare not shoulder it by ourselves. You still don't want to show yourself?"

YuYang Zi's countenance changed greatly, he abruptly turned and sure enough, a charming lady slowly walked out from the darkness on the left side, looking extremely flirtatious. In this dark night, the moment she walked out, immediately it seemed to brighten up a few degrees.

"Jin PingEr!"

YuYang Zi seemed to be gnashing his teeth while calling out these three words.

Jin PingEr smiled and said, “YuYang Zi Teacher Uncle, long time not seen, have you been well?”

This greeting, in reality was more malicious than the most vicious profanity, YuYang Zi stared hard at her and coldly said, “Chang Shen Hall and HeHuan Sect have always mind their own business, why are you with those people from Wan Du Clan hitting a person when he is down?”

Jin PingEr smiled and said, “You are really forgetful when you are old. Several days ago, you received news that I have arrived and worried that our HeHuan Sect will steal your treasure so you ordered your men to kill Wan Du Clan’s disciples and stole their special poison ‘Black Toad Powder’. You then used the poison to kill four of our HeHuan Sect disciples at north of Big Wang village, is there such thing?”

YuYang Zi was shocked and he exclaimed, “How do you.....” and immediately stopped halfway.

Jin PingEr blandly said, “Teacher Uncle you have planned far ahead to incite fights between HeHuan Sect and Wan Du Clan, it is indeed brilliant. But thanks to Qin WuYan Qin senior brother’s reasoning and his detailed investigations, the truth was finally revealed. If not we would really be in trouble because of you!”

Qin WuYan smiled and said, “Fairy you flatter me, it is my humble self honour to be able to do something for fairy.”

YuYang Zi’s thoughts turned quickly, the situation was really precarious. Although these two were young but for the past few years their reputations had

already shocked the world and definitely not to be taken lightly. Besides, behind them there were many human figures, although they did not reveal themselves but most likely large groups of Wan Du Clan, HeHuan Sect men were lying in ambush in the dark. If it was really such then most likely he would really be in trouble tonight.

YuYang Zi was trying to think of a way out when suddenly he heard a stir among his disciples behind him, as if they had seen something horrible and quickly turned around. He immediately blanched. On the only route of retreat behind him, from the darkness a nonchalant Ghost Li walked out unhurriedly.

There and then YuYang Zi's mind turned and finally understood, in the end he gave up all hope and smiled bitterly, "So the three sects have already agreed to deal with my Chang Shen Hall together. It is so ludicrous that I still wanted to sow discord among you, the mantis stalk the cicada, all of you the oriole behind!"

Qin WuYan smiled and suddenly said in a clear and loud voice, "Chang Shen Hall disciples, all of you also saw it too. Tonight Chang Shen Hall has come to its end, if you are smart you should quickly come over to our side and you can still keep your life."

After his words, behind Qin WuYan, Jin PingEr and Ghost Li, there was a movement of people, countless people holding their magical weapons gushed out from the darkness and enclosed the group with YuYang Zi as head.

The night breeze brushed past, the end of a hero!

All of the Chang Shen Hall disciples looked at one other, anyone could tell that even if they fought on, they would still not survive. Besieged by the three

powerful Evil Sect sects and they themselves were also at the end of their tether, how could they survive.

YuYang Zi cried out in his heart and as expected, not even a moment had passed when someone shouted loudly, “I surrender, I surrender.....”

And ran towards Qin WuYan.

With somebody taking the lead, immediately there was a commotion and in a short while almost all of them ran out, after all nobody wished to wait for death. YuYang Zi was infuriated and shocked, he continuously shouted for them to stop but at this life and death moment, who would bother about him. More and more Chang Shen Hall disciples ran out and the situation became out of control.

YuYang Zi was enraged, his eyes revealed an ominous glint. He gave a roar and jumped into the crowd, randomly grabbed one of the Chang Shen Hall disciple and wanted to kill one to make an example. Everyone saw the scene and cried out, and instead they bolt even faster, only that unlucky guy in his hands was so frightened that his entire body slacked.

YuYang Zi's look was savage, looking by at his several hundred years of Chang Shen Hall sect foundation was going to be destroyed in one day, his chest almost exploded with rage. He exerted strength and almost strangled that disciple to death but then he saw that person was so terrified that he almost could not even wail.

YuYang Zi looked at him and suddenly turned to look at his sect members who were running away from himself. Out of a sudden he felt downhearted and loosened his hand, that disciple dropped onto the ground.

That person got his life back and almost could not believe himself, he half rolled and half crawled and quickly got away, staying as far as he could from this person.

After a short while, YuYang Zi was the only person left all alone.

Ghost Li, Qin WuYan and Jin PingEr walked forward together.

The scene suddenly quietened down, YuYang Zi's figure looked melancholy, he swept his gaze from Qin WuYan to Jin PingEr and then to Ghost Li, his lips moved and he suddenly said, "Forget it, forget it."

Ghost Li and the rest were only about one zhang away from YuYang Zi and they stopped, forming a circle and enclosing YuYang Zi in it.

Jin PingEr was the first to speak, she smiled and said, "What is it, YuYang Zi Teacher Uncle, what do you still want to say?"

Hatred flashed past YuYang Zi eyes but his face looked indifferent, after a moment he unhurriedly said, "Now that I am at the end of my tether, Chang Shen Hall's name will end today."

Qin WuYan clapped his hand and said, "Uncle Teacher really has good judgement!"

YuYang Zi's body trembled, with his status yet today he had to suffer these juniors' humiliations, he really would rather be dead but instead he bore it

down and unhurriedly said, “Since I have nowhere to go, alright I will also surrender to you. With my skills, it will be of at least some use to all of you right?”

When he spoke these words, Qin WuYan and Jin PingEr’s expressions immediately changed. YuYang Zi’s skills was comparable to Ghost King, God of Poison, especially tonight he as one dealt with almost ten outstanding talents from Good Faction, not one of the Evil Faction members was not in awe while spying on him in the darkness.

If not for the fact that they saw Chang Shen Hall battling with the Good Faction first, it might not be that easy to get rid of Chang Shen Hall. And if they could get YuYang Zi to serve them, not to mention he would be a strong aid but in the future internal fights within Evil Faction, they would have a very big advantage.

Once they thought of this, Qin WuYan and Jin PingEr were all extremely ambitious people and hesitation appeared on their faces.

And at this moment, Ghost Li who had remained silent all these while, said, “You have such high skills and have such an ambitious heart, furthermore your seniority is higher than us. If you were to come to our Ghost King Sect, I’m afraid in the future it will be you climbing over my head, this kind of thing, are you willing?”

His tone was monotonous but his gaze was penetrating, sweeping coldly over YuYang Zi. YuYang Zi’s heart sank, Qin WuYan and Jin PingEr were such intelligent people, instantly they had already figured it out and smiles appeared on their faces.

But to YuYang Zi, it looked no different from demons.

“Teacher Uncle is really clever, until now you still have such ingenious method, admirable, admirable!” Jin PingEr smiled sweetly but at the same time with this smile, at her right hand, purple light slowly lighted up.

Almost at the same time, Ghost Li’s Soul-Absorbing and Qin WuYan, took a step towards YuYang Zi.

The night breeze whistled, the chill penetrating deep into the bones.

YuYang Zi looked around, unable to appease the resentment in his heart, he gave a long howl, trampled upon and leapt up, determined to make the last struggle and absolutely would not wait for death!

Far away, the Good Faction side was finally settling down, this time Su YiCai even especially arranged a few juniors night guards, it showed how meticulous and cautious he was .

At a nearby isolated area, Lu XueQi sat quietly and not long, WenMin came back and sat beside her, her mouth pouting slightly and she whispered, “That Song Daren is really a big fool.”

Lu XueQi looked far and saw Song Daren sitting beside the fire, his face embarrassed. Not knowing what he and WenMin talked about but he kept sneaking glances over and looked worried. However he dare not come over.

Lu XueQi’s eyes seemed to smile and she told WenMin, “Senior sister, you have bullied him for so many years already. It is such a rare opportunity to

come out, you best treat him better.”

WenMin humphed, she had always been on good terms with Lu XueQi and never had to hide her feelings in front of this junior sister. She softly humphed and said, “That person is too honest. I really don’t know what happened for Tian BuYi Tian Teacher Uncle, I heard that in the past when he seduce...no, took SuRu Teacher from our Small Bamboo Valley to marry her, it was really down-right brilliant, why is it that the disciple under him will be so stupid.....”

Lu XueQi smiled and looked away, after a while she suddenly lowered her voice and said, “You are right, their Big Bamboo Valley disciples, initially there were really many honest ones.....”

Speaking until the end, without knowing why, her voice dropped. WenMin was stunned and looked at Lu XueQi. She suddenly sighed and gently patted her shoulder, said, “Don’t think too much.”

Lu XueQi did not speak and only bowed her head.

The night passed quietly.

In the morning, Su YiCai gathered the rest together and discussed, “Now that Chang Shen Hall had suffered a great loss, temporarily we won’t have to deal with any external enemy. And after searching in this death marsh for so many days, we do not have a single clue on that treasure’s location. Various senior brothers, do you all have any suggestions?”

Fa Xiang remained quiet but Li Xun instead looked at Su YiCai and said, “Su senior brother, don’t tell me you wish to enter that extremely perilous inner

marsh to investigate?”

Su YiCai was surprised and nodded, “That’s right. Since we are already here, we can’t give up halfway.”

Fa Xiang frowned and said, “Although what Su senior brother said makes sense but deep in the death marsh, the methane are all highly toxic and I heard that there are even many unimaginable demon beasts and poisonous insects, extremely hazardous. With our big group, it is really too dangerous.”

Su YiCai nodded and said, “That’s right, what Fa Xiang senior brother said was what I was worrying. Therefore I think, why don’t the majority of our junior brothers continue to search at the outer marsh while the few of us, including a few higher skilled disciples enter the inner marsh. What do the both of you think?”

Li Xun, after pondering for a long while, nodded and said, “We can only do this.”

Fa Xiang also nodded.

Once the discussion was over, each of them went back to select their members. Not long, from Fen Xiang Valley Li Xun, HongYan, Tian Yin Temple Fa Xiang, Fa Shan and as Qing Yun Sect had more members, other than Su YiCai, Lu XueQi and Zeng ShuShu were included, Lin JingYu who received all the attention last night, earnestly requested and since everyone now viewed him with increased respect, he was eventually included.

As such the eight of them, after arranging their own sect matters, with Su

YiCai as the lead, took up their magical weapons and headed for the inner marsh.

And on the other side of the marsh, looking at the peaceful marsh in front of them, Ghost Li and the other two stood side by side. Behind them were three rows of men, each formed their own group but facing each other, indistinctly maintaining vigilance.

Qin WuYan suddenly sighed and said, “YuYang Zi Teacher Uncle was a hero of his age and now that he had merged into the death marsh, it is also considered a worthy death?”

Ghost Li remained silent while Jin PingEr only smiled blandly but did not speak.

Qin WuYan did not mind, smiled and said, “So how is it, what do you both plan to do next?”

Jin PingEr looked at him and then suddenly turned, at the same time she said, “The important matter has already accomplished, naturally we shall go our different ways!”

Qin WuYan looked at her back figure and raised his voice, “Oh, don’t tell me Fairy intended to report back?”

Jin PingEr even more did not reply and smiled indifferently, Qin WuYan said, “Then I will be in the inner marsh, waiting respectfully for Fairy. When it’s time, I will like to request Jin Fairy to show mercy!”

Not knowing if Jin PingEr had heard and walk off by herself. After which the HeHuan Sect disciples also followed her and left.

Ghost Li looked at Qin WuYan, his eyes cold. Then he also turned and walked back to his Ghost King Sect group.

Qin WuYan stood where he was, smiling but his eyes also gradually turned cold.

Within the death marsh, the sky looked to be more sombre. The dark clouds packed densely, as if a much bigger storm seemed to be coming again.

Chapter 95: Miasma

The wind blew over the death marsh.

The water plants rustled and ripples formed across the water surface, looking at it, the land seemed to go on and on. There were no signs of human habitation but it had a different type of beauty to it.

The Soul-Absorbing stick emitted faint dark-green light, the dim light moved and stopped in the mid-air. Ghost Li who was on top of it, clasped his hands behind and gazed ahead.

Today was one of the rare good weather in the death marsh, under the pleasantly warm sunlight, the usual gloomy atmosphere had also cleared up quite a lot but about ten zhangs in front of him, there was a stretch of thick grey haze-like enormous miasma, rising majestically and stretching far left and right. The miasma surged and twisted, reaching high into the sky, like no end to it.

This was, the boundary of one of the world's most dangerous place, the innermost death marsh!

The monkey, Xiao Hui, which was on his shoulder nervously made a low

sound.

Ghost Li gently patted Xiao Hui and Xiao Hui quietened down, a pair of quick-witted eyes watched the miasma at the same time. At this moment, a sharp whistle was heard behind them, a light moving as fast as lightning came towards them.

Ghost Li's figure moved, the Soul-Absorbing stick seemed to know his intention and unhurriedly turned over.

That light screeched to a stop in front of him, the person who was driving it was a young man with a straight pair of eyebrows stretching into his hairline, his eyes bright and sharp. In a flash he appeared in front of Ghost Li, bowed and said, "Vice leader, everything has already been arranged."

Ghost Li did not ask him what it was, presumably he was well aware of it. He immediately nodded and said, "Good, I will leave here to you."

After speaking, he seemed to have thought of something and said, "YanHui."

That man whose name was YanHui said, "What is it?"

Ghost Li took a look behind his back and said, "You have always been level-headed and I can always leave things to you but Kill-the-living Monk has a volatile temper and an extremely bloodthirsty nature. Now that all of the forces are gathered here in this death marsh, even more so we cannot be reckless, you must watch over him carefully."

YanHui smiled and said, "Vice leader please be assured, even though Kill-the-

living Monk consider everyone beneath him but he has never dare to go against your orders, I will also restrain him.”

Ghost Li nodded and was about to turn around when YanHui urgently said, “Vice leader, there is still one more thing.”

Ghost Li looked at him, YanHui hesitated for a moment, urged his weapon under his feet and came near Ghost Li, at the same time he lowered his voice, “I have just received a news from headquarters, Qing Long and Scarlet Bird of the Four Holy Envoys suddenly headed towards the direction of the death marsh several days ago.”

Ghost Li’s expression changed slightly but immediately his expression was back to normal, after a while he said, “Don’t announce this matter, all of you proceed as planned but keep an eye out for any changes.”

YanHui quietly said, “Yes.”

After speaking, he bowed to Ghost Li and left.

Ghost Li looked at his disappearing figure, slowly turned around and looked at that enormous miasma, after a long while he suddenly said, “Xiao Hui, let’s go.”

Xiao Hui at his shoulder, scratched its head and [Zi zi] called out twice.

Ghost Li smiled, the Soul-Absorbing stick lighted up and one man and one monkey under the black-green light, flew into that enormous miasma.

Barely into the miasma, the surrounding lights disappeared in an instant. The bright sky which was there a moment ago was gone and only left a blanket of grey haze, one could only see not more than half a zhang in front.

Almost at the same time when Ghost Li entered the miasma, the Soul-Absorbing light surged, from the bottom it leapt up, forming a circle of light and tightly surrounded both Ghost Li and Xiao Hui, the surrounding miasma swirled and rolled but none could enter into this light circle.

Looking out from the inside, the clouds-like miasma following Ghost Li's movement in the air, parted at the front and closed in at the back, from the top to the bottom, this grey miasma was everywhere.

Once the flight started, he flew for a very long time, Ghost Li's face became more and more solemn. This extremely toxic miasma wall was inside the death marsh, the most obvious boundary line between the inner marsh and the outer marsh. Although the bottomless pits were everywhere in the outer marsh but it would not be a problem if one was careful. However in this inner marsh, not to mention about other things, just this extremely toxic miasma for an ordinary person, even if the person held their breath but once their skin touched this toxic thing, in a short time the poisonous gas would penetrate in and kill them.

Although Ghost Li had already achieved great progress in his skills and no longer that disciple in Qing Yun Hill but he still dared not lower his guard against such toxic. Inside the death marsh, everywhere was dangerous particularly the inner marsh, a wildlands since ancient times with unpredictable dangers. He was on high alert and moved ahead carefully.

Just that this miasma wall was abnormally thick, after flying for another while he was still in it and surrounding him was still a sheet of grey. He felt alarmed, according to his estimates by now he would have already flew about hundred zhangs. It could be that in this harsh wildlands, covered by miasma for centuries, most probably whatever rare treasure that was born in it, in the next ten millions years nobody would know, let alone getting their hands on it.

While he was thinking it through in his heart, the Soul-Absorbing light multiplied and the surrounding grey miasma swirled ceaselessly, it also seemed to be increasing in speed too.

Suddenly Ghost Li's heart jumped, deep inside the miasma in front of him, a blue light flashed but disappeared after that. That faint blue light somehow seemed to be familiar.

Almost at the same time the quiet swirling miasma increased in speed abruptly, like a pot of water, suddenly boiled.

Up down left and right, the grey miasma started to rotate crazily, numerous not big or small miasma vortexes appeared in front of him, each indistinctly had a force of suction, attacking him from all directions. Xiao Hui on Ghost Li's shoulder did not make a single movement, quietly [Zi zi] and tightly clutching Ghost Li's clothes.

Ghost Li's face was cold but his eyebrows were frowning deeply, suddenly with a snort, his body tensed up and within the Soul-Absorbing green light, a golden light suddenly soared up, together with the green light, illuminated each other. Immediately the surrounding miasma was forced back by a few degrees. At the same time, the Soul-Absorbing stick rose and burst forth, totally disregarding the danger in front and charged into the biggest miasma vortex.

X X X

Once within the enormous miasma vortex, he instantly felt the suction force increased greatly, the wind howled and poured in from all directions, all of it was the toxic miasma. Ghost Li's face turned pale and he was sucked out by this natural enormous power into the sky.

The piercingly cold wind sucked unceasingly, agitating the clouds, like an infuriated wind deity. Ghost Li breathed deeply in the mid-air and suddenly pushed out both of his hands, the left hand making a mark, the right hand making a spell, gold and green lights shone on his face at the same time and started to flash after a while, rapidly integrating into one. If right now there was to be any Good Faction master around, most likely the person would be too stunned for words.

Qing Yun Sect Tai Chi Xuan Qing Way and Tian Yin Temple Great Brahman Wisdom had actually perfectly merged into one in this young man!

In the brilliant gold green lights the Soul-Absorbing stick immediately calmed down and did not sway with the wind anymore. It held still in the middle of the storm, Ghost Li focused and observed but the storm was becoming more and more violent, the gas clouds steamed and surged angrily. Looking ahead, everywhere was still grey.

Ghost Li hesitated for a while but eventually knew that in this extremely perilous place, he really should not stay long and steered his Soul-Absorbing stick to force his way out from the edge of this violent spinning storm, instantly his eyes and ears were severely assaulted, the sky turned and the ground spinned, eventually he managed to break out of this storm eye.

As he had used quite an amount of effort to break out so after leaving the vortex miasma, he flew out quite a distance away. Just that because of the confusion just now, although the miasma gradually settled down but Ghost Li was frowning, he was unsure if he had flew the wrong way.

When he was still hesitating, Xiao Hui suddenly shrieked in warning, Ghost Li was shocked and without even taking a look carefully, he subconsciously forced his body to shift three feet to the side.

[Hong!]

In the grey clouds a huge black thing rumbled past, sweeping past the place where he had just stood. A stench of bloody smell assaulted the nose, even the Soul-Absorbing circle of light could not totally block it, a faint smell of it drifted in.

Only a moment later, this extremely weird thing disappeared again into the miasma.

Ghost Li was stunned and his heart palpitated, in the instant that this huge thing appeared, it seemed to give him a whack to his head.

The next moment, disregarding Xiao Hui's screeches and even disregarding the great danger, he pursued.

Just that that strange monster disappeared in a flash. Although its body was huge beyond imagination but its speed was astonishing, in addition with this thick miasma wall, he was unable to see more than half a zhang. After a short

while, he was unable to find that strange monster again.

Ghost Li frowned, slowly stopped and concentrated. Suddenly in front of him, a shout of surprise and thereafter more shouts followed. There were actually several people up ahead and he guessed that they scattered in fright when that monster passed through them.

Ghost Li was greatly excited and flew up, the clouds started to swirl and churn in front of him. Suddenly an angry shout and a voice, cold and clear, "Evil one!"

Before the words were completed, a swift and fierce blue light abruptly came from the side, aiming for his chest. Like a rainbow passing through the horizon, it also turned the surrounding miasma into a vivid blue.

Ghost Li was taken aback, this person's sword attack was ferocious, pressing forward with an indomitable will and granting no mercy at all. Just this stroke and it had revealed the person's high skills and definitely could not be underestimated. In this critical moment, his body did not decrease his forward momentum and instead increased. Like lightning, he charged up into the sky to shake off the sword behind him and then retaliated.

Unexpectedly the origins of that person in the haze was not simple, both of them separated by miasma and unable to see clearly each other's faces but just from the sword's reaction, that blue light seemed to be alive, pursuing with a speed like lightning and like a shadow, the distance between them never decreased.

In an instant the surrounding miasma immediately churned, Ghost Li became a dim green light, a blue light following behind, both went up the Heaven and down to Earth, shifting and moving like lightning, in these layers of toxic gas,

relentlessly pursuing, the clouds surged whenever they passed by.

While being pursued, Ghost Li frowned tightly, the person behind him was extremely powerful and in a great haste he was unable to see what magical weapon she was using but the ferocity of that person's murderous intention was evidently clear. It definitely would not from his own faction so most likely it was from Good Faction which would not coexist with him.

From Good Faction, which powerful figure was it?

The thought had just barely formed in his head but his hands had already started to retaliate. Else if the chase kept on going, it would be of no harm to the person behind but he would be like a headless fly flying around, who knows what strange things he might encounter?

The green light surged, Ghost Li's body suddenly soared up sharply and turned back in mid-air, the Soul-Absorbing stick lay horizontally in front of his chest. That blue light behind him seemed to sense something, the sword light surged and became even more powerful, charging towards his chest.

Ghost Li grabbed the Soul-Absorbing stick in front of him, the green bead on the black stick immediately released a great light, under that light, red-blood strands also seemed to light up at the same time, the red blood quietly started to turn, red light and green rays, dim and discreet facing that blue sword light, meeting it directly.

[Boom!]

Ghost Li's body shook greatly and his body was forced back by one zhang. But

that blue sword light also flew back in great impact, someone seemed to groan in the gas cloud, obviously the person did not have it easy too.

These few years Ghost Li had been practising the Evil Way Tian Shu day and night, in addition with the Blood-Sucking Orb beside him, his savage characteristic had long flourished. And right now not a word more, straightaway he flew ahead, the Soul-Absorbing stick piercing through the air.

However the Soul-Absorbing stick had just acted when the gas clouds in front suddenly parted, the enemy was unexpectedly unyielding, the person had just stabilized and attacked back immediately. Ghost Li gave a sharp whistle and steered his magical weapon, immediately battling with that blue sword light.

Right now the Soul-Absorbing stick and blue light was already fighting with each other but the gas clouds churned and rolled, Ghost Li was unable to see that magical weapon clearly and depended on his body and the Soul-Absorbing stick's reactions to control.

This sudden battle to both of them was extremely risky as both parties were extremely skilled and if one was not careful, they would either be killed by the other or if they were injured and distracted for a moment, they would fall prey to the surrounding toxic miasma. Both scenarios were also life-threatening.

The other party up ahead obviously did not expect to meet such a figure but in the gas clouds, he was unable to see her face too. But looking at the sword blows, the person showed no signs of backing off even by a little.

In this flint-spark moment, the Soul-Absorbing stick and blue sword light clashed violently in the miasma, loud booms sounded. With these two magical weapons in the center, the miasma surged and churned, indistinctly becoming

another enormous vortex.

Even though they were separated by a distance but Soul-Absorbing stick and Ghost Li were forged by blood. Each other's reactions were felt as if they were connected by flesh and blood, Ghost Li felt that cold energy above Soul-Absorbing stick was seethed with excitement, as if this magical weapon had a spirit that was becoming excited. This feeling was really strange, ever since he had accomplished great advances in his cultivation, he had not felt it again.

Just that, very long ago when he was still an ignorant young boy, this feeling, he had once felt it.....

A shock went through his heart!

As if indistinctly something surged in his heart.

The Soul-Absorbing stick and that blue light clashed violently for the last time and flew back. Right now the surrounding miasma increased more and more and Ghost Li and that person's battle had reached the climax. Both of them separated by the miasma, depending only on their spiritual senses, on one side they had to defend against attacks and other side they still had to ward off the surrounding toxic miasma. Obviously with this kind of danger, the sooner this battle ends, the better it would be!

The cyclone turbulated violently, at the same time it gave rise to numerous small vortexes again but Ghost Li's eyes were fixed onto the other party. Behind that thick miasma, a glimpse of the blue light, he seemed to even feel that person's murderous stare.

Suddenly a clear whistle was heard, the sharp whistle of the blue sword light piercing the air, it instantly broke through the clouds layers and turned into an enormous light beam, striking down from the top. Ghost Li did not make any attempt to avoid and flew up straight, broke into the blue light and to where the person was.

That person in the gas clouds shouted angrily, the blue light surged and instantly all of the brilliancy were withdrew back into that cloud layer. After a moment it congealed into a sky-blue celestial sword that blazed for miles, charging over with a tremendous force. Almost at the same time, the Soul-Absorbing stick's green light surged greatly, instantly causing the surrounding miasma of within one zhang back, and went up to meet it.

A strike of life and death, at this moment.

That person held the sword hilt, Ghost Li clutching on Soul-Absorbing stick, both charging towards each other.

Two sharp lights, instantly forcing back all of the surrounding miasma!

As if holding their breath, waiting for that moment to determine life and death.....

The white and fair hand holding the sword hilt; the dress that was billowing and dancing in the wind; she, like the fairy from Nine Heavens, with an unparalleled beauty, in the moment when the clouds dispersed, appeared at the other side.

Lu XueQi!

After many years, that moment when they met again.....

What look was it that appeared in each other's gazes,

Most likely, only in that instant.

x x x

Suddenly the whole world seemed to come to a standstill, the grey miasma was forced back by the supreme magical weapons, slowly revealing that man's figure.

That man who was deeply engraved inside her heart, was right in front.

She did not move, only her heart, trembled slightly.

x x x

The two magical weapons like lightning, like light, like long-standing generations of bitter enemies entangled for three lives and seven generations, forced forward, was it hate, love, to determine your death and my survival in this instant?

That moment, was right in front!

That moment, in a moment of breath!

What was it, that was quicker than this lightning, what was it, that quietly linger in the heart?

Was it intention.....

The dazzling Soul-Absorbing stick suddenly veered off slightly and gave way, Ghost Li unexpectedly opened his chest wide, Xiao Hui on his shoulder shrieked.

Spots of blue light like stars, gushed over!

But he never felt pain, from his side, streaked past by a hair's breath, as if an inexplicable reaction, that Tian Ya Celestial Sword also veered off slightly to the other side.

This moment was really really dangerous, Ghost Li and Lu XueQi, if whoever was a minute late or hesitated for one moment, it would immediately cause the other party to be beheaded by the magical weapon.

Just that for unknown reasons they gave up.

In the instant that he had missed, he was still gazing deeply.

Deep inside that beautiful girl's eyes, that figure that was reflected, was actually his.....

Because of the immense strength exerted for the life and death battle, their bodies, could not help but to fly off in different directions, separated far apart!

In the air, indistinctly on her dress, did it have her faint fragrance?

The sky suddenly lighted up, Ghost Li suddenly recovered his senses and saw a boundless dense forest appeared below his feet and he was about to land. The sky was low, dark clouds moved and he had unknowingly broke through that unimaginable thick miasma and finally reached the perilous inner mash.

In the mid-air, he stabilized his body and slowly landed. He suddenly turned his head but only saw that enormous miasma wall, as ever unchanging since ancient times, towering there. And needless to say, where would that girl be now?

Chapter 96: Mysterious Flower

Big Wang village.

Xiao Huan stood at the village entrance, looked towards the death marsh with concern. The weather was still fair in the morning but now the sky had darkened and another storm seemed to be coming.

Yesterday late in the night, she and her grandfather, Zhou YiXian and Jin PingEr etc were in the death marsh but after Jin PingEr made a trip out and came back again, she looked exhausted and in the same night, sent both of them out of the death marsh.

Xiao Huan had privately asked Jin PingEr but Jin PingEr only said, "The situation now in the death marsh has become more dangerous than I had expected, if both of you continue to remain here, it will only bring harm to yourself."

Xiao Huan had always believed this sister's words, that night she and Zhou YiXian left the death marsh and at the same time, kept to Jin PingEr's instructions, to get ready and leave this place by today. Just that, she had known Jin PingEr for quite some time but last night was the first time she saw such solemn expression on Jin PingEr's face.

She thought and thought and could not help but felt anxious for this sister.

“Xiao Huan!”

A familiar shout from behind, Xiao Huan turned and Zhou YiXian walked over, he said, “All the things are already packed, let’s go!”

Xiao Huan nodded but could not resist and asked Zhou YiXian, “Grandfather, do you think PingEr sister will have danger in the death marsh?”

Zhou YiXian was startled and rudely replied, “How would I know?”

Xiao Huan’s lips pressed tightly and she gave him a stare. Zhou YiXian after all still doted on this granddaughter, he sighed and checking to ensure nobody was around, he walked to Xiao Huan’s side and spoke in a low voice, “Those few days in the death marsh, we saw a few Chang Shen Hall disciples while following Jin PingEr but ever since after yesterday, have you seen any of the Chang Shen Hall’s disciples?”

Xiao Huan was surprised.

Zhou YiXian smiled, a different expression from his usual cheeky demeanour appeared, his eyes sharp and bright, he said, “Especially that day when you met that fish head monster, I heard it very clearly from the side, the ones meeting with Jin PingEr were exactly the other Evil Faction two big sects, Ghost King Sect and Wan Du Clan’s young and highly-skilled - Ghost Li and Qin WuYan. These three people at this timing meeting inside Chang Shen Hall headquarters where their main strength is, what do you think they are doing?”

Xiao Huan's arched eyebrows frowned, after a long while she suddenly burst out, "Grandfather, don't tell me you mean....."

Zhou YiXian cut in, "That's right, I'm afraid the Chang Shen Hall which enjoyed a short period of fame in the past eight hundred years has extinguished in these three young fiend hands. YuYang Zi with such extremely high skills, even he would actually....." He heaved a long sigh, his expression suddenly became bleak, after being silent for a long while he said, "Now the internal fights in the Evil Faction are getting more intense by the day, Good Faction sects are also scheming against each other, ten years ago Qing Yun Sect suffered a heavy loss and until today it has not recouped. This world is going to suffer another abyss of misery again."

Xiao Huan stared blankly, Zhou YiXian heaved a long sigh and suddenly perked up, [He he] he laughed and said, "If the world is going to be chaotic, let it be!, What is it to us? Let's go, let's continue to bring benefit to the people."

Xiao Huan was speechless, Zhou YiXian seemed not to mind at all and walked over to pick up the bundle, he held that bamboo pole with the banner, [Immortal Guide], turned his head and about to call Xiao Huan when suddenly he stared dumbfoundedly, his eyes staring past Xiao Huan.

Xiao Huan saw her grandfather's strange expression and quickly turned around, she too got a shocked, Wild Dog Taoist with his unlucky face and gloomy expression, walking over from the death marsh, he looked around and saw Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian standing at the village entrance.

This early morning, Wild Dog Taoist who had been following Ghost Li all along, was suddenly ordered to leave the death marsh by Ghost Li. Wild Dog was

astounded but he somehow knew in his heart that the death marsh now was extremely dangerous and it was also good for him to leave, just that being coldly told off by that young Ghost Li's stiff face, he was very offended and grumbled and indignantly walked out.

Now that he unexpectedly met Xiao Huan at the village entrance, Wild Dog without knowing why, his heart palpitated and subconsciously made a detour to the side, what exactly was he afraid of?

Unexpectedly after not more than two steps, Xiao Huan's voice was heard from behind, "Priest, wait!"

Wild Dog was startled and slowly turned around, Zhou YiXian frowned and walked to Xiao Huan, he angrily said, "What do you call him for?"

Xiao Huan stared at Zhou YiXian and did not bother about him, a smile appeared on her face and she walked over, taking out an umbrella from her bundle, she said to Wild Dog Taoist, "Priest, I have not return your umbrella to you."

Wild Dog glanced at that umbrella, his face showed conflicting expressions, for a moment he felt dazed and also did not also stretch out his hand to receive, Xiao Huan did not mind and pushed the umbrella into Wild Dog Taoist's hand, smiled sweetly at him and said, "Thanks to you the other day."

Wild Dog Taoist suddenly felt something brightened in front of him, his vision seemed to blur, subconsciously he swallowed.

Xiao Huan walked back to Zhou YiXian, took over Zhou YiXian's bundle and said, "Let's go Grandfather!"

Zhou YiXian stared at that still dazed Wild Dog and walked off with Xiao Huan, he was still muttering, “Why do you keep smiling happily at him?”

Xiao Huan annoyingly said, “Grandfather, he is a good person!”

Zhou YiXian [Pei] a sound, said, “He is a good person then won’t I be Buddha reincarnation?”

Both Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian’s figures gradually went further away and their voices also gradually faded, Wild Dog stood at where he was, his hand still holding the umbrella and not moving. Not knowing how much time had passed, he suddenly stamped his feet and walked forward in big strides, headed towards the direction where Xiao Huan and Zhou YiXian walked to.

After their figures disappeared one after another, Big Wang village again resumed its quietness, at a corner several zhangs from the village entrance, a man and a woman stood there, the guy wearing a long white robe while the girl had a veil covering her face, it was Qing Long and YouJi.

Qing Long indifferently said, “Zhou YiXian’s background, do you know?”

Hiding behind the black veil, YouJi did not speak, the black veil swayed slightly, she seemed to be shaking her head.

Qing Long pondered for a while, his eyes seemed to be reflecting his deep thoughts and said, “This person seemed not that simple and his granddaughter actually have dealings with HeHuan Sect Jin PingEr, we have to watch them more in the future.”

YouJi after remaining silent for a while, indifferently said, “Let’s go! The important matter that sect head instructed us to do, we cannot delay it anymore.”

Qing Long looked at her, a trace of worry flashed past his eyes but his expression did not change, he said, “That’s right, let’s go!”

After speaking, both of them unhurriedly walked out of Big Wang village but their directions were opposite from Zhou YiXian and the rest, they were heading towards the death marsh.

A wind blew out of nowhere, sweeping past Heaven and Earth, carrying a faint smell of desolate.

The sky seemed to turn darker.

[Boom!]

A thunder rumbled in the clouds, big drops of rain immediately fell in succession, drenching Heaven and Earth, everywhere was grey and gloomy, Ghost Li stood on top of a big tree, watching.

Behind him was still the enormous miasma wall, actually if according to conventional logic, usually whenever the miasma emanated from the mountains’ dirty waters encountered the rain, it would weaken and be still but this toxic miasma in the innermost marsh seemed not to fear the rainwater at all, no matter how the wind blow and rain fell, it was still as lofty.

Ghost Li slowly turned his head over and looked ahead but unexpectedly in this inner marsh, it had a dense forest growing in it and in this wailing wind and weeping rain, the forest looked to be endless, who knew how far it would go? In addition the rain was considerably big and although his vision was now much clearer than being in the miasma but he still could not see very far.

[Zi zi, zi zi!]

Suddenly the branch beside jumped, it was Xiao Hui who had left just now and was now bouncing back, within two or three jumps it jumped back to Ghost Li's shoulder. Its hands carrying a few wild fruits plucked from somewhere, grinning it passed one to Ghost Li, the other hand covered with three or four wild fruits. It opened its mouth wide and munched.

Ghost Li smiled, received the fruit and took a bite too, it felt unripe but it also had another kind of taste.

The rain became heavier, thunders clapped ceaselessly, Ghost Li did not use his magical weapon to block and allowed the rain to drench him, Xiao Hui sat at Ghost Li's shoulder, its hair turning wetter by the moment but it did not seemed to mind and only cared about the fruit in its mouth, [Ka ji ka ji] happily munching, its long tail stretching behind Ghost Li and swaying here and there.

Ghost Li slowly ate the wild fruit in his hand and suddenly softly said, "Xiao Hui, did you also recognize her just now?"

Presumably Xiao Hui's mouth was still chewing the fruit, it muttered a few unintelligent sounds, a pair of monkey eyes turning round and round and looking at Ghost Li.

Ghost Li did not seemed to be expecting any answer from the monkey and continued to say, “Why didn’t she kill me? Hasn’t she always abhor the Evil Faction people?”

[Rumble!]

Xiao Hui did not answer but a splitting sound of thunder was heard in the sky.

Ghost Li slowly raised his head, the sky of falling raindrops, like knife like sword, transforming into thousands and thousands, pelting down...

His body trembled slightly, suddenly his thoughts flew, as if he had returned to that night when he was still a child, himself with that benign-looking old monk outside the village, quietly and calmly speaking to himself.

This scene, was actually engraved deep inside his heart, for all these years, it never seemed to fade at all.

Both of his hands clutching tightly, his nails piercing deep into his palms, even his body, also started to shake. The Soul-Absorbing stick in his sleeve, like always, also almost lighted up at the same time, the familiar ice cold feeling swept over his whole body, the vicious energy from the Sinister Orb also seemed to accumulate in his eyes, little by little.

Xiao Hui at his shoulder, nervously called out.

In the sky, a flash of lightning broke through, Ghost Li howled and leapt up, his entire body bathed in a surge of red light, his right hand stretched out, the Soul-Absorbing stick already in his hand, the dark-green light gathered in the

rain to form an enormous light beam, striking down with a loud bang.

Right now his eyes were already totally infused with blood-red light, his expression baleful and his face distorted, he growled in a low voice, like a wild beast.

The enormous green beam of light that struck down suddenly, that big tree which he had stood on earlier, had already been splitted into two, each side crashing down in opposite directions.

[Rumble!]

Another crash of thunder sounded in the horizon.

Xiao Hui jumped aside and watched him silently.

Ghost Li, with one leg kneeling in the extremely filthy mud that was soaked with rain, his right hand tightly clutching the Soul-Absorbing stick, his whole body trembling, a menacing look flashed in his eyes but on his face was instead agony.

Who would know, his growing pain...

A gentle and righteous Yang energy, faintly leapt up inside his body.

On the clothes that were drenched by the rain, on his right arm, a round faint light suddenly lighted up, this righteous Yang energy was extremely pure, it rose up from the 'Inferno Mirror' tied on his right arm and entered into his body,

gradually resisting that Sinister Orb's fiendish energy.

After a long time, the blood-red light in his eyes slowly disappeared, his expression also turned mild and in relative, the brilliant light from both the Soul-Absorbing stick and Inferno Mirror also gradually weakened and disappeared.

Ghost Li, as if after a big battle, slowly stood up, looking exhausted. These ten years, day and night he had trained with the Evil Way Tian Shu and so, day and night immersed in the fiendish nature of the Sinister Orb. He had too, countless times like today, almost taken over by the Sinister Orb evil energy but because he had Tai Chi Xuan Qing Way and Great Brahman Wisdom in his body, which were Good Faction supreme ways of cultivation, he then barely managed to resist it.

But the most crucial part was, every time when his consciousness was on the verge of collapsing, the other mysterious magical weapon, Inferno Mirror, on his body would always emit a mysterious and pure strong Yang energy and forcibly pulled him back from his degeneration into the Evil destructive road.

Just that, he himself also did not know, how much longer could he still resist this natural evil Sinister Orb, and to him, everytime he recalled the past, he would remember BiYao. That kind of torture, it was really an unbearable anguish. If it was not for his perseverance character, most probably he would have become mad long ago.

And all these things, even the shrewd Ghost King had never detected it, he never noticed that his most capable aide was instead bordering on madness day and night.

He slowly stood up, opened his mouth and then discovered his voice had turned hoarse, "Xiao Hui, let's go!"

Xiao Hui blinked, jumped down and leapt up to his shoulder.

Ghost Li gently smoothed Xiao Hui's hair, his lips moved but eventually he did not say what he wanted to say, took a deep breath and strided, walking towards the deep of the forest.

In the inner death marsh which was surrounded by the ceaseless rain, other than the storm noises, nothing could be heard between the Heaven and Earth, the ancient and dense forest was silent, the rain hitting the leaves and raindrops rolling and dropping.

In the horizon, another thunder!

The rain continued for an hour and had no intention of stopping.

Lin JingYu wiped the raindrops from his face but the next moment, another batch of raindrops rained down. He smiled bitterly and gave up.

In the ancient forest, there was only his figure. Alone in this perilous and unfamiliar wildlands territory, there was really an unseen feeling of fear.

Initially Qing Yun Sect and Tian Yin Temple, FenXiang Valley outstanding disciples entered the inner marsh together. But while traversing that miasma wall, first was because of a sudden event, they encountered the strange storm eye in the middle and it broke their formation, without waiting for them to gather their senses, an enormous strange beast suddenly appeared in the

miasma, passing through them.

Because of the degree of visibility in the miasma, nobody could see clearly what the monster looked like and that monster seemed to be only passing by and did not attack them but because its body was so huge, although everyone was highly skilled but in the moment of panic, each flew off in fright and with the miasma storm, they were separated.

Lin JingYu kept flying and with the protection of the Dragon Slaying Sword, broke out of the miasma and came to this ancient inner marsh forest. And the location of where he had broke out, was actually just mere several miles from where Ghost Li was.

These two childhood friends, once as close as real brothers, yet was unaware of this situation. Just that even if they knew, what they faced might be an even more painful scene?

Lin JingYu naturally was unaware of these, he raised his head and looked at the sky which was still full of gloomy heavy clouds, this rain seemed like it would go on for half a day, he cursed under his breath, after thinking for a while, he eventually still strided forward ahead.

There was actually no path at all to traverse the forest. Other than those big and tall trees, the forest was full of thick and luxuriant thorny undergrowth, with a variety of bizarre plants. Unusual animals and poisonous insects never seen outside the death marsh appeared occasionally in front of Lin JingYu.

Only in a short while, Lin JingYu had already faced countless dangers, if not for his sharp-wits and intelligence and in addition his skills improved much over these ten over years, he would have suffered badly.

[Wu!], the Dragon Slayer Sword making a streak of bluish green light, severing a crimson poisonous snake which had leapt from the tree beside into two, at the same time, Lin JingYu finally could not take it, he immediately leapt up into the air, using the magical weapon strength and soared up into the sky.

He was only slightly relieved when he was in the air, at the same time he was surprised, this inner marsh was really full of surprises, the dangers faced far exceeded the outer marsh, where exactly did those numerous bizarre poisonous insects come from?

He looked down, the remnants of the crimson poisonous snake were still writhing on the ground, it looked like it was not dead yet and other than this poisonous snake, he had just faced attacks from poisonous scorpion, toad and a variety of lizards, danger really lurked everywhere.

Initially Lin JingYu wanted to conserve energy and travelled by walking but now no matter what he dared not land casually, he glanced around in the mid-air and suddenly shook.

Deep of the forest in front of him, behind the blanket of rain, a gold light flashed past, mingled within the storm, a person's faint shout was also heard.

Lin JingYu was delighted, without any hesitation, he quickly urged his magical weapon and flew towards where that gold light flashed.

Travelling by air, his speed was unbelievably fast and very soon, he was near that area, he surveyed carefully and was shocked, a vast empty ground appeared in the forest and in it, a waterlogged depression stood in the middle and an extremely weird flower bloomed in the center of it.

The flower was enormous, its diameter stretched for several zhangs wide, if not for his own eyes he would find it hard to believe that such species existed in this world.

Looking down from the sky, the bottom end of the flower body appeared to be green and the upper part was splitted into numerous branches, assuming a brilliant red in color. In the middle, the distinction between the red and green areas were obvious, marking a clear boundary. And on the very top of those numerous red branches, a small ball as crystal-clear as a dewdrop and over it the wet surface glistened, not sure if it was wet because of the rain or it was actually like that? (Note 1)

In this storm, the strange flower swayed gently with the wind, a faint sweet smell floated in the air.

Lin JingYu was astounded, following which his attention was drawn to the two persons and one beast beside the strange flower, looking at them, immediately his face showed delight, standing there was Return of the Wind Valley Zeng ShuShu and Tian Yin Temple Fa Xiang.

Meeting familiar faces in this unfamiliar place, Lin JingYu was extremely happy, he could not help but called out to them.

The two people heard the shout and were surprised, they turned and saw Lin JingYu dashing down and were ecstatic but after a while, Zeng ShuShu gestured for Lin JingYu to look ahead, Lin JingYu calmed his heart down and immediately was shocked by that strange monster up ahead.

Actually the strange beast which was facing Fa Xiang and Zeng ShuShu was

extremely bizarre but because one, Lin JingYu was greatly astounded by that huge strange flower in front of them and second, he was over delighted when he saw them and thus did not pay attention to that strange beast. Now that he looked, this strange beast looked like a wild duck, almost as tall as a human, its body green in color, faint red eyes, red tail and fangs in its mouth with two wings in its back, it seemed to be a ferocious bird species. (Note 2)

That strange beast growled, both wings shook and immediately a burst of wind and rain swept over.

Lin JingYu landed beside Zeng ShuShu and Fa Xiang, three of them backfacing that strange flower, Lin JingYu frowned and stepped back.

Unexpectedly Fa Xiang's countenance changed, he quickly pulled Lin JingYu back and quietly said, "Do not go near that flower!"

Lin JingYu was stunned and stopped but he looked at Fa Xiang, the smiling expression on his face suddenly turned cold and he indifferently brushed off Fa Xiang's hand.

Fa Xiang frowned and sighed, he withdrew his hand. He knew that Lin JingYu still remembered that tragic episode in Grasstemple village and still could not let go.

Zeng ShuShu suddenly raised his voice and called out, "Watch out!"

Both of them got a shock and looked ahead, that strange beast moved its wings and leapt into the air, charging over.

Zeng ShuShu urgently said, “Fa Xiang senior brother, we will do as plan.”

Lin JingYu was about to react but hearing his words, he was startled and stopped.

That strange beast was fierce and swift, in the blink of an eye and it was already in front of them, Fa Xiang and Zeng ShuShu suddenly shouted in a low voice at the same time and scattered off in different directions. Although that strange beast looked ferocious but it was not too bright and it paused for a while at the spot at where it had landed and seemed to think for a moment which enemy it should pursue but at this moment, Fa Xiang’s [Reincarnation Pearl] and Zeng ShuShu [XuanYuan Sword] had already hit down at the same time from the sides.

But that strange beast seemed not to fear at all, it opened its mouth and roared loudly, [Peng peng] two sounds, these two magical weapons hit onto its body and caused it to flew back but that beast bared its fangs and brandished its claws in mid-air and seemed unharmed. This degree of endurance caused Lin JingYu’s countenance to change. If it was him, he might not be able to withstand the full-strength blows from Zeng ShuShu and Fa Xiang.

It looked like that strange beast was flapping its wings and would retaliated back fiercely once it stabilized itself, Lin JingYu concentrated and prepared himself but at this moment his body shook, his mouth ajar and he could not speak.

That beast flew backwards and there was none other than that enormous big flower behind it. The beast moved in the air and touched the red branches crystals, suddenly, that beast howled, the cry was full of fear and shock.

In a moment, the strange flower had already started to have an amazing transformation, all of the flowers suddenly seemed to come alive, one after another from all directions it started to gather around this strange beast and that red sparkling round ball on top of the flower branches in fact had a strong adhesive strength. That strange beast was stuck on top of it and even though it exerted strength and struggled, it was unable to pull free. In less than a moment, more and more flower petals surrounded it layer by layer and finally wrapped up this almost as tall as a human strange beast and even that strange beast's cry was also gradually muffled.

Fa Xiang and Zeng ShuShu who had created this trap, saw right in front of their eyes how terrible the strange flower was, their countenance, like Lin JingYu, also changed.

After a long time, the strange flower totally covered this strange beast and its figure could no longer be seen, tranquillity returned to the place and only the sound of wind and rain remained in-between Heaven and Earth.

The three of them faced each other, Fa Xiang sighed, pressed his palms together and chanted softly.

Note 1: [Divine and Evil The strange. Hundreds of Flower Chapter] Man-eating Flower: A strange species in the wildlands, measured zhangs when the flower bloomed, top red bottom white, the red bead on its extreme top adhere onto humans and living things and swallowed hem.

Another note: From [Modern Insectivorous Plant Complete Collection], this thing was suspected to be a living thing from [Bladderwort Family]. South America, Asia (had not inquired thoroughly for North America, seemed like it had also dispersed there?) had its dispersal footprints but the plant size was not

big, insectivorous did not have major threat to human. Its appearance was similar to what ancient books described, it could be an aquatic animal bladderwort, it could be *Drosophyllum*.

Note 2: This animal was quoted from [Classics of Mountains and Seas. Classics of Mountains Fifth Scroll. ZhongShan Classic. Qing Yao Mountain]

Chapter 97: Night talk

The three of them remained silent for a while. It was still Zeng ShuShu whose nature was more vivacious and he was also quick-witted, he saw things were looking awkward between Lin JingYu and Fa Xiang so he was the first to smile and said, “Lin junior brother, how did you make it here?”

Lin JingYu although was not very close to Zeng ShuShu but first, to see someone from his own sect in this unfamiliar place, he felt some degree of closeness to him. Second, he knew that Zeng ShuShu was on good terms with Zhang Xiao Fan and so somehow had a good impression of Zeng ShuShu. He nodded and said, “I was separated from the senior brothers in the miasma and I kept going straight, didn’t expect to make it out. I came out somewhere not far from here and happened to see the bright lights flashes from the magical weapons and therefore came to check it out.”

Zeng ShuShu [He he] laughed, used his hand to wipe off the rainwater on his face and said, “Seems like we are quite fated, in this perilous place, the more people the better, isn’t it! Fa Xiang senior brother?”

Fa Xiang smiled and nodded, he said, “That’s right....oh, the rain stopped?”

Zeng ShuShu and Lin JingYu were surprised, they looked at the sky and really,

not knowing since when, the mercilessly pouring rain had become a drizzle and right now, it had turned brighter and the sky seemed to have opened up.

Lin JingYu breathed deeply, the air in the forest after the rain was extremely crisp and seemed to carry a slight trace of sweet smell, penetrating deep into the heart.

Fa Xiang turned and looked at that mysterious flower which had already closed up and said, "There are really a lot of unusual things in here, this bizarre flower is not a humane type too, we should not stay here too long, let's leave this place first!"

Lin JingYu did not reply, Zeng ShuShu smiled and said, "Fa Xiang senior brother is correct, let's go!"

Speaking, he turned and looked at Lin JingYu, Lin JingYu quietly nodded.

After arranging their stuffs, the three of them steered their magical weapons and soared up into the air.

Zeng ShuShu hesitated for a while in the mid-air and loudly said to them, "Fa Xiang senior brother, Lin junior brother, this forest is appallingly big and contain poisonous insects, strange beasts and numerous different type of ferocious animals, I'm afraid that the rumoured rare treasure is really deep inside this forest, what shall we do next?"

Lin JingYu spiritedly said, "Zeng senior brother, if we do not enter the tiger's cave, how can we get the tiger's cub?"

Zeng ShuShu looked at him and turned to look at Fa Xiang, Fa Xiang smiled and placed his palms together in a prayer, showing no objections. He smiled and said, “As such then let’s search this harsh wildlands thoroughly and see exactly what kind of rare treasure was born?”

The three of them felt invigorated, they urged their magical weapons and transformed into three streams of brilliant lights, continued on deep into the forest.

The night curtain gradually lowered, the sky had turned totally dark.

Lin JingYu and the other two had already searched for half a day but had had no results, not even the shadow of the rumoured rare treasure was seen. On top of that they unfortunately experienced quite a number of the forest’s different types of bizarre poisonous insects and strange beasts, and some of them were quite unimaginable. Even when they flew past a big tree in the sky, one of the branches suddenly turned into a grey venomous insect and tried to bite them with its mouth opened wide.

As such they continued on like this, although the three of them were all trained cultivators, each one of them was an outstanding talent from their own sects and managed to traverse safely but they could not help but felt alarmed in their hearts.

As the night grew, the three of them discussed and happened to find a big rock in the forest which was quite flat and so the three of them landed on it to take a rest.

Zeng ShuShu carefully walked to the side, keeping a lookout and at the same time summoned his magical weapon, XuanYuan Sword. Using the weapon’s

weak light, he proceeded warily, after selectively picking and choosing, he finally took some of the drier and good branches back, preparing to start a fire.

Lin JingYu watched from the side and suddenly gave a bitter laugh. Zeng ShuShu heard it, looked up and met his eyes, he knew what he was thinking and also [He he] laughed out.

Qing Yun Sect ever since established two thousands years ago, to say the person who was the most detailed and cautious in gathering firewoods, it would definitely be Zeng ShuShu today!

Turning back, Zeng ShuShu took out a firestarter from his bosom but the heavy rain during the day had soaked the surrounding branches wet. After trying to start a fire for almost half a day and creating a lot of smoke, the fire was finally started.

Fa Xiang glanced at the surroundings and only saw darkness in the forest, after hesitating for a while, he signaled to both of them to sit closer and then took a deep breath. He slowly chanted and offered up the magical weapon, “Reincarnation Pearl” in his hands. After a while, gentle golden light glimmered and expanded out, forming a six chi perimeter of golden circle light, enveloping the three of them in it.

In the darkness, under the gentle light of the Reincarnation Pearl, their faces reflected the faint golden color. Lin JingYu and Zeng ShuShu were both from well-known sects and both saw this move from Fa Xiang clearly. Lin JingYu, although had some grudge against him but he too like Zeng ShuShu, their faces revealed admiration and surprise.

Zeng ShuShu smiled and said, “Fa Xiang senior brother, good magical power,

admirable, admirable!”

Fa Xiang smiled and said, “There are too many venomous insects here, I’m afraid the light from this small fire might not be enough so with this ‘Prajna Heart Circle’, we don’t have to worry about the usual venomous animals tonight.”

After speaking, he smiled faintly at both of them and unintentionally or intentionally looked at Lin JingYu, Lin JingYu looked at him and slightly lowered his head and did not say anything. Fa Xiang slowly shifted his gaze and looked at the small campfire between them, the firelight reflected in his eyes, what was he thinking about?

The ambience slowly quietened down, the three of them did not speak anymore. The late night surrounded them, in the heavy darkness, suddenly a gust of wind blew.

The wind sounded like a sob, like a broken-hearted girl crying by herself somewhere far ahead, it drifted lightly in the forest, sweeping past the trees, brushing by the branches and leaves.

The black forest, in this black late night, suddenly as though as it was alive, opened its chest wide and let its offsprings in this boundless wide chest, vivaciously sang.

The night deepened, the wind went past the tip of the forest.

The fire flickered unsteadily.

Fa Xiang closed his eyes in meditation, Zeng ShuShu seemed to be tired too, he lay beside the campfire with his clothes on and looked to be asleep. Only Lin JingYu sat on the other side of the fire, without any sign of sleepiness, his gaze bright, staring blankly at that burning flames.

Slowly, he stretched his hand out and took a withered branch, [Pa] a sound and it was bent and broke into two, gently pushed into the fire.

The flames slowly swallowed the stick and seemed to grow stronger. Lin JingYu suddenly felt an awareness and looked to the side, Fa Xiang had opened his eyes and was silently looking at him

“Lin junior brother.” as if considering the sleeping Zeng ShuShu, Fa Xiang specially lowered his voice and quietly said, “Why are you still not resting?”

Lin JingYu looked back to the campfire, after a while he said, “Aren’t Master yourself too is not resting?”

Fa Xiang said, “Junior me has always meditate to rest and has already become a habit but Lin junior brother you are still young, you need to rest more.”

Lin JingYu kept quiet, after a long while he suddenly said, “These ten years, I have always been sleeping less.”

Fa Xiang frowned and felt curious, he asked, “Why?”

Lin JingYu’s eyes reflected the burning flames in front of him, glinting, he unhurriedly said, “Once I closed my eyes, I will recall those innocently killed Grasstemple Village relatives and think of junior brother Xiao Fan who has now

unfortunately degenerated into the Evil way.”

[Pa!] a crisp sound, reverberated lightly in the dim dark night. Lin JingYu bent the branch in his hands again and then slowly fed it to the fire.

The night curtain was totally black, the forest in the darkness as if in a remote place, silently howled.

Fa Xiang silently looked at Lin JingYu, that young man beside the faint firelight, his figure looked somehow lonely but still that obstinate.

After a while, he looked away and looked at the gently bobbing Reincarnation Pearl in front of him, he suddenly said, “You still think about Zhang Xiao Fan Zhang junior brother?”

Lin JingYu did not answer but when he looked at Fa Xiang, his gaze was cold.

Fa Xiang’s eyes showed a faint hurt but his voice was still gentle, he unhurriedly said, “These past ten years, he joined the Evil Faction Ghost King sect and is now a vice-leader in the Ghost King sect. The whole world knows, sooner or later he will be the next Ghost King sect leader.”

He slowly turned around and met Lin JingYu’s gaze, the corner of his eyes seemed to twitch but he continued to speak, “These ten years, he kill people like flies, devouring people as if it is his second nature, even the Evil Faction people also addressed him as Xue GongZi and not by his name, the Good Faction all over the world view him as a calamity within one’s bosom.....”

“Enough!” Lin JingYu suddenly shouted, his teeth gritted, green veins popped

out of his tightly clenched fists.

Fa Xiang stared at him but still continued, "If one day, when you face him, what will you do?"

The night turned colder, as if the whole world had also become this cold and heartless.

The golden light and firelight gently reflected on Lin JingYu's handsome face, he slowly closed his eyes and breathed deeply.

"He is my brother!" after a very long time, in the stillness, Lin JingYu suddenly spoke, firmly and without any bit of hesitation.

Fa Xiang looked at him and did not speak.

Lin JingYu slowly lowered his head, his voice turned low and deep, "I know, now that he has already sank into the Evil way and has no way back, in the future when I see him, most likely it will be as irreconcilable enemies....."

[Pa!] He broke the third branch and slowly fed it to the fire, he quietly said, "Just that even if we have a life and death battle or to be as sworn enemies, I do not care about how you these Good Faction's elders think, in my heart, even though Good and Evil is irreconcilable and sooner or later there will be a battle, it doesn't matter if he wants to kill me or I have to kill him, I still treat him as my brother."

He smiled, his smile carried some anguish and resolution, he distantly said, "He in my entire life, is my only brother!"

Nobody spoke anymore.

In the ancient forest, it became more and more quiet, in the chilly wind, as if someone was on that tree top, in the far horizon, quietly sighed.....

Zeng ShuShu suddenly opened his eyes, sat up, his brows locked in a frown, as if concentrating at hearing something. Fa Xiang and Lin JingYu both got a fright.

Lin JingYu exclaimed, “Zeng senior brother, what is it?”

Zeng ShuShu’s face was solemn, he said, “Something is not right, all of you listen!”

Fa Xiang and Lin JingYu were shocked, they were both deep in their talks and did not notice any movements near them, right now they quickly turned their attention to their surroundings and concentrated.

In the forest, other than the constant wind that went [wu wu], it seemed to be still that quiet, there was no movement at all. But after a while, both of them frowned at the same time, far away, a faint but dense [sha sha] sounds, as if hundreds of insects were travelling in the night. Although separated by the darkness, it seemed unreal and the sounds also seemed to be very far away but this degree of fine sounds made one had goosebumps!

The three of them looked uncertain, Lin JingYu frowned and said, “Don’t tell me it is another poisonous insect?”

Zeng ShuShu forced a smile and said, “I’m afraid the numbers are not that little!”

The three of them looked at each other and saw the fear in each other’s eyes, in this full of poisonous insects unpredictable dangers death marsh, just merely one day and they had already developed some wariness towards the ferocious animals here, in addition, the different types of bizarre animals here were too overwhelming, really wondered what thing would come out next?

Just when they were on their guards and preparing to take precautions, far ahead in the forest in front of them, suddenly a loud clamour was heard and after a moment, an angry shout mixed with the cries of the insects were heard. Lin JingYu and the rest were startled, Zeng ShuShu was the first to respond, “It’s Fen Xiang Valley Li Xun senior brother!”

Lin JingYu’s expression looked shocked, he quickly said, “Li senior brother may have danger, I will go out to meet.....”

While speaking, he was about to move when suddenly a hand stretched over and pulled him down, it was Fa Xiang, he was heard speaking quickly, “I will go, the dangers here are unexpected, both of you stay within the Prajna Heart Circle and do not act rashly.”

Without waiting for both of them to react, his body fluttered, the pale blue monk robe soared up and after a moment, his figure disappeared into the darkness.

Lin JingYu and Zeng ShuShu were both stunned but the next moment, the clamour noises increased again, angry shouts were heard ceaselessly and insects’ cries filled the air, in it mixed with a few cries of alarms, revealed that

Fa Xiang had already reached Li Xun and came into contact with those unknown strange animals.

The night was deep, the chilly wind in the forest seemed to increase too, the sounds mournful. The clamour noises turned louder and louder but the darkness was like a unscalable high wall, blocking in front of Zeng ShuShu and Lin JingYu.

Like ghosts wailing, like wolves howling!

Just at the moment when Zeng ShuShu and Lin JingYu were unable to resist anymore and about to dash out, suddenly a sharp whistle was heard and in an instant, all of the insects' cries died, human figures flashed in the darkness and two people at the same time floated over, it was Fa Xiang and Fen Xiang Valley Li Xun, some parts of their clothes were torn and faint blood were seen on Li Xun's body.

Just that their movements were extremely fast, in a flash they were already within the golden circle light, Lin JingYu and Zeng ShuShu quickly went up to receive them and saw both of them looked exhausted.

Without waiting for Lin JingYu and the rest to ask, Li Xun's eyebrows suddenly moved and he shouted, "Look out!"

Everyone was startled, in the surrounding forest darkness, suddenly loud cries of insects surrounded them from all around, densely packed and enclosing them. Numerous horrible eyes, emitting faint lights, staring at them in the darkness!

“What is it?” Zeng ShuShu with his eyes wide opened, looking around and asking Fa Xiang and Li Xun at the same time.

Li Xun with his face solemn, said, “It is all huge ants, everyone be careful!”

Lin JingYu and Zeng ShuShu were taken aback, Zeng ShuShu astonishingly asked, “What?”

And at that moment, Fa Xiang suddenly quietly said, “Watch out, they are here!”

Everyone was shocked and quickly readied themselves, under the firelight and Reincarnation Pearl’s light, in the deep darkness of the forest, the [sha sha] noises erupted, the approaching moving masses besieged them.

When the black figures came nearer, Lin JingYu and the rest took a close look at them and immediately sucked in a breath of cold air, the strange things that were crawling ceaselessly out from the darkness looked like ants but these things were all almost the size of a human’s calf and their numbers seemed to be infinite, in an instant the [sha sha] blood-curdling sounds filled the empty ground of this forest.

Zeng ShuShu and the rest, in spite being highly skilled, also turned pale at this moment but these enormous ants, whether it was afraid of Fa Xiang’s Prajna Heart Circle or the campfire that was burning, although they came near but stopped about half a zhang away. However the number of huge ants kept on gushing out from the darkness and there were at least a thousand of them.

The black figures flickered, all four of their faces were pale, the mournful

sounds of the wind swept through this ancient forest, as if mocking these humans for disturbing the ancient peace here.

In that distant wind, there also seemed to be a faint bamboo flute sound drifting along.

Li Xun's expression changed, he suddenly raised his voice and shouted, "Which Evil Sect demon dare to employ tricks here?"

This shout, carried some force, in an instant even the sound of the wind also seemed to pause.

Not just Zeng ShuShu and Lin JingYu, even Fa Xiang was surprised, when he went out to meet Li Xun, he only saw the numerous huge ants and did not notice any Evil Faction people around. He immediately asked, "What, these huge ants are tricks played by the Evil Faction sorcerers?"

Li Xun snorted, his stare fierce, he looked around and said, "That's right, when it was nightfall, I met a stranger near here and after shouting our greetings, that person immediately turned hostile and attacked, his attacks were using the Evil Sect evil moves. As for these freaks, it was all that fellow using some unknown immoral methods and is able to actually manipulate these type of ferocious wild beasts....."

Li Xun had not finished his words when suddenly someone laughed lightly in the darkness and said, "This Good Faction chivalrous hero sure presented it well but I seemed to remember that it was you who made the first move?"

That voice was a male and seemed young but the sound of his voice moved

around, for a moment nobody could tell where his position was?

Li Xun's expression changed but in this unfavourable situation, he did not have any slightest sign of fear, he loudly said, "Since you are an Evil Sect sorcerer, naturally I will have to eliminate the evil, if you are a man then you should stand out, let's duel one-to-one for three hundred rounds. Using these ignorant beasts, what kind of hero are you?"

That man suddenly laughed and indifferently said, "Heroes are what you Good Faction people claim to do, it will never be my turn."

After his words, the sound of flute faintly started, that mass of huge ants suddenly separated, making out a path. A young man unhurriedly walked out from the darkness and stood outside the golden Prajna Heart Circle, he had a smile on his face and his bearing was scholarly and refined.

It was Wan Du Clan Qin WuYan!

Fa Xiang's face was grim, he appraised him carefully and suddenly said, "At such a young age, your skills are unfathomable and to be able to control thousands of venomous insects, don't tell me you are what everyone addressed as the Wan Du Clan Qin WuYan Du GongZi?"

Qin WuYan frowned and turned to look carefully at Fa Xiang, he suddenly smiled and said, "So it is Tian Yin Temple Fa Xiang Master, no wonder your discernment is excellent, my humble self is indeed Qin WuYan. " He paused for a while and leisurely said, "People said among the Good Faction three big sects' younger generation disciples today, publicly acknowledged Tian Yin Temple Fa Xiang Master as a person of outstanding talent and with deep wisdom and high virtue, now that I saw you today, it is really a justified reputation, Qin WuYan

make my salutations here.”

After speaking, he nodded slightly, a smile on his face.

Fa Xiang frowned and seemed to hear at the same time, Li Xun’s snort, a shiver went through his heart.

Although Qin WuYan’s face had a smile but his thoughts were turning rapidly. Different from the rest, he came from Evil Sect Wan Du Clan. Entering into this full of ferocious and venomous beasts and insects inner marsh, others viewed it with dread but to him, it was like entering a treasure cave, he was extremely delighted.

Those poisonous animals that he could only meet by chance encounter were actually everywhere here. And among them were even the unusual venomous insects that he had not even heard of. To a poison master expert like him, it was ten times more precious than thousands of golds and silvers.

Wan Du Clan in the Evil Sect had always been maverick. Although their training and cultivation were all from ‘Tian Shu’ like the other branches but what they inherited and passed on was the mystical cultivation method using different types of rare poisonous animals to complement their training, hence since several hundred years ago, all of the highly skilled experts from this sect were all experts and masters on using poison.

And to be able to find the most potent and most venomous animal, to Wan Du Clan members, it would be an immeasurable help in their cultivation path.

Qin WuYan was now Wan Du Clan Sect Leader’s last disciple, his aptitude was

extremely high and was a rare gifted talent in using poison. After entering the inner marsh, once he saw the situation here, he was immediately pleasantly surprised. These few days he searched and gathered many poisonous animals and even encountered the highly toxic huge ants in the death marsh. Qin WuYan tried using Wan Du Clan 'Control Demon Flute' and perhaps the Evil Way Tian Shu indeed contained the unknown creations of Heaven and Earth, these ferocious wildlands insects were actually successfully controlled by Qin WuYan using the methods that were passed down in Tian Shu.

Qin WuYan was elated and unexpectedly met Fen Xiang Valley Li Xun nearby, both of them could not see eye to eye and started to fight, Qin WuYan simply used this numerous 'Death Marsh Enormous Ants' move. Although Li Xun's skills were high but surrounded by the countless huge ants, he could only hold them back, if not for Fa Xiang arriving in time, he would have suffered great losses.

Just that the situation now, Fa Xiang, Zeng ShuShu, Lin JingYu and Li Xun the four of them, were trapped by this young but with exceptional skills, Qin WuYan.

Chapter 98: Past Feelings

Past Affections

[Translator note: I believed the title came from this phrase which seemed to be the latter part of Qin WuYan's five steps poem: The past affections, so much time had passed, do you still remember? Doesn't matter, there is still a grieving person here and he has already had a head full of white hair]

Qin WuYan looked at each one of them. With his sharp eyes, naturally he could tell that these four people were all outstanding talents, if using just their skills to fight, it might not be beneficial to him.

Just that Wan Du Clan had always chose the unorthodox ways and used either weird or underhand methods. Right now Qin WuYan was in control of this group of death marsh huge ants and also, he was completely at ease with countless of poisonous animals on him. In fact he looked normal and looking at the situation that way, he still had the upper hand.

Zeng ShuShu had always been quick-witted but right now he was fretting, looking at those savage-looking death marsh huge ants, the smell of blood assaulted them. He lowered his voice and spoke to the other two, "What do we do now, do we leave or fight?"

Li Xun frowned but did not speak. Actually if in accordance with his usual personality he definitely would never agree to retreat but after battling with those huge death marsh ants earlier, even though just with his strength alone he had killed over a hundred ants but if those innumerable ants surged up together, that terrifying force made him shuddered.

Fa Xiang could not make up his mind but Lin JingYu suddenly spoke, "I think we can fight, I dare say those death marsh huge ants are definitely not human pets and instead are being controlled with some evil method by this Evil Sect sorcerer, we only need to deal with this person and we can win with one fight."

Fa Xiang nodded and said, "What Lin junior brother says is reasonable, the both of you....."

Zeng ShuShu pondered for a while and said, "What Lin junior brother said is right and with the four of us against him one person, if we still flee for our lives then that is too shameful."

After which the three of them looked at Li Xun, Li Xun in the recent years was the most talented disciple in Fen Xiang Valley and had always been prideful. If Qin WuYan had not out of a sudden summoned those innumerable huge ants, he would have been the first to dual with Qin WuYan. Right now facing their stares, how could he lose this face, naturally he also said, "Fight!"

Fa Xiang immediately nodded and spoke quietly, "Later we will split into two teams, will need to trouble Li senior brother and Zeng senior brother to help us block those huge ants while Lin junior brother and I attack that Qin Wu Yan together, how is it?"

Three of them nodded together.

While they were discussing, Qin WuYan was also strategizing. When he had used the ants to besiege Li Xun, he did not expect Li Xun's skills to be that high. Just with his strength alone, he was able to kill almost a hundred of those tough-skins-hard-bones venomous ants and looking at the other three, it was most likely they were all also highly-skilled, especially that Tian Yin Temple Fa Xiang, his reputation had become even more well-known in the recent years.

To say the least, just by looking at this Prajna Heart Circle, it indistinctly embodied the Buddhism great power of subduing demons and could make those huge death marsh ants instinctively stayed far from that golden circle. This level of cultivation was really remarkable.

He was deliberating on how to deal with those four people when suddenly a whistle sounded in front of him, the golden light flashed and Prajna Heart Circle was withdrew. The four of them leapt towards him and a commotion also started from the huge ants beside him.

Qin WuYan unexpectedly was delighted, he laughed out loud and flipped his left hand, a tiny black iron flute appeared but he did not blow it, instead he drew across the air, pressed a few holes on the flute using his left hand and immediately a low quiet sound was heard from the sky.

It did not have any impact to humans but to those innumerable death marsh huge ants, they looked like they had received a command and immediately started to move, gashing and clawing towards those four people.

Li Xun and Zeng ShuShu seemed to anticipate it and moved forward at the same time while wielding their magical weapons. Immediately, the places

where the magical weapons' bright lights flashed, the first several huge ants were flung out. However both of their arms also throbbed with pain upon the impact. Li Xun had dealt with these huge ants earlier on and had already experienced it therefore he was not surprised but Zeng ShuShu's countenance changed and he secretly felt that these beasts were indeed powerful.

Both of them gathered their spirits and in a short while forced those numerous huge ants to a side. Lin JingYu and Fa Xiang transformed into resplendent lights, like lightning, the Dragon Slayer Sword turned into a bluish-green light and charged up into the sky, it immediately forced the darkness in the forest to recede several zhangs and struck down from the top towards Qin WuYan.

The force of the sword was extremely powerful, even Qin WuYan frowned and secretly thought to himself that these Good Faction guys were really not easy to deal with. But his expression did not show any signs of perturbation, his left hand still controlling the evil flute and making [wu wu] strange sounds, commanding the innumerable huge death marsh ants to besiege them while a dagger, radiating clear light, appeared in his right hand and looked capable of blocking Lin JingYu's blow.

Fa Xiang saw it from behind and frowned, he recognized the dagger was the one used during Qing Yun battle ten years ago, Wan Du Clan's rare treasure used by God of Poison. He muttered in a low voice and said, "'Sever Yearning?'"

Qin WuYan heard it and was startled, a flash of admiration went through his eyes. While locked in a stalemate with Lin JingYu, he said, "Fa Xiang Master is really more knowledgeable than others, it is indeed the 'Sever Yearning Divine Dagger'!"

Fa Xiang appeared at Lin JingYu's side but he did not rush in to assist, he

calmly said, “A pity with such divine weapon and your distinguished self with such talents instead went astray, why not turn back to the shore?”

Qin WuYan laughed loudly, his left hand dancing across the flute, the clear luminous dagger gleamed in his right hand, suddenly he took five steps, his figure looked confident and recited, “The one I loved is far, yearning is bitter, my deep affections, unable to convey. Ten years of cultivation to earn affection, hundred years of cultivation to be together, I cannot bear to reminisce the past if I do not sever this yearning!”

A light purple energy suddenly surfaced from his usual placid face, the purple and the clear luminous light of the Sever Yearning Divine Dagger enhanced each other and instantly the bright clear light surged, gradually suppressing the Dragon Slayer Sword’s bluish-green light and at the same time, a rarely seen haughty expression appeared on his face and in a clear and loud voice he said, “Master see that I have degenerated into the Evil way but I instead laugh at Master’s obsessions, there are thousands paths in this world, each with its truths, don’t tell me your shore is the shore and my shore is the sea?”

Fa Xiang smiled and did not take it to heart, he was about to assist Lin JingYu when suddenly Lin JingYu’s firm voice was heard, “ The thousands innate paths, were all from one, the path of righteous, is right in the heart of the common people. You are the Evil, I am the Good, I have to eliminate the evil and subdue the demons!”

A clear whistle, the sound of the dragons singing from the Dragon Slayer Sword rang out loudly, the bluish-green light shone and rose to charge up into the sky. It broke out from the sea of clear bright light and in an instant, the sword energy swept over profusely like rain, covering the sky and earth towards Qin WuYan.

Qin WuYan frowned, unexpectedly this person had such valiant, right now he only had to make the Sever Yearning Divine Dagger turned back and attack, most probably he could inflict him with heavy injuries but this Dragon Slayer Sword pressed forward with an indomitable will to route the target, he knew it would be hard to take on and so avoided the attack.

This distraction caused his hands to slow down and he was unable to concentrate on the Control Demons Flute that was controlling the huge ants in the death marsh. Zeng ShuShu and Li Xun who were trying hard to block them finally could take a breather. However it was only for a moment as these wild and fierce huge ants were fearless and continued to attack, both of them agonized over it.

Zeng ShuShu shouted loudly, “Hey, Fa Xiang senior brother, at this juncture you are still trying to enlighten people! Please act quickly, if not we will be eaten by these beasts and you will have to chant the reborn incantation for me!”

Fa Xiang forced a smile and did not reply, watching Qin WuYan withstood another Lin JingYu’s higher and higher waves of attacks, he loudly said, “Qin benefactor please watch out.”

Immediately after speaking, the Reincarnation Pearl glimmered with golden light, flew out obliquely.

Qin WuYan frowned, Lin JingYu’s skills were already unexpected and now with another Fa Xiang. He snorted and without any movement, three dark shadows flew out from his right sleeve and swiftly separated out, flying at a high speed in three directions towards Fa Xiang.

Fa Xiang's face was solemn, he did not dare to be careless, the Reincarnation Pearl flew out halfway and suddenly shone brilliantly, in a blink of an eye it deflected two of the dark shadows but the last one slipped through the golden light.

Fa Xiang made a sound [Hei], suddenly his hands like a knife, the fair hand stretched out flat, targeted right at that dark figure which was flying in and shouted loudly [Du!].

The dark figure suddenly shook violently in the air and as if it had received a heavy blow, dropped down from the sky. It was a small black snake with a triangular head, evidently it was venomous, it twitched a few times after landing on the ground and did not move anymore, most likely it was dead.

Qin WuYan was stunned, he nodded and praised, “‘DingShen Tong’! As expected from the number one successor of Buddhism Tian Yin Temple, Master's high level of cultivation, my humble self is really impressed but Master kill the livings so thoughtlessly, not sure if the Buddhas will be displeased?”

Before Fa Xiang could reply, Lin JingYu had already attacked with vigour, enshrouding Qin WuYan in a blanket of bluish-green light, he coldly replied, “All of you evil sorceress took countless of lives everyday and committed countless of evil, and now you still can righteously question others, really shameless!”

Qin WuYan [Haha] laughed and avoided the unstoppable sharp light from Dragon Slayer Sword. The Sever Yearning Divine Dagger's clear bright light floated out and retaliated. At the same time, his right hand jerked and another seven or eight shadows flew out from his sleeve, containing colors of brown, black, dark red and scarlet yellow, against the magical weapon's resplendent lights, everyone saw that those were different kinds of venomous creatures, scorpion, centipede etc flying towards Fa Xiang and temporarily prevented him

from coming over.

Everyone was speechless, they thought to themselves that the evil sorcerer was really creepy, with so many poisonous strange creatures on his body and yet he was not afraid of being bitten. And among them, Zeng ShuShu imagined the most, he actually thought what if their senior and junior sisters saw these numerous poisonous creatures, would they be too petrified to even summon their magical weapons?

His thoughts had just flashed past in his head, his hands loosened and was almost bitten by an enormous ant near his feet. Luckily it had only bit the fringe of his shoes but the shock was enough for him to concentrate and focus on the battle.

Just that both he and Li Xun had to handle these innumerable huge ants at the same time, the pressure was simply too great. In this short period, both of them had killed another hundred over ants but these beast were endless and continued to pour over.

Zeng ShuShu and Li Xun looked at each other, both saw the retreat intention in each other's eyes, Zeng ShuShu was about to turn around and urge the other side but from the corner of his eyes, he suddenly discovered, a faint blue light flashed in the deep of the forest.

He was stunned!

Qin WuYan tightened his brows and seemed to also at the same time, thought about pulling back. Today the four of them were really not easy to deal with and initially he assumed the formidable death marsh huge ants would be at the front but unexpectedly they were forcibly stopped by the two of them and

could not even move one step beyond; and the intensity of the attacks by that Qing Yun Sect disciple in front of him with the Dragon Slayer Sword in his hands, he had not seen likes of it in his lifetime and from time to time, he would use the indomitable-with-no-room-for -retreat sword power moves, it was really a troubling point for him.

And for those poisonous creatures, it seemed like they would not be able to hold back Fa Xiang for long, if he were to wait till that person come over then most likely the game was as good as lost. Qin WuYan was the most favourable disciple of God of Poison and although he was young but he had a very good discernment. There and then he decided, his right hand shook and again three strange toads flew out to deal with Fa Xiang, the Sever Yearning's clear and bright light surged and suddenly struck back in great force, the power was so aggressive that even Lin JingYu was forced back a few steps.

Taking advantage of this moment, Qin WuYan suddenly pulled away, moving far away from the rest, giving a long laugh he said, "Tonight let's end it here then..."

Before he could finish his words, suddenly he heard Zeng ShuShu shouted out aloud, "Lu senior sister, quickly stop this person..."

Qin WuYan got a shock, from the corner of his eyes, he saw beside the bright lights, a blue light suddenly appeared in the darkness. Although he was shocked but he did not panic, the Sever Yearning was already horizontally in front of the blue light and he was confident that even how strong the force of this sword would be, he would be able to withstand it.

Unexpectedly although the blue light floated up in the darkness but in the wailing wind, the whole world suddenly became still in an instant, from the other side of the darkness, an icy cold feeling gushed over soundlessly and hit

him on the right side of his body.

In spite of the fact that Qin WuYan had always been a cautious person, he eventually still suffered an underhand attack in this flint-spark moment. [Wa] a sound, he spat out a big mouthful of fresh blood, dying a big part of his chest red. In this critical moment, he still stubbornly pressed ahead and in a short moment, a sound of [suo suo suo] emitted from his right arm ceaselessly and immediately, several poisonous strange creatures were released to obstruct the crowd while his figure at the same time, flew back far away. After a long time his vengeful voice was heard, even though his stamina was already weak but it was still very shrill and sternly said, “Ghost Li, you are something! The revenge for this blow, we will calculate this in the future...”

Everyone was stunned by the sudden twist of event, Qin WuYan suddenly disappeared and all of the death marsh huge ants were suddenly freed but because such wild ferocious animals’ nature were to kill and devour, they instead attacked even more aggressively. Zeng ShuShu and Li Xun were unable to hold them back anymore and in the next moment, both Fa Xiang and Lin JingYu were also being besieged.

That blue light in the air floated and suddenly paused slightly. Suddenly, ignoring the people in the forest, like lightning, it charged into the other side of the darkness. Someone humphed in there and following which, a dark green light shone but without any intention of dueling, it immediately turned to leave. That blue light refused to give up and immediately pursued.

With such exceptional skills, in an instant, only the light remnants of their passing figures were left and in the next moment, even the shadows were gone.

Fa Xiang and the rest with a shout, flew up simultaneously and left the ground. Those huge ants, with no one left to fight and for no reason lost many

of their comrades, they must be extremely incensed, roared at the sky ceaselessly.

Fa Xiang and the rest could not care less about those beasts and quickly searched around, unexpectedly in such a short time, the forest had resumed back its darkness, that green and blue streams of light had already disappeared without a trace and they could only stare at each other!

After a long time, Zeng ShuShu suddenly quietly asked, "Is it him?"

Fa Xiang remained silent for a while, a mix of emotions flashed past his eyes and eventually he sighed and said, "It should be him!"

Both of them looked at each other and looked over at Lin JingYu at the same time but that young man hovered in the air, the night breeze blew over, flapping his clothes around loudly. On his handsome face, there was no expression but that pair of eyes, kept on staring into that dark forest, staring dazedly!

The dark late night.

The stillness of the ancient forest, as if even the cries of the insects in the deep recesses of the darkness had also suddenly disappeared.

Even the sound of the wind brushing past the forest became more and more mournful and bitter, as if narrating the grievances of the dark night.

The green light flashed past in the darkness, like a flitting passerby who had stepped into the darkness but that blue light behind him suddenly appeared.

And it was this dazzling splendor that charged into the darkness and forced all of the darkness to retreat, closely pursuing that green stream of light.

The green light in the forest shuttled suddenly, soared suddenly, increasing and increasing its speed but no matter what it could not shake off that blue light. Looking up from the darkness, that blue light seemed like an impetuous force, pursuing relentlessly and refused to give up.

Who was it, that quietly sighed in the darkness?

Who was it, that opened his/her heart in the night? [Translator note: there was no evident reference to him or her]

The darkness poured in from all directions and then retreated, the sound of the wind hit one's face and then swiftly disappeared, that once familiar figure fluttered ceaselessly in the night scene, reverberated in whose eyes?

[Si!]

A light sound, that green light suddenly stopped and dispersed, Ghost Li's figure appeared and quietly stood at the treetop of a big tree.

Not more than several feet away from him, that blue light too stopped behind him. That handle which even in the night was also that dazzling and radiant, Tian Ya Celestial Sword, held in the fair hand, coldly pointing at him.

The night deepened.

The mournful sound of the wind.

Their clothes, danced lightly in the wind.

Ghost Li unhurriedly, unhurriedly turned over and faced that face.

She was in this world, that exquisite and incomparable beauty and that beauty untouched not even by time, made one stopped breathing but yet intoxicated.

She with her cold face, holding the sword, pointing at him!

The tip of Tian Ya Sword was as cold as snow, so very near to him, even on his throat, he seemed to feel that trail of cold.

And inexplicably, deep inside the heart, that faint anguish.

The wind, moved the treetop, their bodies too, in the night breeze, gently swayed.

Nobody spoke, only quietly stared.

These past ten years, suddenly, from the bottom of the heart, little by little it slowly seethed and surged up to the top.

Her hand clutching the sword, still as fair as ten years ago and not so long ago it had been held in the palm of the hand?

He smiled, with a faint bitterness, he lightly said, "Are you still doing well?"

Lu XueQi did not answer, did not even say a single word. Her lips, because she was biting hard on it, appeared pale. The night gathered around her figure, desolated and beautiful.

Ghost Li, no, Zhang Xiao Fan, in this moonless and totally dark night, in front of this girl, suddenly he seemed to return back to ten years ago, his body seemed to too in the shadow, secretly trembled.

"Why did you not kill me?" That beautiful girl quietly said, Tian Ya which was as cold as snow, still in her hand pointing at him.

He looked at her eyes, so bright and clear, like a soundless flame.

He lowered his head slightly, after a long time, he looked at his own figure, looked at that gently swaying figure in front of him and indifferently said, "Ten years ago in Crystal Hall, why did you impetuously defended me and spoke for me?"

Lu XueQi did not speak, only the corner of her lips pursed slightly, the hand that was holding the sword, so tightly, as if afraid of something?

That shining eyes, whose figure was it that gleamed in it?

Zhang Xiao Fan!

So it really did not change? In these ten years did it really not change?

She stared blankly, bit her lips and let herself remained cold, ensuring her stare would never become blurred.

But, whose heart pounded, throbbing intensely in that long frozen heart, that long-been-silent faint tenderness that quietly lingered around in those countless nights, right now suddenly like a flame blazed, burned in the chest!

Beside the lips, suddenly a faint bitterness, it was a drop of wetness.

The hand that was holding the sword, slowly dropped down.

She raised her head and looked at the sky.

The wind blew her soft and beautiful hair, brushing past her fair and white face.

So the sky, had started to rain again?

Chapter 99: Unusual Sign

The rain drifted down from the sky.

The rain was light, the sky also showed signs of early sunset, this was already the second consecutive day that it rained.

Xiao YiCai frowned tightly, suddenly turned his head and spoke to the person beside him, “Yan junior sister, have you discovered anything?”

Standing with him was FenXiang Valley YanHong, ever since the group got scattered in the miasma, Xiao YiCai had entered the inner marsh but because he went in through a different direction, he did not encounter Fa Xiang, Lin JingYu *etc.* Instead not long after he met YanHong nearby and although they were not from the same sect but it was still a familiar face so for the past few days they had been travelling together.

Just that they had been searching for several days in this boundless forest and had yet to discover anything. Other than trees and more trees here, next it was the unceasing rain and the numerous venomous insects on the ground, it was really vexing. Come to think of it, no wonder there was no signs of inhabitation, this place was not even livable!

But although things were such but the things that needed to be done had to be done. Xiao YiCai and YanHong searched the surroundings carefully but at the same time he sensed that even though YanHong was polite to him, she seemed to be secretly guarding against something.

Right now he saw that YanHong seemed to have notice something and she kept staring at a direction in the forest, he could not help but enquired and YanHong said, "Xiao senior brother, look over there, something strange seemed to be there."

Xiao YiCai was surprised and looked over where YanHong pointed, behind the sheets of drizzle and in-between the dense branches and leaves, a weak golden light suddenly flashed and disappeared.

Xiao YiCai's heart leapt but after a long time, the golden light flashed a little again but the distance between them seemed to increase.

Xiao YiCai and YanHong looked at each other, both of them seemed to recall that rumour regarding the rare treasure's omens, it was indeed an enormous golden light beam shooting up to the sky. Could it be.....

After a moment, both of them soared at the same time and as fast as lightning, dashed towards where the golden light was.

And while flying there, they subconsciously stayed a distance away from each other and also hold on tightly to their magical weapon, wondered if they were preparing for the unknown danger or the danger beside them.....

Both of them flew extremely fast, shortly after they reached the area near

where the golden light sparkled. Avoiding the thick branches, they saw the ground below was in a mess, broken and scattered brambles were everywhere, even the thick and big trees beside were also riddled with scars and the trees ahead which were as thick as a human's arms around them, a few had fallen.

In the forest, the path of disorder continued straight ahead, it looked like some person or some animal had released its power here and forced a path through this dense forest.

Xiao YiCai and YanHong looked at each other and saw the indistinct shock in each other's eyes. And at this moment ahead in the forest, a faint commotion was heard. Xiao YiCai signalled to YanHong and both of them flew up quietly, taking the cover of the branches and leaves, they soundlessly flew ahead.

After flying for a while, they saw fallen trees lying in a disarray along the way and a number of animals were found dead too, most likely they were unable to escape in time and suffered an unexpected calamity. The commotion noises turned louder and louder, mixed in it was also a voice chanting Buddhist mantra.

Xiao YiCai was surprised, he thought, "Don't tell me Tian Yin Temple Fa Xiang senior brother is here?"

While he was hesitating, a golden light suddenly lighted up in front, a deafening angry roar was heard and in an instant, like a shock wave, the surrounding trees' leaves shook together, the force was really remarkable.

But Xiao YiCai's face instead changed, in this 'Buddha Subdue Evil Roar' there was an urgent anxious feeling and it was something not reassuring. The relationship between Tian Yin Temple and Qing Yun Sect were different from

FenXiang Valley, Xiao YiCai thought for a moment and eventually decided to enter the battle, after a while a sound of wind was heard, YanHong had also followed behind.

Both of them in the air saw the scene clearly and were stunned, following which both were greatly shocked.

There was a monk wearing Tian Yin Temple monk robe but it was not the gentle and refined Fa Xiang, it was that big and tall Fa Shan. Fa Shan's robes were all summoned up and in his hand, an extremely thick 'Vajra Subdue Evil Staff' danced like a violent storm, the golden light glimmered, protecting his body and from time to time, he roared again and again.

And dueling with him was a beautiful lady in light yellow clothes, her expression was coquetry with a smile at the corner of her lips, her black hair lightly brushed against her shoulders and a pair of clear, sparkling eyes. Looking into the eyes, you seemed to be immersed in it and never wanted to emerge again.

Xiao YiCai only took a few glances at her but suddenly he felt a wave of agitation in his heart and felt that in this world, there was only this girl and he really wanted to be with her forever.

Luckily he had trained and cultivated for many years, his level of cultivation was not considered low, he abruptly came to his senses and was shocked, he thought, "Where did this witch come from and has such powerful bewitching skill!"

Although looking at the situation below Fa Shan's power was terrifying but in Xiao YiCai and YanHong's eyes, both saw Fa Shan's face was flushed and he was

already forced by that beautiful lady in front of him to only defend and if there was no other assistance, most probably he could not survive for even an hour.

Xiao YiCai and YanHong were taken aback but no matter how hard they tried, they could not recall who this woman was, she with such high skills and could actually reduce Tian Yin Temple's one of the most outstanding disciples other than Fa Xiang, Fa Shan, until he was unable to retaliate.

Looking at Fa Shan's impending defeat, Xiao YiCai and YanHong looked at each other, shouted and charged down, wielding Qing Yun Sect TongTian Peak's famous celestial sword, 'Seven-Star Sword', transformed into a stream of white light, striking down from the head. And beside him, YanHong also released a stream of green energy from her hand, it was her magical weapon, 'Green Spirit Stone' and followed closely behind.

That light yellow-attired lady heard the sudden shouts from above and her countenance changed, annoyance flashed past her face, just that with her thousand different expressions, it seemed like the annoyance also transformed into captivating beauty, faintly written on her face, seducing one's soul.

Xiao YiCai after all was the current Qing Yun Sect number one disciple, his skills levels were high and incomparable to normal people. The Seven-Star Sword rays were everywhere, already extending into an enormous sword beam in the air and struck down from the top. That lady's brows tightened and did not dare to underestimate the enemy, she also saw that there was another girl behind him with high-level skills too, she had no choice but to drift back immediately and at the same time, her right hand moved continuously. Suddenly she grabbed the air and out of the thin air, a purple light shone, dazzling. An unusual purple magical weapon seething with propitious energy blocked in front of her, clashed heavily with the Seven-Star Sword and Green Spirit Stone.

[Pong!]

A muffled sound, that lady floated to the back and Xiao YiCai with YanHong landed beside Fa Shan, Xiao YiCai in a low voice asked Fa Shan, “Fa Shan senior brother, are you alright?”

Fa Shan’s face was flushed red and was panting heavily, after a long while he slowly got his breath back and said, “Xiao senior brother be careful, this lady is the Evil Sect HeHuan Sect witch Jin PingEr, she is very powerful!”

Xiao YiCai and YanHong were shocked, for these past few years Jin PingEr was considered an influential figure in the Evil Sect. Together with Qin WuYan, Ghost Li the three of them were known as the three GongZi and were viewed as a calamity by the Good Faction. Now that they saw her today, she was actually a matchless beautiful alluring lady. But thinking back to that intensive bewitching pull when he first saw her, Xiao YiCai knew most likely this person was really Jin PingEr from HeHuan Sect.

Jin PingEr stood in front, feeling indignant in her heart. After she entered the inner marsh, she searched for many days but still had no clue. Today she met this Tian Yin Temple monk Fa Shan who was alone, both of them could not meet eye to eye and so started to fight.

Fa Shan had trained for many years and with the Buddhism skills he had cultivated, other than the gifted and talented Fa Xiang, within the Tian Yin Temple younger generation, he was considered the second. Just that this Jin PingEr was even more powerful, her attack was actually using her flirtatious eyes. In spite of Fa Shan’s deep and solid Buddhism composure, he was caught off-guard by the Evil Sect HeHuan Sect’s closely guarded handed down

‘Bewitching Skill’ and suffered heavy losses, he lost control of his composure for a moment and now only sixty percent of his skills remained.

After which Jin PingEr looked like she had it easy, under the swift and fierce attacks, Fa Shan did his utmost to defend himself and maintain a fragment of conscious in his mind, arduously holding up. If not for Xiao YiCai and YanHong who had came in time, most likely today Fa Shan would be defeated by this Jin PingEr, all of his entire past trainings would have gone to waste and he would be controlled by this strange bewitching skill, listening to only Jin PingEr’s commands for his whole life like a walking corpse.

Right now Jin PingEr appraised Xiao YiCai from head to toe and suddenly laughed, her voice soft, gently said, “ Not sure if this gongzi has some enmity with me and used such heavy blow for the first attack, are you trying to kill the little woman me?”

Xiao YiCai looked at her, saw her liquid eyes, bright and sparkling. Looking at it in this twilight, like a bright star glittering in the night sky, it really made one aroused.

Xiao YiCai’s palms started to sweat, he forced his mind to calm down and did not look directly at her in the eye and raised his voice, “Lady is the renowned Jin PingEr from the Evil Sect HeHuan branch right! I have long heard about you!”

Jin PingEr smiled and said, “O! You recognize me?”

Xiao YiCai said, “My humble self is also meeting lady for the first time today, just that Fa Shan Master is from Tian Yin Temple Sect and is also a fellow Good Faction member as my Qing Yun Sect, it is intrinsic that my humble self will battle with lady.”

Jin PingEr frowned slightly and smiled after that, “So if you said it like this, I have to consult gongzi, from which branch of Qing Yun Sect expert are you?”

Xiao YiCai said, “I dare not, my humble self is Qing Yun Sect TongTian Peak Xiao YiCai, this is FenXiang Valley Miss YanHong.”

Jin PingEr’s eyes studied YanHong’s face, she saw that her face was quite pretty and could not help but took a few more glances. Among FenXiang Valley younger generations, both YanHong and Li Xun’s skills had always been known as the twin jade annulus, just that her personality was more low-keyed and did not wish to seek attention, usually if there was any matter, Li Xun would be the one to step in and handle. Right now after following Xiao YiCai down, she had not spoken at all.

While she was being looked over by Jin PingEr, she could not help but look back at Jin PingEr. Unexpectedly with this look, she saw the beautiful lady snow-like skin, her appearance as pretty as a picture and as the time passed, even she also felt a faint swoon and was startled, at the same time her face turned slightly red and she secretly exclaimed that the Evil Sect sorcery was really shamelessly immoral, she was a girl and yet also to a slight extent bewitched.

When Xiao YiCai came over, it was already evening and now with time being squandered, the sky had gradually started to darken again.

Jin PingEr stood there prettily, facing Xiao YiCai and the rest, she pondered to herself: The level of skill for that sword move just now, this Xiao YiCai’s skill was indeed quite high and beside, there were two more persons with him. Although she herself was not afraid but the death marsh rare treasure had not appear and if she was to engage with them in this meaningless fight here, it was really

not wise.

Once she had the thought, she decided to leave. Xiao YiCai looked at her face and suddenly stepped forward and was about to say something but just at that moment, from the deep corners of the death marsh, in the far distance of the unceasing rain, suddenly a loud sound like dragons singing and tigers roaring erupted!

The sound was so loud that it made Fa Shan's Buddha Subdue Evil Roar seemed like a child's play and not even worth mentioning.

Instantly the clouds in the sky with speed that could be seen by the naked eye, transformed and churned, the mist rose, layer by layer, scene by scene like a roaring torrent of waves. Heaven and Earth seemed like it changed countenance because of this.

Everyone was astonished!

The sound was like a awl piercing the brain, made one stand unsteadily.

After a while, under the astonished stares of the people, in a far dark corner, suddenly a golden dazzling light leapt up, gradually turning brighter, gradually thickening and in the end transformed into an extremely enormous golden light beam. With the roaring, it charged up to the sky, breaking through the layers of clouds and in that moment, it illuminated the entire Heaven and Earth, the golden light was everywhere, the clouds were golden clouds and the trees were golden trees!

Xiao YiCai, Jin PingEr etc the four of them gazed in awe at this Heaven and

Earth spectacular phenomenon and for a moment, forgotten that they were enemies and each raised their heads to watch. The golden light beam became more and more glaring and until the end it could not be viewed. The clouds in the horizon surged even more turbulently, swirling around the golden beam rapidly, turning into an enormous vortex lighted up by the golden beam.

Under such magnificent scene, the world was awed, as if anticipating some revered and priceless object, it made one venerated.

After a long time, the golden light beam which appeared out of nowhere slowly stopped and then weakened rapidly, it appeared suddenly and left swiftly too. In only a short while, the earth shattering phenomenal scene was sucked back into the darkness like a big whale sucking water.

After the dazzling splendor, a darker and deeper darkness descended onto the earth.

Jin PingEr and Xiao YiCai were all quick-witted people, immediately they realized that this was the legendary signs of the rare treasure birth, now that they witnessed it themselves, the grandeur of the rare treasure birth signs could be described as unimaginable, it made one really wondered what kind of rare treasure was it?

Compared to that, their fight was really insignificant. Almost spontaneously, Jin PingEr, Xiao YiCai, YanHong flew up at the same time and headed to where the golden light beam was, only Fa Shan was slower but he too followed closely behind.

In the darkness they transformed into four streams of brilliant lights and flew over. Although due to the enormous scale of the golden light they were unable

to determine its exact location but the birth of the rare treasure was obviously right in front of them. When they thought about that, those hardworking cultivators of the true way, how could they not be aroused?

On the other side of the inner death marsh, the strong wind brought over by the golden beam caused the densely grown branches and leaves to fall neatly aside, only Qing Long and YouJi who were standing on the branches of the treetop, swayed with the wind and were unaffected.

While the magnificent Heaven and Earth spectacle slowly withdrew, Qing Long heaved a long sigh and said, “The creations of Heaven and Earth are boundless, it is really beyond what we mortals can study. I used to think that I am a learned person, now that I have unexpectedly witnessed such extraordinary sight, I realized that all of the ten thousands of creations in this world, the sky’s the limit!”

YouJi slowly looked away, because of the black veil obscuring her face, her expression was not revealed clearly. After a while she indifferently said, “‘Once the golden light appear, the Yellow Bird will definitely emerge’, these are the inscriptions engraved on the Hidden Dragon Cauldron. Just that that yellow bird is the ancient divine beast - Nine Heavens Spirit Bird, even the ancient remnant scroll, ‘Divine and Evil The strange. Spiritual beast chapter’ sings its praises, don’t tell me we can really deal with it?”

Qing Long smiled and said, “Third sister, why are you worrying unnecessarily. At East Ocean LiuBo Hill, Ghost King Sect leader for the first time used the inscribed ‘Entrap Dragon WatchTower’ on the Hidden Dragon Cauldron. With the Hidden Dragon Cauldron divine power since ancient time, it subdued the rare beast, Kui Niu, in one swoop. You should know then that this Hidden Dragon Cauldron’s ‘Four Divinities Blood Formation’ really has a supernatural amazing effect. Now that everything has been prepared, even Ghost King Sect leader is confident enough to let us come, what are you still worrying, unless

you don't trust Ghost King Sect leader?"

YouJi remained silent for a while and distantly said, "Sect leader is a man of great talent and bold vision, I have always respected him, why would I doubt. Just that I have always feel that this type of weird and unfathomable thing like the 'Four Divinities Blood Formation', why must we ..."

Qing Long's face changed and suddenly interrupted, "Third sister, this type of matter, it is not something that you or I can discuss, next time in front of outsiders, you must never mention it!"

YouJi's veil moved slightly and she looked towards Qing Long, he was frowning tightly and his face solemn. She had no choice but to keep quiet and then nodded her head.

Qing Long then was relieved and gently said, "Third Sister, don't mind me nagging, actually these past few years, especially ever since Miss BiYao's incident, Ghost King Sect leader's character has already gradually changed. Although generally he treat us with courtesy and respect but I can see when he handle matters and make decisions, his blood-thirsty desire has gradually became stronger. We are after all subordinates and unable to predict our superior's intention, it is better to be more careful."

YouJi quietly said, "Yes big brother, I know now."

Qing Long looked at her and unhurriedly turned over, after remaining silent for a long while he suddenly said, "Wonder which part of the death marsh will Ghost Li be now?"

YouJi behind him, looked ahead. The dark night boundless and indistinct, the earth shattering golden light beam had already disappeared, leaving only darkness, she could not help but asked, “Big brother, hasn’t Ghost King Sect leader always trusted Ghost Li the most, why did he not inform him of our arrival this time and our purpose?”

Qing Long turned and looked at YouJi and did not speak.

YouJi seemed stunned, looked like she had thought of something and then slightly raised her head, looked far away, indistinctly her voice was heard, whispering, “Is that again not allowed to say...”

Brief Glossary By Translator

A brief glossary I copied and pasted from my source but the table got formatted by the editor so the left column was a bit squeezezy.

Characters Glossary (unordered):

Qing Yun Sect

TongTian Peak

Reverend DaoXuan Sect Head of Qing Yun Sect and also the Head of Qing Yun main branch, TongTian Peak.

Wan JianYi Junior brother of Reverend DaoXuan.

Xiao YiCai Favourite disciple of Reverend DaoXuan.

Long Shou Valley

Taoist Cang Song Head. Betrayed Qing Yun Sect and joined the Evil Faction.

QiHao Favourite disciple of Taoist Cang Song. Also Tian LingEr's husband.

Lin JingYu Great aptitude for cultivation. Childhood friend of Zhang Xiao Fan.

Morning Sun Valley

Shang ZhengLiang Head (Deceased)

Chu YuHong Head

Shen TianDou One of the skillful disciple.

Sunset Valley

Taoist Tian Yun Head (Deceased)

Taoist Tian Ri Head

Big Bamboo Valley

Tian BuYi Head

SuRu Wife of Tian BuYi Tian LingEr Daughter of Tian BuYi.

Song Daren Eldest disciple

Wu DaYi Second disciple

Zheng DaLi Third disciple

He DaZhi Fourth disciple

Lu DaXin Fifth disciple

Du BiShu Sixth disciple. Original name was Du DaShu.

Zhang Xiao Fan Youngest disciple, story's main protagonist Xiao Hui Three eyes divine monkey Da Huang Yellow dog

Return of the Wind Valley

Zeng ShuChang Head

Zeng ShuShu Son of Zeng ShuChang

Small Bamboo Valley

Shui Yue Master Head

Lu XueQi The most beautiful woman in the story, fell in love with Zhang Xiao Fan. Intelligent and cold, had great aptitude. Also the story's main female protagonist.

WenMin Love interest of Song Daren.

Tian Yin Temple

Pu Hong Sect Head. Also one of the four Holy Monks.

Pu De One of the four Holy Monks Pu Zhi One of the four Holy Monks. Had great wisdom and sought to solve the mystery of immortality.

Met Zhang Xiao Fan and Lin JingYu and massacred the GrassTemple village.

Pu Kong One of the four Holy Monks Fa Xiang Highly skilled disciple Fa Shen
Rough exterior but treat others warmly.

FenXiang Valley

Yun YiLan Sect Head.

ShangGuan Ce Elder

Lu Shun Elder

Li Xun Disciple. Proud and handsome.

YanHong Disciple. Detailed and quiet.

Ghost King Sect

Ghost King Sect Head

BiYao Daughter of Ghost King, fell in love with Zhang Xiao Fan.

Also the story's main female protagonist (Deceased).

Qing Long One of the four Holy Envoys, also known as Green Dragon.

YouJi One of the four Holy Envoys, also known as Scarlet Bird.

Black Warrior One of the four Holy Envoys White Tiger One of the four Holy

Envoys Mr Ghost Mysterious figure in Ghost King Sect Ghost Li Zhang Xiao Fan.

Also known as the Three GongZi of Evil Faction, Xue GongZi Kill-the-living Monk

Younger generation disciple.

Swallow-returns Younger generation disciple.

Wan Du Clan

God of Poison Sect Head.

Qin WuYan Last disciple of God of Poison. Also known as the Three GongZi of Evil Faction, Du GongZi Blood Sucking Demon One of the highly skilled disciple (Deceased).

Bai DuZi One of the highly skilled disciple (Deceased).

Elder Duanmu One of the highly skilled disciple (Deceased).

Chang Shen Hall

YuYang Zi Sect Head (Deceased).

Zhou Yin Disciple (Deceased). Speciality in assassination.

HeHuan Sect

Lady JinLing Founder of Sect (Deceased).

SanMiao Fairy Sect Head

Jin PingEr Young, talented disciple. Also known as the Three GongZi of Evil Faction, Miao GongZi

Blood Forger Hall

Elder Blackheart A great person who unified the Evil Sect eight hundred years ago (Deceased).

Nian Leader Sect Head previously. Submitted to Ghost King Sect.

Wild Dog Taoist Remaining member of Blood Forger Hall, with facial appearance similar to dog.

Others:

Zhou YiXian Wandering Fortune-teller, mysterious origins.

Xiao Huan Granddaughter of Zhou YiXian. The story's youngest female protagonist Shi-To Vajra Sect Herald of Vigor's disciple, Vajra Sect had roots in Tian Yin Temple.

[TLnote: Appeared in Mooy's translation and briefly in Chap 69 Qing Long and Chap 73 Impasse]

Ranking of beautiful women:

1. Lu XueQi
2. Xiao Bai
3. YouJi
4. LingLong
5. BiYao
6. SuRu
7. Jin PingEr
8. Three-tailed Fox Spirit
9. Xiao Huan
10. Tian LingEr

Chapter 100: Gigantic Tree

The sky gradually lightened up.

The rain ceased and the wind died down, the first ray of morning sunlight, through the sky's layers of thick clouds and the death marsh drifting mist, shone down.

In the forest, everywhere was still but slowly following that sunlight, gradually started to stir. From an unknown place, the first cry of a bird was heard. Immediately, following the streams of lights that spilled down from the gaps of the forest's canopy, the whole forest seemed to rouse from the night's deep sleep, regardless near or far, the joyous cries of the early morning were heard everywhere, greeting this new day.

Right now in the forest, the mist, like a white veil, floated everywhere. When one walked into it, a faint moisture would be felt on the face. In addition with the especially fresh air in the forest, when one inhaled in, it felt like your heart had opened up.

Ghost Li breathed the morning air in deeply, expressionlessly looked in front, even Xiao Hui who was lying on his shoulder, also stretched lazily.

About ten zhangs away, was the direction of the previous night's golden light beam, the mist had suddenly thickened, turning hazy and indistinct, it looked surreal. Just that this mist and the inner marsh miasma boundary was different, the color was not grey and was a pure white color. Looking far ahead, the mist drifted lightly in the forest, wisps and threadlike, layer upon layer, piling up.

There, might be the location of the rare treasure!

Ghost Li unhurriedly turned his head and looked to the side, Lu XueQi was standing two zhangs away from him, attired in white like snow, silently staring at that mist in front.

The two of them, in the end did not fight.

The whole night, after that first moment of surprise and subtle agitation, between the both of them, was a long silence.

Both of them were just three feet apart but it seemed like it was a chasm bigger than the Forsaken Abyss, deeply entrenched between them, and even more in their hearts.

Even when that dazzling golden light beam charged up to the sky, both of them turned and watched it from a bird's-eye view, the sky's golden light rays reflected on their faces, quietly watching in this strange foreign place, adding several degrees of coldness.

The past, in the end still changed...

Lu XueQi seemed to sense something and turned her head over, meeting

Ghost Li's stare, her eyes as clear as water, maybe there was still a faint ripple deep inside her eyes but right now, it could no longer be seen by anyone.

She looked at that man in front of her, he stood beside her in the forest, carefully looking at him, she finally discovered that he was no longer that youth anymore!

The once so familiar face, the innocent and smiles replaced by calmness and the look of someone who had been through life's vicissitudes.

She lowered her head slightly, her clear eyes stopped at the Tian Ya Celestial Sword in her hand as if thinking of something, after a while, her voice lightly floated, suddenly said, "Come back!"

She did not raise her head or make any movement, her expression did not change even the slightest, only the hand that was clutching Tian Ya, the slender and fair fingers slowly tightened.

"...Zhang junior brother!" She softly, softly said.

Come back...

These four words, the words that drifted in the morning breeze, enveloped him, then like a stone, one by one charged into his heart.

Ghost Li breathed deeply, closed his eyes. The ice-cold Soul-Absorbing stick in his sleeve beside his hands, like a loyal friend, never once abandoned him!

After a very long time.

When he opened his eyes, there was a faint smile, he unhurriedly said, "This name, I have not use it for a very long time."

The corner of Lu XueQi's mouth twitched, she slowly raised her head but eventually whatever words that she wanted to say, she did not say it and kept quiet.

Both of them stood like that but the distance between them seemed to increase again. The morning sunlight shone onto that unparalleled beautiful girl's face, warmly radiating a soul-moving beauty, the faintly discernable light mist seemed to be also attracted to her, gently danced and enveloped her.

That instant, her face, also seemed to be faintly blurred.

Lu XueQi turned and strided without saying anything and walked towards where that blanket of dense haze was, leaving that man behind her.

Just that when her figure was becoming more indistinct in the haze, she suddenly heard that man's voice behind her, unhurriedly saying, "Will you kill me?"

Her figure, disappeared into the white haze, nobody could see her eyes, her expression, her body again.

The silent morning, after a long time, floated out her voice from the haze, "I will. So whenever you have the chance to kill me, do not hesitate to do so..."

The sky brightened up completely but walking in the haze made one felt that it was still dim. This stretch of haze was far denser than the other places and limited one's vision too.

Ghost Li walked along in the forest and had already noticed that other than the mist, even though he was still in the forest but it was very much different from the outside. Other than the looming tall trees in the haze, there were only a few of the thick thorny undergrowth and bushes as seen in the forest outside, not sure if it was because of the thick haze that prevented the sunlight from reaching down.

But the most surprising thing was, the venomous insects, ferocious beasts, bizarre plants and flowers that permeated the death marsh forest suddenly disappeared too. Ghost Li traversed in this forest for at least an hour and had not encountered even one poisonous insect.

Here, not a single living thing seemed to exist, a heavy dead atmosphere.

Ghost Li frowned and continued to walk ahead. Xiao Hui on his shoulder also quietened down, its hands grabbing onto his clothes tightly but a pair of sharp eyes were still turning around, ceaselessly looking around. Without the thorny undergrowth and those pestering poisonous animals and strange beasts, it was clearly much more easier to travel. This was the first time ever since he had entered the inner marsh.

Lu XueQi entered the haze earlier than him, Ghost Li outside, had deliberately waited for a long time before entering, right now where exactly was Lu XueQi?

Just that, while he was walking in the forest, on one hand he was staying

vigilant against any strange movements but in his heart, subconsciously his mind kept going over that white-attired girl's figure.

"Come back..." Ghost Li spoke to himself, using only the voice that he could hear, softly chanted these four words.

Qing Yun Hill, Big Bamboo Valley, Observed Silence Hall, small courtyard, bamboo forest...

His lips twitched, a anguished smile emerged and said, "I can no longer return, isn't it, Xiao Hui?"

[Zi zi!] The monkey Xiao Hui softly called out twice, nobody knew what it meant also.

Ghost Li patted Xiao Hui, after a moment, he suddenly cheered up, with a wry smile, strided and headed deep inside the haze.

Walking for another hour, the trees in the forest were getting thicker and thicker, until the latter part, it was almost as thick as two persons' arms going around it. Ghost Li observed the surroundings and was secretly alarmed.

The past ten years, after the shock from the Qing Yun Hill battle and with the magical weapons, Soul-Absorbing stick and Sinister Orb, beside him exerting their subtle influence, other than devoting his concentration to cultivation and his nature gradually evolving into a ruthless and blood-thirsty one, he had also learned other kinds of knowledge from Ghost King. And this generation of Ghost King was really a talent out of this world, not to mention his skills were extraordinary high, he also read extensively and had broad ambitions.

Because of BiYao, Ghost King treated him like his own, affectionately taught him, under his planned guidance, the Ghost Li now not only trained and cultivated but even his knowledge and experience, far exceeded that naive and ignorant Qing Yun Sect junior disciple.

Right now he observed the enormous trees in this forest, actually these trees were not rare and uncommon trees, these were oak, maple and pagoda trees etc, even in the mountains outside the death marsh, there were abundant of them. But the strange part was that the trees here were extraordinary huge, the normal ones were only about half of their sizes and it was already quite alarming, to add to that, so many of these trees were all gathered here.

But what was even more strange was that by right it should be exuberant at where these trees were but under this sheet of haze, not even one animal was seen. Even the occasional thorny undergrowth seen at the beginning were all gone. And above the ground, other than the occasional revealed roots of these huge trees, were all solid and light yellow mud, not even grass grew here.

Under the chilly cold haze, it had a sombre and desolate feeling.

Ghost Li frowned deeply, he muttered to himself for a long while, surveyed the surroundings and saw that the enormous trees reached up to the sky, perfectly straight and towering, he himself strolling in the forest looked as if he was inside an enormous maze.

He suddenly waved his sleeve and his entire being soared up, unwilling to stay any longer in this strange place, he wielded his Soul-Absorbing stick, in the dark-green light, he flew forward.

His speed naturally increased a lot but considering that the rare treasure could be around here, Ghost Li did not fly up above the forest and maintained about six feet above the ground, he flew swiftly and searched carefully at the same time.

The time passed by quietly, the forest was still silent, only the sound of his flight reverberated in this forest. The trees in this forest, following Ghost Li's deeper and deeper penetration, their trunks got bigger and bigger, right now the trees projecting in his eyes, most likely were already an unbelievable thickness of six, seven burly men arms length going around. Without even guessing, one would know that the trees in this forest were most likely several hundreds or even thousands of years old!

In the sheet of thickening strange atmosphere, Ghost Li's figure suddenly stopped.

Right now the sky had already brightened up for a long while but this haze seemed to have no intention of dispersing, as if since the ancient times, these layers of haze seemed to co-exist with this area of forest.

And in the deepest corner of this forest, Ghost Li hovered in mid-air and looked ahead.

Ahead of him, a wall suddenly towered in front!

Wooden wall!

The rough wood grain, solid and with faint fissures, suddenly extended out from the fog, almost as high as three zhangs, like a strong and healthy young

dragon lying across the huge forest, thrust deep into the earth.

Ghost Li coldly watched, did not move and carefully assessed this wooden wall, the corner of his eyes began to twitch. After which, he slowly moved his body forward and gently touched it.

The moment his hands touched it, he felt something warm and rough. In his heart Ghost Li seemed to have a thought but he could not dare to believe it. He took back his hand and his body started to drift along this wooden wall to the front.

The white haze ahead gradually dispersed and then slowly congealed behind him, the wooden wall in front of him was getting taller and thicker, gradually becoming a curved shape and its height was slowly increasing too.

Finally about six zhangs high, he reached the end point of this wooden wall, Ghost Li stopped.

He breathed deeply but still was unable to calm himself down, under the palpitating heartbeats, what was before him, through the haze, was finally revealed in front of his eyes.

This enormous wooden wall, at the end of the haze, harmoniously merged into an even bigger object.

In the sky, a strand of sunlight suddenly shone from the haze and disappeared soon after, obscured by the haze.

Ghost Li finally confirmed the inconceivable thought in his heart just now.

The enormous wooden wall was part of a tree branch...

The layers of haze drifted around, because of the shock he was slightly panting and then he abruptly raised his head, that gaze seemed to break through the blurring sunlight, headed straight and charged up.

Like a soundless lightning, rumbling, the entire forest seemed to tremble and appeared before him, it was actually a gigantic tree totally beyond one's imagination, that tree trunk was so thick that its borders could not be seen in this haze and covered with a rough bark, like an enormous mountain towering and lofty, going straight up towards the sky, immersing in the haze, like drilling into the sky!

Ghost Li like an ant, so insignificant in front of this gigantic tree.

A gigantic tree with branches that could even reach up to six zhangs, what kind of sight was that?

Ghost Li slowly looked away, Xiao Hui on his shoulder quietly called out once and seemed to be nervous. Ghost Li leaned his head slightly to the side and suddenly smiled, lightly said, "The world is so big, there is no lack of strange stuffs, we are really a frog in the well. Xiao Hui, let's go! Let us take a good look at this gigantic tree!"

Under his feet, the Soul-Absorbing stick's dark-green light suddenly lighted up, after a moment, it tilted and flew up, Ghost Li howled and following that piercing sound, one human and one monkey charged into the sky, immersing into the layers of haze.

The winds hurtled past, biting because of the high speed. Within the haze, the situation seemed similar to when they first entered the inner marsh, within the miasma wall but it was after all not the same, first there was no poisonous air and second, they could see further. Just that in this layers of haze, it congealed till an extremely high level. Ghost Li followed along this inconceivable gigantic tree and flew upwards. Flying for almost an hour, the haze still had not dispersed, made one wondered if the haze actually connected to the cloud layers.

At the same time, Ghost Li also noticed some changes on the gigantic tree trunk. While on the ground, which was also the lowest part of the tree, it was thick beyond imagination and on the tree itself, other than the rough bark, there was nothing else.

But after flying for so long, branches started to appear and the most conspicuous thing that started to appear was a vine-like weird plant, twining criss-crossed around the trunk, its leaves were huge and at the tip, a colourful flower bloomed. There was red, yellow, orange and purple, extremely beautiful, when the wind blew over, there was also a faint fragrance.

But until now, he was still unable to see, just how thick was this gigantic tree trunk?

The amazing creation was really out of this world, this gigantic tree most likely really was thousand and thousand of years old, that was why it was this gigantic!

[Si!]

A sharp sound pierced the air, the dark-green light glimmered and dashed out from the haze. The haze under his feet too, following his figure, wisps followed up and then gently settled back down, just like the sea settling down.

Ghost Li finally emerged out of this haze!

Heaven and Earth, suddenly opened wide!

The bright blue sky, cloudless for thousand of miles, a cloudless blue sky and the white boundless haze below surrounding the gigantic tree, the nearer it was to the tree, the denser the haze was.

And now, Ghost Li was already high up in the air and could finally take a good look at this gigantic tree.

Even though at such high place, this tree was still hundred of zhangs thick and thinking back to the distance that he had flew from the ground to here, this tree was not a tree and instead a lofty mountain!

But then, this was obviously a tree.

And it still continued to extend up, that gigantic trunk, other than the same alarming thick branches, extended perfectly straight up to the sky.

Ghost Li raised his head and looked far, deep somewhere in the sky, there seemed to be an indistinct figure.

He suddenly laughed and flew towards the blue sky.

Which man, facing such a scene, would not be in high spirits?

He flew up and pierced through the sky!

His speed increased, disregarding the knives-like biting winds on his face.

As he flew up, the gigantic branches gradually shrunk, until the end, it was only several zhangs big but even so it was still astonishing. And right now, thin floating clouds were seen, occasionally drifting beside the tree.

The gigantic tree, like what the ancient legend said, the stairways to Heaven, straight to the sky!

Again flying for another about five zhangs, Ghost Li figure finally stopped, in front of him, the perfectly straight trunk suddenly splitted into two big branches and extended left and right.

Ghost Li hesitated for a while and unhurriedly flew over, landing at where the gigantic branches splitted. Although it was described as bifurcation, the gigantic tree was so colossal that several people could stand here and yet not feel squeezey. When Ghost Li landed on the tree, [Zi] a sound and Xiao Hui was the first to jump down, its monkey head looked around and then carefully touched the tree. Evidently it was very curious, in its whole life this was the first time it had seen such gigantic tree, and even though it was just a monkey, it was still very surprised.

Ghost Li smiled and did not bother about Xiao Hui, while flying on his way here, he was really shocked. Before this, he could not imagine that there would

be such gigantic tree in this world and right now, after the initial shock, he already surmised that could it be that the rare treasure might actually be on this incredible gigantic tree?

The two branches were about the same sizes and almost several zhangs thick, stretching horizontally, like two enormous dragons leaping in the air. Starting from here, the leaves gradually became luxuriant and the distance that it extended out were extremely long, standing at where it bifurcated, the ends could not be seen.

Ghost Li pondered for a while and decided, he turned around and called, “Xiao Hui.”

The monkey Xiao Hui was jumping around on the tree and seemed not to fear the terrifying height at all, at times it even ran to the edge and stretched its head out to look down, it was extremely brave for a monkey. Now that it heard its master shout, [Zi zi] it called out twice and happily jumped back and leapt onto Ghost Li’s shoulder.

Ghost Li smiled and said, “Let’s go!”

Xiao Hui’s eyes rolled around and nodded, seemed like the monkey was also very curious, it was grinning non-stopped and looking very excited.

Ghost Li looked left and right for a while and hesitated for a moment, and then without any delay, he wielded his Soul-Absorbing stick again, in the brilliant dark-green light, headed towards the left side of the tree branch.

He flew for another long while again but although the gigantic tree trunk was

high up in the air, it still had numerous enormous leaves, extremely exuberant. However, it did not seem to have any fruit or flower and instead that nameless vine which had started to climb around the tree from the bottom, its flowers were in full bloom, displaying a beautiful scene.

Ghost Li kept flying, as he kept going, the branch became thinner but the vines instead became thicker and the number of flowers also increased, until it was everywhere, a feast for the eyes and a strange fragrance floated in the air.

Suddenly, Ghost Li's body which had been flying, stopped abruptly in the mid-air. Because of the abrupt stop, it emitted a sharp noise.

The trunk in front of him was totally obscured by the vines, the flowers vied with each other for glamour, from the top to bottom like a sea of flowers, they congealed to become a wall. And in this sea of flowers, a stone door stood towering, with a height of five zhangs and width of three zhangs, it was embedded in the trunk. The numerous flowers covered it totally, leaving only a thick solid enormous stone in the middle and engraved on top of it were four words in ancient lettering.

[Celestial Emperor Treasury!]

Barely audible, a sound similar to some ancient stately music reverberated in the blue skies, soul-moving.

Ghost Li's gaze moved to the stone door, within the sea of flowers, a white figure stood in front of it.

As if she had heard the movement behind her, that white-attired girl slowly

turned around, the numerous beautiful flowers under the blue sky, suddenly like they were laughing heartily together, set against her unparalleled beautiful face, blooming proudly!

In the sea of flowers, she was the most bright elegant and beautiful dash of color.

Ghost Li in the air, a mixed of emotions swelled up in his heart for a moment, stared dazedly.

Publisher:

[TooLate](#)

From [doswap](#)
